

Gc
974
P93c
v.1
2058109

M. L.

REYNOLDS HISTORICAL
GENEALOGY COLLECTION

G N
ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1833 00055 4144

A
Chronological History

O F

NEW-ENGLAND

In the Form of

ANNALS:

BEING

A summary and exact *Account* of the most material *Transactions* and *Occurrences* relating to THIS COUNTRY, in the Order of Time wherein they happened, from the *Discovery* by Capt. GOSNOLD in 1602, to the *Arrival* of Governor BELCHER, in 1730.

WITH AN

INTRODUCTION,

CONTAINING

A brief *Epitome* of the most remarkable *Transactions* and *Events* ABROAD, from the CREATION: Including the connected *Line of Time*, the *Succession* of *Patriarchs* and *Sovereigns* of the most famous Kingdoms & Empires, the gradual *Discoveries* of AMERICA, and the *Progress* of the REFORMATION to the *Discovery* of NEW ENGLAND.

By THOMAS PRINCE, M. A.

VOL. I.

Deut. xxxii. 7. *Remember the Days of Old, consider the Years of many Generations.*

Job viii. 8. *For enquire, I pray thee, of the former Age, and prepare thy self to the Search of their Fathers.*

BOSTON, N. E.

Printed by KNEELAND & GREEN for S. GERRISH,

MDCCLXXXV.

79 10650 14

1736 A.D. [4545] PRINCE (Thomas). A Chronological History of New-England in the Form of Annals: being a Summary and exact Account of the most Material Transactions and Occurrences relating to This Country, in the Order of Time wherein they happened, from the Discovery by Capt. Gosnold in 1602, to the Arrival of Governor Belcher, in 1730.

With an introduction, containing a brief Epitome of the most remarkable Transactions and Events Abroad, from the Creation: Including the connected Line of Time, the Succession of Patriarchs and Sovereigns of the most famous Kingdoms & Empires, the gradual Discoveries of America, and the Progress of the Reformation to the Discovery of New England.

With the title-page printed in red and black.

FIRST EDITION. Svo. *Fine copy in the original calf. Boston, N.E., printed by Kneeland & Green for S. Gerrish, 1736.*

2058109

£15 15s

Church Catalogue, No. 925. Sabin, 65585.

This work is divided into three portions. I. The Introduction, 104 pp. II. The New-England Chronology, Part I., pp. 1-80. From the Beginning of the British Monarchy, 1602, to the Beginning of the New England Colonies, in the Settlement of the First at Plymouth. Dec. 31, 1620. Being a Brief Account of Matters relating to those new discovered Countries while settled only by the Aboriginal Natives: Reciting the several Voyages from England thither; with the most material Affairs, especially of Great Britain, that led the Way to their Settlement by English Inhabitants. III. The New-England Chronology. Part II. Being a Short Account of the Affairs of this Country as Settled by the several Colonies of the English Nation . . . to the last Settlement by the Combination of Forty-one Persons into a Form of Government on Piscataqua River, Oct. 22, 1640; afterwards called the Province of New-Hampshire.

"Prince spent seven years in the preparation of this work, which he intended to bring down to 1730. It begins, as was customary with the writers of those times, with the creation of the World, and approaches modern times with such fulness of detail that it embraces only a few years of New England history. Had he confined himself to New England, and finished his work, it would have been of incalculable value, as it was carefully compiled from a large number of authentic records and relations. It was continued nearly twenty years later, a portion of a second volume, consisting of 96 pages, but breaking off in the middle of a sentence, being printed. The whole was republished in 1826."

Recd Oct 25 - 1999

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2010 with funding from
Allen County Public Library Genealogy Center

<http://www.archive.org/details/chronologicalhis01prin>

MARONIMY—*continued.*

and Indians, "who were sufficiently intelligent to understand the language. Nevertheless, as these gentlemen were not too well-versed in the finer subtleties of theology, the missionaries naïvely "interspersed the sermons with words in the language of the Ingas"! Many conversions were made amongst the little children who were taught "according to their abilities"; those who replied to the questions promptly being rewarded with rosaries. In the last day but one of the visit, after communion, they would sing a Requiem Mass with the responses, and pass in procession through the Church and cemetery. "This function was the one that the Indians liked best . . . and the following night the mission service would end with a farewell sermon and the last benediction, with so impressive a ceremony that the people were moved to tears."

The writer then relates how the Indians were won over to the Church by the missionaries' gentleness, and the ceremonies which they had witnessed; and with the departure of the Padres, great crowds of simple natives would accompany them far out into the lonely country, "until we had to implore them to return to their homes." Many of the districts they visited had known missions; while other districts had had no Christian establishment for forty years. Many of the Spaniards living in the outlying *estancias* would travel long distances, and lodge in the Indians' huts, in order to be present at these missionary functions. The writer reports the number of baptisms, confessions, and reconciliations that had taken place during the tour; the pitiable lot of the half-castes, who "seemed to be totally lacking in religious instruction"; and the diligence with which the missionaries instructed the ignorant, in the mysteries, rites, and ceremonies of the Catholic faith. He describes the conversion of some hardened sinners, who voluntarily crept into the fold; the miracles performed with the holy water "blessed by the relics of Saint Francis Xavier," which cured many confirmed invalids, in the villages of Tumbaco, Yarugui Quinche, Guayllabamba, and other places in the diocese of Quito. He also quotes the text of the formal vow of devotion to St. Francis Xavier (as the Apostle of the Indies) which had been taken by those who considered that their restoration to health was due to his intercession.



To His EXCELLENCY,

JONATHAN BELCHER, Esq;

*Captain General and Governour in Chief in
and over His Majesty's Province of the
Massachusetts-Bay in New Eng-
land, &c.*

To the Honourable

SPENCER PHIPPS, Esq;

Lieutenant Governour,

And to the Honourable

*His Majesty's COUNCIL and House of
REPRESENTATIVES of said Province.*

THE PROVINCE under your united
Care being the Principal of the
NEW-ENGLAND Governments, con-
taining especially the *Two first Co-
lonies* of PLIMOUTH and the MAS-
SACHUSETTS, from whence the *Others* chiefly
derived, and having the greatest share in the
A following

D E D I C A T I O N .

following Work ; To whom could a Son of the Province more properly offer this Fruit of his Labours, than to Your EXCELLENCY and HONOURS ? Especially when he beholds you as mostly if not wholly *Descendants* from the worthy FATHERS of these Plantations : whom Yourself and Posterity cannot but have in everlasting Honour, not only for their eminent *self Denial* and *Piety*, wherein they set Examples for future Ages to admire and imitate ; but also for their *great Concern* that the same VITAL and PURE CHRISTIANITY and LIBERTY both *Civil* and *Ecclesiastical*, might be continued to their Successors ; for which they left their own and their Fathers Houses in the most pleasant Places then on Earth, with many of their dearest Relatives, and came over the Ocean into this then hideous Wilderness : And the peaceful *Fruits* of whose extraordinary Cares, Labours, Hardships, Wisdom, Courage, Patience, Blood and Death, we under the DIVINE *Protection*, and the Justice of the Best of KINGS, enjoy.

It is to *these* we firstly owe our pleasant Houses, our fruitful Fields, our growing Towns and Churches, our wholesome Laws, our precious Privileges, our Grammar Schools and Colléges, our pious and learned Ministers and Magistrates, our good Government and Order, the Publick Restraints of Vices, the general Knowledge of our common People, the strict
Observation

Observation of the Christian Sabbath ; with those Remains of Publick Modesty, Sobriety, Social Virtues, and Religion ; for which *this Country* is distinguished among the *Brittish Colonies*, and in which we are as happy as any on Earth.

In the midst of our great Advantages, you will doubtless take a noble and useful Pleasure, in reviewing the *Names* and *Actions* of your PREDECESSORS ; that you may imitate their Virtues : as also in surveying the gradual STEPS that led to our present Scituation ; together with the Train of PROVIDENCES appearing for us, sometimes indeed afflicting and then delivering, but preserving us thro' all our Dangers, disappointing the Designs of Enemies, maintaining our invaluable Liberties, and causing us to grow and prosper ; that the SOVEREIGN POWER who has formed, preserv'd and bless'd this People, may receive his due and grateful Adorations.

It is the *orderly Succession* of these Transactions and Events, as they precisely fell out in Time, too much neglected by our Historians, that for some years past I have taken the greatest Pains to search and find, even vastly more than in composing, and which thro' a world of Difficulty and much Expence, I here present You : not in the specious Form of a *proper History*, which admits of artificial Or-

D E D I C A T I O N.

naments and Descriptions to raise the Imagination and Affections of the Reader; but of a *closer* and more naked REGISTER, comprizing only *Facts* in a *Chronological Epitome*, to enlighten the Understanding: some what like the Form of *Usher's ANNALS*, which a competent Historian may easily fill up and beautify.

Nor is the *Design* of this *Dedication*, as is usual with Others, to implore your Patronage of the Work in General at all adventures, or to palliate or excuse the Faults or Mistakes therein: but rather humbly to appeal to your collective and superiour Knowledge, that it may more thoroughly be examined, every Mistake of Fact discovered, and the Remainder only justified.

It would be too high a Presumption in me, as well as too intruding on your more important Cares, to supplicate a Publick Examination or Correction of this Composure. But if it were as worthy as the Reverend & Learned Mr. HUBBARD's *Narrative of the Indian War*; for the Perusing and Approving which, three honourable *Magistrates* were deputed by the Governour & Council of the *Massachusetts Colony* in 1677, One of whom was a *Major General*, and the other Two were after --- *Governours*: Upon rectifying every Error, such a *Publick Approbation* would Consign it as a true Report
of

D E D I C A T I O N .

of Facts, to the Regard and Credit both of present and of future Generations.

I should now conclude, were it not for an *Observation* of too great and publick Moment to be here omitted; which is as follows, ---

That when the Founders of these Colonies came over, it was a Time of General *Tyranny* both in Church & State through their MOTHER ISLAND; under which the British Kingdoms loudly groaned, as the united Voice declared both of their LORDS and COMMONS in several PARLIAMENTS both of ENGLAND and of SCOTLAND, the only National Representatives and the most proper Witnesses of the National Oppressions; a thousand times more credible than any particular Writers. From which those Kingdoms cou'd never obtain a Legal and Established Deliverance till the Glorious REVOLUTION in 1688; nor cou'd apprehend it to be sufficiently secured till the happy ACCESSION of King GEORGE the I, to the BRITISH THRONE in 1714: a PRINCE who was a Grandson by the Princess SOPHIA of that most Excellent KING and QUEEN of BOHEMIA; whom the *Puritans* admir'd and loved, whom they griev'd to see so much neglected in their bitter Sufferings by the Court of ENGLAND; and whom those who came over Hither represented to their Posterity in the most amiable Character.

DEDICATION.

racter. Of which I can my self bare Witness ; for tho' Born in a remoter Corner of this Land, yet while in the Arms of a knowing and careful *Mother*, a Grand-Daughter of the first Race of Settlers ; next to the *Scripture History*, she gave me such a View of the *Reformation*, and of the Sufferings and Vertues of those renowned PRINCES, as rais'd my Joy with Others when the first hopeful Prospect opened of their PROTESTANT DESCENDENTS in the ILLUSTRIOUS HOUSE of HANOVER being advanced to the BRITISH THRONE, and carried us into unbounded Transports when our Eyes beheld it.

Upon this Occasion His EXCELLENCY will forgive me, if for the Honour of His Country, as well as for his own, we boast of One among us, who inspir'd with Zeal for the Succession of that ILLUSTRIOUS HOUSE, even in the Joys of Youth, twice brake away, *viz.* in 1704 and 1708, and pass'd a double Ocean ; that He might with Rapture see, and in his Country's Name express the Ardour of their Vows to THAT MOST IMPORTANT FAMILY ; in which under Heaven all the Welfare of three mighty Nations, and even of all the Protestant States and Kingdoms in the World, as well as the Liberty, Religion and Felicity of these Colonies and Provinces were involved. A celebrated Instance peculiar to Himself alone ; that I presume no other *American* can pretend to ;
and

D E D I C A T I O N .

and for the Fatigue and Pains, I suppose no other Subject of the whole *British Empire*: which redounds to the Glory of the LAND that bred Him, that parted with Him and receiv'd Him with Applause; and the happy Consequence whereof, at the Head of his Country, He now enjoys.

May that BLESSED FAMILY remain upon the Throne and Prosper as long as the Sun endures: May they spread their BRANCHES to every State and Kingdom round about, and therewith extend the British Happiness. May THESE PLANTATIONS, flourish under their benign Influence to the End of Time. May YOUR EXCELLENCY enjoy their Smiles to the last Hour of Life; and thereby with the Divine Grace and Blessing, long lengthen our Tranquility and advance our Welfare. May YOUR HONOURS, now taking your Turn to rise & Shine in the exalted Places of your wise and pious Predecessors, follow their bright Examples, preserve the dear DEPOSITA resigned to your faithful Trust, and transmit them safely to your Successors: In all your Councils may you look to future as well as present Generations; whom you may see depending on your Care and Wisdom, as we unborn depended on the Care and Wisdom of those before us: and may You ever keep in View the Principal and Noble ENDS of these Religious Settlements. So
will

D E D I C A T I O N .

will you be with our Dear **FOREFATHERS**; an
eternal Excellence, and the Joy and Praise of
perpetual Generations.

Your Excellency's

Boston, Nov. 24th.
1736.

and Honours

most Obedient

Humble Servant,

Thomas Prince.



The P R E F A C E,

*Relating the RISE, DESIGN, and PROGRESS
of this Composure.*

NEXT to the sacred History, and that of the Reformation, I was from my early Youth instructed in the History of this Country. And the first Book of this Kind put into my Hand was the *New-England Memorial* compos'd by Mr. Secretary *Morton*; being the History of *PLIMOUTH COLONY* from the Beginning, to 1668. Gov. *Thomas Dudley's* Letter to the *Countess of Lincoln*, informed me of the Beginning of the *MASSACHUSETTS COLONY*. Mr. *William Hubbard* and Mr. *Increase Mather's* Narratives of the *Indian Wars* in 1637, 1675 and 1676, with Mr. *Cotton Mather's* History of the *Indian Wars* from 1688 to 1698, gave me a sufficient View of those calamitous Times. Mr. *Matthew Mayhew's* Account of the *Vineyard-Indians*, Mr. *Increase Mather's* Record of Remarkable Providences, Mr. *Cotton Mather's* Lives of Mr. *Cotton, Norton, Wilson, Davenport, Hooker, Mitchel, Eliot*, and Sir *William Phipps*, increas'd my Knowledge: And much more was it advanced, upon the coming out of the last mentioned Author's *Ecclesiastical History of NEW-ENGLAND*, in *Folio* in 1702

Yet still I long'd to see all these Things disposed in the Order of Time wherein they happened, together with the Rise and Progress of the several Towns, Churches, Counties, Colonies, and Provinces throughout this Country.

Upon my entering into the *College*, I chanced in my leisure Hours to read Mr. *Chamberlain's* Account of the *Cottonian Library*: Which excited in me a Zeal of laying hold on every Book, Pamphlet, and Paper, both in *Print* and *Manuscript* which are either written by Persons who lived here, or that have any Tendency to enlighten our History.

When I went to *England*, I met with a great Variety of Books and Pamphlets, too many here to name, relating to

this Country, wrote in ancient Times, and which I could not meet with on this Side the *Atlantick*. Among others, in a *History of NEW-ENGLAND, from 1628 to 1651*, Printed in Quarto *London 1654*, I found many Particulars, of the Beginning of our several Churches, Towns and Colonies, which appear in no other Writer. The running Title of the Book is *Wonder-Working Providence, &c.*: and in the genuine Title-Page, no Author is named. Some of the Books were faced with a false Title Page; wherein the Work is wrongly assigned to Sir *F. Georges*: But the true Author was Mr. *Johnson* of *Woburn* in *New-England*, as the late Judge *Scwall* assur'd me, as of a Thing familiarly known among the Fathers of the *Massachusetts Colony*.

In my foreign Travels, I found the want of a regular History of this Country every where complain'd of: and was often mov'd to undertake it, tho' I could not think my self equal to a Work so noble as the Subject merits. The extraordinary Talents which *Le Moyn* and others require in an Historian were enough to deter me. And yet I had a secret Tho't, that upon returning to my native Country, in case I should fall into a State of Leisure, and no other engaged; I would attempt a *Brief Account of Facts* at least, in the Form of *Annals*.

But, returning home in 1717, Providence was pleas'd soon to settle me in such a Publick Place and Circumstance, as I could expect no Leisure for such a Work, and gave it over. I could propose no other than to go on with my Collections, & provide Materials for some other Hand: Which I have been at no small Expence to gather: Having amass'd above a *Thousand* Books, Pamphlets, and Papers of this Kind in Print, and a great Number of Papers in *Manuscript*: So many indeed, that I have never yet had Leisure enough to read them. For I should want at least as long a Time as *Dio*: Who says he had been not only *Ten Years* in Collecting for his History, but also *Twelve Years* more in Compiling it: And yet by his *Book of Dreams and Prodiges*, presented to *Severus*, one would think he had sufficient Leisure.*

In 1720 came out Mr *NEAL's History of NEW ENGLAND*, which I was glad to see, and pleas'd both with his Spirit
Style,

Style and Method. I could wish nothing more than that he had all the Helps this Country affords. And tho' he has fallen into many Mistakes of Facts which are commonly known among us, some of which he seems to derive from Mr. *Oldmixon's* Account of NEW ENGLAND in his *British Empire in America*; and which Mistakes are no doubt the Reason why Mr. *Neal's* History is not more generally read among us: yet considering the *Materials* this worthy Writer was confin'd to, and that he was never here; it seems to me scarce possible that any under his Disadvantages should form a better. In comparing Him with the *Authors* from whence he draws, I am surpriz'd to see the Pains he has taken to put the *Materials* into such a regular Order: And to me it seems as if many Parts of his Work cannot be mended.

Upon the Account of those *Mistakes* as also many *Deficiencies* which our written Records only are able to supply; I have been often urged here to undertake our History, but as often declin'd for the Reasons aforesaid. However being still solicited, and no other attempting; at length in 1728 I determin'd to draw up a *short Account of the most remarkable Transactions and Events, in the Form of a meer CHRONOLOGY*; which I apprehended would give a Summary and regular View of the Rise and Progress of our Affairs, be a certain Guide to future Historians, make their Performance easier to them, or assist Mr. *Neal* in correcting his *Second Edition*; and which I supposed would not take above Six or Eight *Sheets*, intending to write no more than a Line or two upon every Article.

The Design was this, —

• A summary and exact ACCOUNT of the most material
 • Occurrences relating to these Parts of the World from their
 • first Discovery in the Order of Time in which they happened:
 • Wherein, besides the most REMARKABLE PROVIDENCES;
 • such as appearances of Comets and Eclipses, Earthquakes, Tem-
 • pests, Inundations, Droughts, Scarcities, Fires, Epidemical Sick-
 • nesses, memorable Accidents and Deliverances, Deaths of Men
 • of Figure, with their Age and Places where they liv'd and
 • died, as also of the most aged with the Number of their Offspring;
 • there will be brief Hints of our HISTORICAL TRANSAC-
 • TIONS, as the Rise and Changes of Governments, the Elec-
 • tions of chief Magistrates, the Grants and Settlements of Towns

and Precincts, their Indian and English Names; the Formations of Churches and Counties, the Ordinations and Removals of Ministers, building Houses for publick Worship, Forts and great Bridges, erecting Grammar Schools and Colleges, extraordinary publick Fasts and Thanksgivings, Propagation of the Gospel, remarkable Laws and Executions, as also Wars, Assaults, Expeditions, Battles, Peace, &c. The different Dates assign'd to various Occurrences, will be carefully Compared and Corrected, and the very Years, Months and Days, if possible ascertained. Together with an INTRODUCTION, containing a Brief Account of the most remarkable Persons, Transactions and Events abroad,

1. From the CREATION to the Birth of CHRIST, according to the Computation of the best Chronologers.

2. From thence to the Discovery of the NEW WORLD by CHRISTOPHER COLUMBUS.

3. From thence to the Discovery of NEW ENGLAND by Captain Gosnold.

The Ministers throughout this Country were desired to make their careful Enquiries and send in their accurate Accounts as soon as possible; that such material Passages might be preserved from Oblivion, and so desirable a Collection might be hastened to the publick View.

Upon my publishing this Design, I first engaged in the INTRODUCTION: but quickly found, as Chambers in his *Cyclopædia* observes, 'Chronology to be vastly more difficult than one can imagine who has not applied himself to the Study; and as Alsted in his *Thesaurus*, says, That his other Labours were but as Play to this'. In my *Prefaces* to the several *Periods* and the following *Notes*, I observe the Writers with whom I agree and differ, as also some of the greatest *Difficulties*. And as I would not take the least *Iota* upon Trust if possible; I examin'd the *Original Authors* I could meet with: and some of the Articles were so perplexed, as it cost me a *Fortnight's* Thought and Labour before I could be fully satisfied. The meer *Tables* and *Calculations* I was forc'd to make would compose a *Folio*. To find out not only the *Year* and *Month*, but even the *Day* of every Article, I was oblig'd to search a great Number of Writers: And the knowing Reader will see that so many precise Points of Time, are no where to be found, but by such a Collection as I have for this Intent perused.

As to the LINE OF TIME — It is measured by the continued Succession of *Patriarchs* & *Sovereigns* of the most famous Kingdoms & Empires. For the *three First Periods*, viz. (1) Of the *Patriarchs*, (2) *Judges of Israel*, & (3) *Kings of Judah* to the Destruction of the first *Temple* and of *Jerusalem* by *Nebuchadnezzar*; I leave the *Samaritan Pentateuch*, the *Septuagint* & *Josephus*, which several Writers both ancient & modern follow; and I strictly keep to the *HEBREW BIBLE*, of which it is said, our old English *Bede* was the first who made it the Rule of ancient Chronology. In the *fourth Period*, viz. from thence thro' the Reigns of the *Babylonian*, *Persian*, *Grecian* and *Egyptian* Monarchs, to the *Roman Emperors*; I keep to *Ptolemy's* famous *Astronomical Canon*, and give it exactly thro' the Period. In the *fifth* and *sixth Periods* from thence to the Monarchs of *England*; I make use of *Tacitus*, *Suetonius*, *Dio*, *Herodian*, *Eusebius*, *Evagrius*, *Socrates Scholasticus*, *Calvisius*, *Helvicus*, *Petavius* &c. And in the *seventh* & *last*, from thence to the Beginning of the Reign of *K. James I.* in *England*, when He became the first Monarch of *GREAT BRITAIN*; I keep to the *ancient Authors* in *Latin* to the Reign of *Edward II.*: of all which I am sorry that I could not find the *Saxon Chronicle* in this Country.

But whereas in the Times before the *CHRISTIAN ÆRA*; I cite several Authors; such as *Calvisius*, *Helvicus*, *Alsted*, *Petavius*, *Usher*, &c. as agreeing in the same Year affixed to an Article, tho' they call'd that Year a different Year of the *World*: I need not tell the learned, that in those Articles those Authors do not differ, as to the same *Real Years*, or Years of the *Julian Period*, or *Cœlestial Characters* assigned to them, or in their *Distance* from the *Christian Æra*. Thus for Instance, as to the Time when *Augustus* took *Alexandria*, and put an End to the *Egyptian Kingdom*; *Calvisius* calls it *Aug. 1.* in the Year of the *World* 3926; *Usher* calls it 3974, beginning 3975 in the following Month: but we beginning this Year with *January* as the *Julian Year* begins, we place this Article on *Aug. 1.* in 3975: And yet this is the very same *Real Year*, *Month* and *Day*, viz. *Aug. 1.* in the Year of the *Julian Period* 4684, Cycle of the *Sun* 8, of the *Moon* 10, and the 30th Year before the *Christian Æra*; the first of which is the Year of the *Julian Period* 4714; as all Chronologers agree. In our Use of those Authors there-

fore,

fore, we turn *their Years* of the *Julian Period* into *those Years* of the *World* which answer them in our *Chronology*.

In the *Introduction* I also observ'd *this Rule*; that *the nearer I drew to the later Ages, wherein we grow more concerned, the larger I made my Periods*: And in the *Process* of this *Work* was gradually led on and perswaded to exceed my first *Design*, which was to have made the *five later Periods* near as short as the *two former*.

By that time I finished the *Introduction*, I found so great a *Number of Historical Manuscripts*, both old and new; containing all *Sorts of Records* both *Publick and Private, Religious, Civil and Military*: that our *Printed Histories* are but a *small part* in *Comparison* with them, and made me still more ready to yield to the *Sollicitations* of *Others*, to enlarge my *Design* and give the *Publick* an *Abridgement* of them. For I consider'd that as *several ancient Records* of *Towns and Churches* have been *unhappily burnt*, and some lost otherwise; If I did not now in this *Way* preserve the *Substance* of these *Historical Memoirs*, it would be daily in *Danger* of perishing beyond *Recovery*.

The *MANUSCRIPTS* I have *Opportunity* to search are the
In *Folio* ----

1. *Gov. Bradford's HISTORY* of *PLIMOUTH* People at *Colony*, from 1602 to the *End* of 1646, in 270 *Pages*. With some *Account, at the End*, of the *Increase* of those who came over with Him, from 1620 to 1650, and all in his own *Hand-writing*.

2. The ancient *Church* of *Plymouth* *Records*; began by *Mr. Secretary Morton*.

3. A *Copy* of the *GRAND CHARTER* of *NEW ENGLAND* granted by *K. James I.* on *Nov. 3. 1620*, in 86 *Pages*.

4. The ancient *Records* of the *Massachusetts Colony*.

5. The ancient *Records* of the *County* of *Suffolk*; In the first *Volume* whereof are several *Letters* from the *Massachusetts Company* at *London* to *Mr. Endicot*, before they came over.

6. The ancient *Records* of the *Town* of *Charlestown*: In the first *Volume* whereof is a particular *History* of the first *Coming* and *Settling* of the *English* there, and in the *Neighbouring Places*.

7. The ancient *Records* of the *Town* of *Boston*; as also the *First, Second, Third*, and several *other later Church* there.

8. The ancient *Records* of the *first Church of Roxbury*, written by the famous and Rev. Mr. *Eliot*, and his successive Colleagues the Rev. Mr. *Danforth* and *Walter*: In a *separate Part of the Book* are recorded Hints of various ancient Transactions and Events, in other Towns and Colonies.

9. An ancient *Record* of the *first New-England Synod*, viz. at *Cambridge*, in 1637.

10. *Plimouth Colony LAWS*, from 1626 to 1660, inclusively.

11. The ancient *Records* of the Hon. *Artillery Company*.

12. The Rev. Mr. *William Hubbard's* General HISTORY of NEW ENGLAND from the Discovery to 1680, in 338 Pages: And tho' not in his own Hand-writing, yet having several Corrections made thereby.

In Quarto ---

1. A Book of PATENTS of *several Parts* of NEW-ENGLAND.

2. An Original *Record* of the Rev. Mr. *Peter Hobart* of *Hingham*, relating Hints of Matters, both in his own and some Neighbouring Churches also.

3. Major *Mason's* ancient Account of the *Pequot War* in 1634, 5, 6, 7.

4. Major General *Gookin's* History of the *New-England Indians*, to 1674, inclusively.

5. An Original *Journal* in Latin, composed by the late Rev. Mr. *Brimsmead* of *Marlborough*, and in his own Hand-writing, from 1665 to 1695, inclusively.

6. An Account of *memorable Things* in *New-England*, from 1674 to 1687 inclusively, written by the late Rev. Dr. *Increase Mather*, in his own Hand.

7. An Original *Journal* of the late Capt. *Lawrence Hammond* of *Charlestown* and *Boston*, from 1677 to 1694, inclusively.

8. An Original *Journal* of a very Intelligent Person deceased, who desired not to be named; relating remarkable Matters from 1689 to 1711, inclusively.

In Octavo ---

1. A *Register* of Gov. *Bradford's*, in his own Hand, recording some of the first Deaths, Marriages and Punishments, at *Plimouth*: with Three other *Miscellaneous Volumes* of his.

2. A little ancient *Table-Book* of his Son Major *William Bradford*, afterward *Dep. Gov.* of PLIMOUTH-COLONY, written with his own Hand, from 1649 to 1670.

3. Capt. *Roger Clap's* Account of the ancient Affairs of the MASSACHUSETTS COLONY.

4. An

4. An Original Register wrote by the 'Rev. Mr. *J. Lathrop*, recording the first Affairs both of *Scituate & Barnstable*; of which Towns he was successively the first Minister.

5. Two Original Books of Dep. Gov. *Willoughby & Cap. Hammond*; giving historical Hints, from 1651 to 1660 inclusively.

6. *Interleav'd Almanacks* of the late Honourable *J. Hull* and Judge *Swallow* of *Boston*, Esqrs; of the Rev. Mr. *St. Paul* the last of *Charlestown*, of the late Rev. Mr. *Joseph Gerrish* of *Wenham*, and several others from 1646 to 1720 wherein the Facts were wrote at the Time they happened tho' the Notes in several being wrote in divers Sorts *Short-Hand*, to which I was an utter Stranger, put me to no small Pains to find out their *Alphabets* and other Characters.

In loose Papers ---

1. Extracts from the PUBLICK RECORDS of the Colonies of *Plymouth, Connecticut & Rhode-Island*.

2. A great Number of ancient Letters & other Papers which I have collected from several Libraries & particular Persons.

3. Near 200 Chronological Letters sent me, collected from the Records of several Towns & Churches throughout the Country, as also from private Registers, Gravestones, and the Information of aged and Intelligent Persons.

The Reader will easily conceive how large and difficult a Field now lay before me; when all these Manuscripts were to be perused, examined, and compared both with themselves and with those Accounts already published; their Varieties and Contradictions solved, their Mistakes discovered, the Chronological Order of all their Passages found out, one regular Abridgement taken from them; what several wanted, to be supplied from others; and the most material and proper Passages, Words and Phrases selected from them all, and placed together in a natural Order, and so as to enlighten each other.

For in my tracing several Authors on this Occasion; soon saw Cause to come into the same Sentiment & Resolution with the Rev. Mr. *Styve* in his Preface to the first Volume of his *Annals of the Reformation*; which I shall mention in his own Words, --- 'I have chosen commonly to set down Things in the very Words of the Records, & Originals, and of the Authors themselves, rather than in my own, without framing and dressing them into more modern Language; whereby the

‘Sense is sure to remain intire as the Writers meant it : Where-
 as by affecting too curiously to change & model Words and
 Sentences, I have observed the Sense it self to be often marred and
 disguised.’ Yea more Scrupulous than Mr. *Strype* on this
 Account --- For instead of commonly, I have so universally
 observ’d this Rule, that where I have inserted Sentences or
 Words of my own, for Illustration, I have either inclosed
 them in *Crotchets* [], or added them at the End of Pa-
 ragraphs, without any Author cited after them. And I
 know not that I have ever changed any Words or Phrases,
 unless they were very uncouth, or obsolete ; and then I
 have taken special Care to answer them with others of the
 same exact Importance : Only in some very few Instances I
 have used a softer Term for a severer.

In the History of our own Times, we may freely use our
 own Expressions : But in all Accounts of Events before, e-
 very Writer must take from Others, whether he mentions
 his Originals or no. ‘And tho’ it be more laborious, yet it
 seems not only more ingenuous to cite them, but also carries
 more Authority, and gives the inquisitive Reader greater
 Satisfaction. But those who have no Regard to those Au-
 thorities, may in the reading omitt them ; unless where
 they think the Passage of too great Moment.

And here I must Observe, That Mr. *Morton’s* History,
 from the Beginning of the *Plimouth People* to the End of
 1646, being chiefly Gov. *Bradford’s* Manuscript abbreviated ;
 from hence it comes to pass that in many Articles and Pa-
 ragraphs which I cite from Gov. *Bradford*, both Mr. *Morton*
 and I happen to use the same Words and Sentences : Not
 that I deduce them from Mr. *Morton*, but because they are
 the original Words and Sentences in Gov. *Bradford*.

Some may think me rather too critical : Others that I re-
 late some Circumstances too minute : And others, that I need
 not have interrupted the reading with so many Notes in the
 Margin. As for the first, I think a Writer of Facts cannot
 be too critical : It is Exactness I aim at, and would not
 have the least Mistake if possible pass to the World. If I
 have unhappily fallen into any ; it is thro’ Inadvertency only,
 and I shall be obliged to those who will be so kind as to
 send me their Corrections. As to the second, those Things
 which are too minute with Some, are not so with Others :

Those minute Things are observed with Pleasure by the People who live in the Places where they were transacted, which are inconsiderable to Those who never saw them: And there's none who attentively reads a History either ancient or modern, but in a great many Cases wishes the Writer had mention'd some minuter Circumstances, that were then commonly known, and thought too needless or small to be noted. Besides, smaller Matters are of greater Moment among a *smaller People* and more affect them, which are less important and affecting as the People grow *more numerous*. And I have therefore thought it a proper Rule in History, to mention smaller Things in the *Infancy* of these Plantations; which I shall gradually omit as they grow a greater People. But as to the *third*, I wish I had placed *many* of the *Notes* in the *Body* of the *Page*; and propose to do so in the *Rest* of the *Work*.

As to *Impartiality*; I know it is usual for the Writers of History to assert it; some in their Prefaces, others in the Front of their Works; some in the strongest Terms, who have been notoriously guilty of the contrary; and I am apt to think that many are partial who are insensible of it. For myself, I own, I am on the side of *pure Christianity*, as also of *Civil and Religious Liberty*; and this for the *Low* as well as *High*, for the *Laitie* as well as the *Clergy*; I am for leaving every one to the *Freedom of Worshipping according to the Light of his Conscience*; and for *extending Charity to every one who receives the Gospel as the Rule of his Faith and Life*: I am on the side of *Meekness, Patience, Gentleness and Innocence*: And I hope, my Inclination to these great Principles will not bias me to a Misrecital of Facts; but rather to state them as I really find them for the publick Benefit. Nor will the Nature or Design of this Work, which is rather a *Register or Collection of Matters as described by Others*, so much admit of Partiality, as a *proper History* where the Writer allows himself the Freedom of using his own Expressions.

In citing *Fuller*, for the Births, Ages and Characters of Persons, I sometimes mean his *Abel Relativus*, but otherwise, his *Church History of England*. And whereas I observe some Mistakes in Mr. *Hubbara's History of New-England*; the Reader may consider, that as we have only a Copy of that valuable Work, the Substance whereof I propose to give the Publick; some of those Mistakes may be owing to the

Transcriber

Transcriber only, and some that *learned and ingenious Author* fell into for want of *Gov. Bradford's History* and some other Materials which I happen to be favoured with.

In short, I cite my *Vouchers* to every Passage: And I have done my utmost first to find out the *Truth*, and then to relate it in the clearest Order. I have laboured after *Accuracy*: And yet I dare not say, that I am without Mistake; nor do I desire the Reader to conceal any he may possibly find. But on the contrary, I offer this Work to the Publick View, that it may be perused with the most critical Eye, that every *Error* may be discovered, and the *Correction* published in the *following Volume*: Which I hope will not be long a composing; having passed through the much greater Difficulties in *this First*, and abstracted many of my Materials towards *the Second*.



C O R R E C T I O N S.

p page. l line. f for. r read. d dele.

In the Introduction.

PAge 2 line 5 f **KINGS** r **MONARCHS**. l 6 d and *Greek*. l 7 t **VI.** the **KINGS** r **VII** the **MONARCHS**. l 11 f *Arrival* of the **FIRST** **PLANTERS** of *Plimouth* in *New-England*, r *Discovery* of **NEW ENGLAND** & *Death* of **QUEEN ELIZABETH**. p 7 l 29 f 930 r 940 p 9 l 12 f **III** r **IV**. p 22 l 30 f 943 r 945. p 24 l 9 r *Brutus* & *Cassius*. l 18 f 967 r 963. f **Dec.** 31. (18) r *July* 16. l 21 f (*cu*) r (*c*) l 22 d 968. Margin d the whole Note (18) p 26 l 5 f 750 * r 750, i.e. according to *Varro* & *Dio's* Account which we here use; * Marg. l. 3 f later r earlier. p 41 l 2 d *Greek* or l 5 for *Restoration* r *Revival*. p 53 l 27 f **Dies** r **Born**. p 55 marg. l 2 f **Punish** r **Reproach**. p 72 l 12 r **OE.** 19. **K. John** dies (*w f*) p 89 l 17 d and that neither the Clergy nor Convocation shall exact any Canons contrary to Law, or without the King's Consent (*k*) [This Passage belonging to 1534, *Jan.* 15. See Additions at the End of this Volume]

C O R R E C T I O N S.

In Part I.

P 4 Mar. 14 f calls r call. p 23 l 23 f *this Winter* r *this Winter* (pc) Feb. 5 (pg). p 28 l 21 f (pr) r (ps) p 70 l 3 f The English Voyagers r Mr. Brewster, Carver, Bradford, Winslow, with the other English Voyagers. p 77 l 20 d (B).

In Part II. Sect. 1.

P 83 l 10 of June 12. r June 12. &c. p 91 l 28 f the r these. p 96 l 2 d Line 2, 3, 4, 5. p 105 l 23 f we agree to send, r we [agree to] send. p 114 l 9 f (B.W) r (B.W) or 37 (for. ps) p 156 Between the 2d & 3d Paragraphs insert, Oct. 8. (cb. pn) Lord Viscount Wimbleton with 80 Ships (cb. rs) * & Ten Thousand Land Soldiers (ib) sails from *Plimouth* for *Cadiz*, and begins the WAR with *Spain* (cb. rs.) In the Marg insert, *cb.* Continuation of *Baker's Chronicle. pn, Pointer. rs, Rusworth. ib, Mr. James Howel's Letters.* * *Dr. Howell* says 120 Ships: *Mr. James Howel* says above 80 of ours, besides a Squadron of 16 *Hollanders*. p 157, 158 In the Titles put K. of *Great Britain, Charles I.* in the Middle a || between him and the K. of *France*; and a † between K. *Charles* and the K. of *Spain*. p 195 l 29 f *John* r *Jo* †. In the Marg. insert, † Thus 'tis written in the *Massachusetts Colony Records*, but whether *Joseph* or *John* be meant, uncertain p 198 l 17 f (bd) r (bc) Marg. l 2 f old r odd. p 200 l 2 f (cre) r (cre) Marg. l 1 f old r odd. p 202 l 5 r confirm their. l 11 f as r all. p 203 l 26 f came r come. Marg l 4 f 1629 r 1630. p 205 Marg. l 5 f seems r seem. p 208 Marg. at the End of Note [93] insert: Unless they mean of the *Arrival of the Fleet at Charlestown*. p 212 l 14 Between (Mer) and [93] insert *Mr. W. Vassal*. Marg. l 1 d also. And at the End of the Note insert, By which it seems he returned thither before the first *Court of Assistants*, which is on *Aug. 23*. p 219 l last but one, r Alterations †. In the Marg insert, † But as *Burnet* observes, 'In K. *Edward's* FIRST BOOK, Copes and other Garments [i.e. Popish Garments] were ordered to be used; in his SECOND BOOK, all was laid aside except the Surplice; yet the *Queen* who lov'd Magnificence, returns to the Rules in K. *Edward's* FIRST BOOK'. p 250 in the two last Lines, d Section of the II. p 253 l 33 d Sect I.



A LIST of the SUBSCRIBERS.

HIS Excellency JONATHAN BELCHER, *Esq;*
*Captain General and Governour in Chief over
 His Majesty's Provinces of the Massachusetts-
 Bay and New-Hampshire in New-England.*
 (for Six)

The Honourable SPENCER PHIPPS, *Esq;* *Lieut.*
Governour of the Massachusetts. (for Two)

The Honourable WILLIAM DUMMER, *Esq;* *late*
Lieut. Governour of the Massachusetts.

The Hon. John Alford, *Esq;* (for Six)
 Richard Abbe, *Esq;* of Windham.
 The Rev. Mr. Hull Abbot of Charlestown.

Mr. Moses Abbot.

Mr. Abijah Adams.

Jedidiah Adams, *M. A.*

The Rev. Mr. John Adams.

Mr. John Adams of Wrentham (for Six)

Mr. Matthew Adams:

Samuel Adams, *Esq;*

William Adams of New-London, *M. A.*

The Rev. Mr. Benjamin Allen.

Mr. Bozoune Allen. *Junr. Printer.*

Mr Jeremiah Allen, of Marblehead, *Merchant.*

Jeremiah Allen, *Student at Harvard College*
The Rev. Mr. James Allin of Brooklin.
 Job Almy, of Tiverton, *Esq;*
 Mr. Nathanael Ames, of Dedham.
The Rev. Mr. Nathanael Appleton, of Cambridge.
Capt. Jonathan Armitage, Merchant.
 Edward Arnold, of Duxbury, *Esq;*
 Mr. Jonathan Atwater, of New-Haven, (*for Six*)
The Rev. Mr. John Avery, of Truro.
 John Avery, *M. A. Merchant.*
 Mr. Joseph Austin, *jun. of Charlestown.*

B

The Hon. Melatiah Bourn, of Sandwich, Esq;
The Hon. Theophilus Burril, of Lynn, Esq;
The Hon. Thomas Berry, of Ipswich, Esq;
 Mr. Benjamin Babbidge, (*for Two*)
 Mr. Stephen Badger, of Charlestown.
The Rev. Mr. Thomas Balch, of Dedham.
The Rev. Mr. William Balch, of Bradford.
 * John Ballantine, *Esq;*
 Mr. John Banks.
The Rev. Mr. John Barnard, of Marblehead.
 Mr. Matthew Barnard.
 Mr. Lazarus Le Baron, of Plymouth, *Physician.*
The Rev. Mr. Samuel Barret, of Hopkinton.
The Rev. Mr. Benjamin Bass, of Hanover.
The Rev. Mr. Joseph Baxter, of Medfield.
 Mr. Gregory Baxter, of Braintree.
 Mr. Thomas Baxter.
 Mr. Samuel Bayley.
 Mr. Elisha Beal, of Hingham, (*for Two*)
 Mr. John Becham.
 Mr. Joshua Beck, of Newbury.
 Andrew Belcher, *Esq;* (*for Two*)
 Jonathan Belcher, *Esq;* *Counsellor at Law of the Middle*
Temple, London.
 Mr. Jeremiah Belknap, (*for Three*)
 Nathanael Bethune, *B. A.*
 Mr. John Billings.

- Mr. Richard Billings.
 * *The Rev. Mr. William Billings, of Windham.*
 Mr. Jonathan Bixby, of Boxford, (for Two)
 Mr. James Blake, of Dorchester.
 Mr. John Blake.
 Capt Joseph Blanchard, of Dunstable:
 Mr. Joshua Blanchard.
 Pyam Blower, *M. A. Merchant, (for Two)*
 William Bollan, *Esq;*
 Mr. Edmund Booth, of Stratford, (for Six)
 Francis Borland, *Esq;* (for Six)
 William Boston, of Roxbury, *M. A. (for Two)*
The Rev. Mr. Joseph Bourn, of Sandwich.
The Rev. Mr. Shearjashub Bourn, of Scituate.
 Mr. Stephen Boutineau, *Merchant.*
 William Bowdoin, *B. A. Merchant.*
 Capt Thomas Bowen, of Rehoboth.
 John Bowles, of Roxbury, (for Six)
 John Boydell, *Esq;* (for Six)
 Mr. Thomas Boylston.
 Dr. Zabdiel Boylston, *F. R. S.*
 * Zabdiel Boylston, *jun. M. A.*
 Mr. James Bradford.
 Mr. Joseph Bradford, (for Two)
 Simon Bradstreet, *jun. of Charlestown, M. A.*
 Mr. Joseph Brandon, *Merchant.*
 William Brattle, of Cambridge, *Esq;*
 Mr. John Breck.
 Ebenezer Bridge, *B. A. (for Two)*
 Joseph Bridgham, *M. A. (for Six)*
 Mr. Samuel Bridgham, (for Two)
 Mr. Michael Brigden, of Charlestown,
 Francis Brinley, *Esq;*
 Mr. John Brintnall.
 * Thomas Brintnall, *M. A.*
 Mr. Edward Bromfield, *Merchant.*
 Benjamin Browne, of Salem, *Esq;* (for Two)
The Rev. Mr. John Brown, of Haverhill.
 Josiah Brown, *B. A.*
 Mr. Simeon Brown, of Salisbury, (for Two)
 William Erowne, of Salem, *M. A. Merchant, (for Two)*
 Mr.

- Mr. William Brown, of Newport.
- Lemuel Bryant, *Student at Harvard-College.*
- Mr. Richard Buckley, *Merchant.*
- * *The Rev.* Mr. John Bulkley, of Colchester.
- John Bulkley, of Colchester, *Esq;*
- The Rev.* Mr. Nehemiah Bull, of Westfield.
- Mr. Jeremiah Bumstead.
- Mr. Benjamin Bunker.
- Mr. Samuel Burr, of Charlestown.
- John Burt, *B. A.*
- Mr. John Bushel, *Printer.*
- The Rev.* Mr. Mather Byles.

C

- The Hon.* John Cushing, of Scituate, *Esq;*
- The Hon.* John Chandler, of Woodstock, *Esq.*
- The Hon.* Thomas Cushing, *Esq;*
- The Rev.* Benjamin Colman, *D. D.*
- The Rev.* Mr. Marston Cabbot, of Killingley.
- * Mr. John Caldwell, of Hartford, *Merchant,* (for Six)
- The Rev.* Mr. Elisha Callender.
- Mr. John Callender.
- The Rev.* Mr. John Callender, of Newport.
- Mr. Nathanael Capen, of Topsfield, (for Six)
- Mr. John Carnes.
- The Rev.* Mr. Ezra Carpenter, of Hull.
- Samuel Cary, of Charlestown, *Esq;*
- John Chandler, of Worcester, *Esq;*
- Josiah Chase, *Student at Harvard-College.*
- Stephen Chase, *M. A.*
- The Rev.* Mr. Charles Chauncy, (for Two)
- The Rev.* Mr. Samuel Checkley.
- The Rev.* Mr. Ames Cheever, of Manchester.
- Ezekiel Cheever, of Charlestown, *Esq;*
- Capt. Joshua Cheever, (for Two)
- The Rev.* Mr. Thomas Cheney, of Brookfield.
- Mr. David Chesebrough, of Newport, *Merchant.*
- The Rev.* Mr. John Chipman, of Beverly.
- Mr. Ebenezer Choat, of Newbury.
- Charles Church, *Esq;* *Sheriff of the County of Bristol.*

Mr.

- Mr. Hopestill Clap, of Dorchester.
The Rev. Mr. Nathanael Clap, of Newport, (for Two)
 Mr. Nehemiah Clap, of Milton.
 Noah Clap, of Dorchester, *B. A.*
The Rev. Mr. Thomas Clap, of Taunton.
The Rev. Mr. Thomas Clap, of Windham.
 Mr. Benjamin Clarke.
 Mr. John Clarke, *Physician.*
 Mr. Jonas Clarke.
The Rev. Mr. Ward Clark, of Kingston.
 Mr. Thomas Cobb
 Peter Coffin, of Exeter, *M. A.*
 Mr. Tristram Coffin, of Newbury, (for Six)
 Capt. Nathanael Coggeshall, of Newport, (for Six)
The Rev. Mr. Timothy Collens, of Litchfield.
 Mr. Henry Collins, of Newport, *Merchant.*
 Mr. David Collson.
 Mr. James Converse, of Woburn, (for Three)
 Mr. Amos Coolidge, of Sherburn.
 Samuel Coolidge, of Watertown, *M. A.*
 Mr. John Coomer, of Newport, (for Three)
The Rev. Mr. William Cooper, (for Two)
 Mr. Peter Cotta, (for Six)
 Capt. Elias Cotting, (for Six)
The Rev. Mr. John Cotton, of Newton, (for Twelve)
 • *The Rev.* Mr. Nathanael Cotton, of Bristol.
 Roland Cotton, *M. A.*
The Rev. Mr. Ward Cotton, of Hampton.
 George Cradock, *Esq;* (for Three)
 Josiah Crocker, *Student at Harvard College.*
 Mr. Nathanael Crosman, of Taunton
 Capt. Nathanael Cunningham, *Merchant,* (for Six)
The Rev. Mr. Caleb Cushing, of Salisbury, (for Six)
The Rev. Mr. Job Cushing, of Shrewsbury, (for Six)
 John Cushing, *junr.* of Scituate, *Esq;*
 • Nathanael Cushing, *B. A.*
 Thomas Cushing, *junr.* *M. A.* *Merchant,* (for Twelve)
 Ammi-Ruhamah Cutter, *M. A.*

D

- The Hon.* Paul Dudley, of Roxbury, *Esq;* (*for Two*)
 Richard Dana, of Marblehead, *M. A.*
 Mr. Samuel Dana, of Pomfret, (*for Six*)
 Samuel Danforth, of Cambridge, *Esq;*
 Mr. John Danill,
 Mr. John Darrell.
 Mr. Thomas Dawes, *jun.*
 Mr. Jacob Dehang, of Newport.
 Mr. Samuel Deming.
 Mr. John Dennie, *Merchant*, (*for Two*)
The Rev. Mr. Josiah Dennis, of Yarmouth, (*for Six*)
 Mr. Michael Dennis, *Bookseller.*
The Rev. Mr. Samuel Dexter, of Dedham.
 Mr. Benjamin Dolbeare, *Merchant.*
The Rev. Mr. Benjamin Doolittle, of Northfield.
Capt. William Downe, (*for Two*)
The Rev. Mr. Samuel Dunbar, of Stoughton.
Capt. Edward Durant, of Newton.
 Mr. Jonathan Dwight, (*for Six*)
 Joseph Dwight, of Brookfield, *Esq;*
The Rev. Mr. Josiah Dwight, of Dedham.
 Mr. John Draper, *Printer*, (*for Six*)
 Mrs. Lydia Draper, (*for Two*)
 Mr. Joseph Dyar..

E

- * John Eastwicke, *Esq;*
 Mr. Joseph Edwards, *Bookseller*, (*for Six*)
 Mr Andrew Eliot.
 Andrew Eliot, *jun Student* at Harvard College.
 Mr. Benjamin Eliot, *Bookseller*, (*for Six*)
The Rev. Mr. Jacob Eliot, of Lebanon, (*for Six*)
 Mr. Samuel Eliot, *Bookseller*, (*for Twelve*)
 John Ellery, *jun. M. A. Merchant.*
 Daniel Emerson, *Student* at Harvard College.
 Mr. Edward Emerson, *jun.* (*for Three*)
 * *The Rev.* Mr. John Emerson, of Portsmouth.
The Rev. Mr. John Emerson, of Topsfield.

The Rev. Mr. Joseph Emerson, of Malden.
 Mr. Jacob Emmons.
 Capt. John Erving, Merchant.
 John Eyre, of Portsmouth, M. A.

F

The Hon. Francis Foxcroft, of Cambridge, Esq; (for Two)
 Mr. William Fairfield, jun.
 David Farnum, Student at Harvard College.
 John Fayerweather, Esq;
 Mr. William Fenwick, Merchant.
 The Rev. Mr. Benjamin Fessenden, of Sandwich, (for Three)
 Mr. Josiah Fessenden, of Cambridge.
 Stephen Fessenden, Student at Harvard College.
 Mr. Grafton Feveryear, (for Six).
 Mr. John Fiske, of Haddam, (for Six).
 Mr. Nathan Fiske, of Watertown, (for Six).
 The Rev. Mr. Phineas Fiske, of Haddam, (for Two).
 The Rev. Mr. Samuel Fiske, of Salem.
 Benjamin Fitch, jun. M. A.
 * John Fitch, M. A. (for Three)
 * John Fitch, of Newbury, M. A. (for Two)
 Mr. Joseph Fitch.
 Mr. Benjamin Flagg, jun. of Worcester.
 Mr. Ebenezer Flegg, of Woburn, M. A.
 Mr. Thomas Fleet, Printer, (for Six)
 Mr. Francis Fletcher, of Concord.
 John Flint, Esq; of Concord.
 Capt. James Flucker, of Charlestown.
 Henry Flynt, Esq; Fellow of Harvard College.
 Mr. Joseph Frost, of Charlestown.
 Mr. James Fouldick,
 Mr. Hopestill Foster, Bookseller, (for Two)
 Richard Foster, Esq; Sheriff of Middlesex.
 Mr. Thomas Foster, (for Two)
 The Rev. Mr. Thomas Foxcroft.
 William Foye, Esq; Treasurer of the Province of the Massachusetts Bay.
 Mr. William Foye, jun.
 Mr Abraham Francis, Mer. Lant.

Mr. John Franklin.
 Mr. Jostah Franklin, (*for Two*)
 Mr. Gershom Frazer, (*for Two*)
 Enoch Freeman, *M. A. Merchant.*
 The Rev. Mr. Thomas Frink, of Rutland.
 Simon Frost, *M. A. Deputy Secretary.*
 Mr. John Frothingham of Charlestown.
 Capt. Samuel Frothingham, of Charlestown.
 Mr. Richard Fry, of Stroudwater,
 Mr. Edward Fuller, of Newton.
 Mr. Jonathan Fuller, of Newton.
 Mr. Joseph Fuller, of Newton.

G

The Hon. Edward Goddard, of Framingham, *Esq.*
 Mr. Joseph Gale.
 The Rev. Mr. James Gardner, of Marshfield.
 John Gardner, *M. A.*
 Joseph Gardner, *M. A.*
 Mr. Richard Gardner, of Roxbury (*for Six*)
 Mr. Samuel Gardner, *Merchant.*
 Mr. Samuel Gardner, *Merchant.*
 Mr. Nathanael Gardner.
 Mr. Francis Gatcombe, *Merchant.*
 The Rev. Mr. Ebenezer Gay, of Hingham.
 Ebenezer Gay, *Student at Harvard College.*
 Mr. Bartholomew Gedney.
 The Rev. Mr. Joshua Gee, (*for Three*)
 Mr. John Gerrish of Salem.
 Mr. John Gerrish *Jun.*
 Joseph Gerrish, of Newbury, *Esq.*
 Mr. Henry Gibbs.
 Henry Gibbs, *jun. of Cambridge, M. A.*
 Robert Gibbs, of Providence, *Esq.*
 Mr. Josiah Gilman, of Exeter, *Physician.*
 Nicholas Gilman, of Exeter, *M. A.*
 Capt. Peter Gilman, of Exeter.
 Capt. Samuel Gilman, of Exeter.
 Capt. Daniel Goffe.
 Mr. Richard Goldsmith.

- Mr. Nathanael Gilman of Exeter.
 Mr. Ezekiel Goldthwait. (*for Six*)
 Mr. Thomas Goldthwait.
 Capt. James Gooch, *jun.*
 Mr. Thomas Goodwill.
 Mr. Nathanael Goodwin.
 • *The Rev.* Mr. Nathanael Gookin, of Hampton, (*for Six*)
 • Mr. Samuel Grainger.
 Mr. Samuel Grant, (*for Two*)
 Mr. Benjamin Gray, (*Bookseller*)
 Ellis Gray, *B. A.* (*for Two*)
 Mr. William Gray, *Bookseller*, (*for Three*)
 Thomas Greaves of Charlestown, *Esq;*
 John Green, *M. A.*
 Mr. Jonas Green, of Philadelphia *Printer.*
The Rev. Mr. Joseph Green, of Barnstable.
 Joseph Green, *M. A. Merchant.*
 Mr. Nathanael Green, of New London
 Mr. Timothy Green of New-London, *Printer*, (*for Twelve*)
 Mr. Timothy Green, *Printer*, (*for Twelve*)
 Stephen Greenleaf, *M. A.*
 Mr. Thomas Greenough.
 Mr. William Greenleaf.
The Rev. Mr. John Greenwood, of Rehoboth, (*for Six*)
 Isaac Greenwood, *M. A. Hollisian Professor of the Mathematicks,*
 &c at Harvard College.
 Mr. Nathanael Greenwood
 Samuel Greenwood, *Esq;*
 Jeremiah Gridley, *M. A.*
 Mr. William Griggs.

H

- The Hon.* Thomas Hutchinson, *Esq;*
The Hon. Edward Hutchinson, *Esq;* *Treasurer of Harvard*
College.
The Rev. Mr. James Hale, of Ashford.
 Nathan Hale, *Student at Harvard College.*
 Robert Hale, of Beverly, *Esq;*
 Eihu Hall, of Wallingford, *M. A.*
 Hugh Hall, *Esq;*

- The Rev.* Mr Samuel Hall, of New *C*eshire, (for Six)
 Stephen Hall, of Charlestown, *Esq*;
 Mr. Benjamin Hallowell, (for Two)
 Mr. Thomas Hancock, *Merchant*, (for Six)
 Mr. Joseph Harman of York.
 Mr. Charles Harrison, *Bookseller*, (for Three)
 Mr. Peter Harris, of New London.
 Mr. Nathanael Hasey.
 Elias Haven, *M. A.* of Hopkinton.
 Mr. William Hays of Charlestown, *Apothecary*.
 Mr. Nathanael Hayward.
 Mr. Richard Hazzen, *jun.* of Haverhill (for Two)
 Mr. Israel Hearsey.
 Joseph Heath, of Roxbury. *Esq*;
 Mr. John Helyer.
 Mr. Ebenezer Hemenway, of Framingham.
 Capt. Daniel Henschman.
The Rev. Mr. Nathanael Henschman, of Lyn.
 Mr. Samuel Hendly, of Charlestown, *Merchant*, (for Two)
 Mr. Charles Henley.
 Mr. Daniel Henshaw. (for Two)
 Mr. William Hickling.
 Mr. William Hide, of Newton.
 Mr. Thomas Higgins, of Bellingham.
 Mr. Thomas Hill, *Merchant*.
The Rev. Mr. Nehemiah Hobart, of Hingham.
The Rev. Mr. Noah Hobart, of Fairfield
 Mr. William Holberton, *Merchant* (for Six)
 Mr. George Holmes, (for Six)
 Mr. Nathanael Holmes (for Twelve)
 James Holt, *Student at Harvard College*.
 Mr. John Holyoke.
 Mr. Samuel Holyoke.
 Mr. Amos Hovey, of Newton.
 Mr. James Hovey, of Plimouth,
 Abiel Howard of Bridgewater, *M. A.*
 Capt Isaac Hubbard, of Long-Island (for Six)
 Nathanael Hubbard of Bristol, *Esq*;
 Mr. Richard Hubbard.
 Thomas Hubbard, *M. A. Merchant* (for Two).
 * Mr. John Huggins of Springfield, (for Six)
 Mr. Eliphalet Hull of Fairfield (for Three)

- Mr. James Humphrey, of Weymouth.
 Mr. Jabez Hunt.
 John Hunt *Esq;* (for Six)
 John Hunt, *B. A.*
 Mr. Samuel Hunt of Billerica.
 Mr. Hezekiah Huntington of Norwich, *Merchant* (for Twelve)
 Mr. Jacob Hurd of Charlestown.
 Mr. Jacob Hurd, *Goldsmith* (for Six)
 Francis Hutchinson, *B. A.*
 Thomas Hutchinson, jun. *M. A. Merchant*

J

- The Hon.* John Jeffries, *Esq;*
 Edward Jackson, *M. A.* (for Two)
 Mr. Joseph Jackson.
 Mr. Thomas Jackson jun.
 Mr. Leonard Jarvis *Merchant*, (for Two)
The Rev. Mr. Samuel Jeffers of Wells.
 David Jeffries, *M. A. Merchant.*
The Rev. Mr. William Jenison of Salem.
 Thomas Jenner of Charlestown *Esq;*
 Mr. Isaac Johnson of Charlestown.
 Mr. Thomas Johnson.
 Mr. Thomas Johnson of Middletown.
 Mr. Elisha Jones of Weston.
 Mr. Ephraim Jones of Concord, (for Six)
 John Jones of Hopkinton, *Esq;*

K

- Mr. Caleb Kenrick of Newton.
 Capt. Ebenezer Kent of Charlestown.
 Mr. John Kent of Suffield.
 Mr. James Kettle of Charlestown.
 Mr. William Kettle of Charlestown.
 Mr. Gershom Keyes, *Merchant* (for Six)
 Mr. Dudson Kilcup
 Mr. Jonathan Kimbal of Wenham.
 Mr. Constant King, of Long Island (for Three)
 Mr. Eleazer Kingsbery of Needham (for Six)

Mr.

Mr. John Kneeland, *jun.*
Mr. Samuel Kneeland, *Printer.*

L

The Hon. Ezekiel Lewis, *Esq;* (*for Six*)
Capt. John Larrabee, *Lieutenant of Castle William.*
Dudley Leavitt, *Student at Harvard-College.*
Mr. Hezekiah Leavitt of Hingham.
Henry Lee of Worcester, *Esq;*
Mr. John Lee of Lime.
Joseph Lee, *M. A. Merchant.*
Joseph Lemmon of Charlestown, *Esq;*
Elkanah Leonard of Middleborough, *Esq;*
Mr. Zephaniah Leonard of Raynham (*for Six*)
Mr. Joseph Lewis.
The Rev. Mr. Daniel Lewis of Pembroke.
Josiah Lewis, *Student at Harvard College.*
The Rev. Mr. Isaiah Lewis of Eastham.
The Rev. Mr. Samuel Lewis of Colchester, (*for Six*)
Mr. Theophilus Lillie, *Merchant.*
Benjamin Lincoln of Hingham, *Esq;*
Mr. Ebenezer Lincoln of Hingham.
Mr. Benjamin Little of Newbury (*for Six*)
Mr. Thomas Livermore of Watertown.
Mr. Benjamin Lhommedieu of Long-Island.
Mr. Henry Lloyd, *Merchant.*
Solomon Lombard of Province-Town, *M. A.* (*for Six*)
The Rev. Mr. Benjamin Lord of Norwich (*for Six*)
Mr. Benjamin Loring of Hingham.
Caleb Loring of Hull, *Esq;*
Mr. Daniel Loring.
Mr. John Loring of Hull.
Mr. Jonathan Loring (*for Two*)
The Rev. Mr. Israel Loring of Sudbury.
Mr. Nathanael Loring, *jun. Merchant.*
Mr. William Lorkin of Liecester. (*for Six*)
Mr. Joseph Lovett of Chelmsford.
Mr. Michael Lowell.
Mr. Peter Luce, *Merchant.*
Joseph Lunt, *Student at Harvard College.*
Mr. Edward Lutwyche.

Byfield Lyde, *Esq;* (*for Two*)

Capt. Caleb Lyman.

Benjamin Lynde, *jun. of Salem, Esq;* (*for Six*)

M

The Hon. Jeremiah Moulton of York, *Esq;*

Thaddeus Maccarty, *Student at Harvard College.*

Capt. Joseph Majory of Marblehead, *Merchant.*

Capt. James Manson of Kittery (*for Four*)

Mr John Manson.

Mr. Samuel Manson of Portsmouth, (*for Four*)

The Rev. Mr. Edmund March of Almsbury, (*for Three*)

Thomas Marsh of Hingham, *M. A.*

* Mr. John Marshall of Braintree.

Mr. John Marshall, *Merchant,* (*for Six*)

Israel Marshfield of Springfield, *Esq;*

Mr. David Mason.

Thaddeus Mason of Charlestown, *M. A.*

The Rev. Mr. Samuel Mather, (*for Three*)

Mr John Maverick, (*for Six*)

The Rev. Mr. Experience Mayhew of Chilmark, (*for Six*)

Joseph Mayhew *M. A.*

John Maylem, *M. A.* (*for Three*)

Mr. John Mead of Southborough.

The Rev. Mr. Andrew Le'Mercier, (*for Two*)

The Rev. Mr. Henry Messenger of Wrentham, (*for Two*)

Mr. Eliezer Metcalfe of Providence, (*for Six*)

John Metcalfe of Dedham, *Esq;*

Mr. Jonathan Metcalfe of Lebanon, (*for Six*)

Mr. Alexander Middleton, *Merchant,* (*for Two*)

Mr. Richard Miller of Charlestown.

Mr. George Minot, *Merchant.*

Mr. James Minot, *Merchant.*

Mr. Thomas Moffatt.

The Rev. Mr. Samuel Moody of York.

Ebenezer Morse, *Student at Harvard College.*

* *The Rev.* Mr. Joseph Morse of Stoughton.

The Rev. Mr. Samuel Moseley of Windham,

Mr. Ephraim Mower.

Richard Mower, *Student at Harvard College.*

N

Mr Nathanael Newell.

John Newman, *Student at Harvard College.*

Israel Nichols, *M. A.*

Mr William Nichols.
Belcher Noyes, *M. A.*
Cornelius Nye, *M. A.*

O

The Hon. John Osborne, *Esq;*
* *The Rev.* Mr. Josiah Oakes of Eastham, (*for Six*)
Woodbridge Odlin, *Student at Harvard College.*
Andrew Oliver, *M. A. Merchant.*
Mr. Brattle Oliver, *Merchant.*
Nathanael Oliver, *jun. M. A. (for Three.)*
Peter Oliver, *M. A. Merchant (for Six)*
The Rev. Mr. John Owen of Groton in Connecticut.
Mr. William Owen (*for Six*)
Mr. Thomas Oxnard, *Merchant.*

P

The Hon. Thomas Palmer, *Esq;* (*for Two.*)
The Hon. William Pepperrel, of Kittery, *Esq;*
The Hon. John Peagram, *Esq;* *Surveyor General of*
Majesty's Customs in North America, (for Six)
Mr. Christopher Paige of Billerica.
The Rev. Mr. Thomas Paine.
Job Palmer, *Student at Harvard College*
Samuel Palmer, of Middleborough. *M. A.*
Mr. Ebenezer Papillion.
Mr. John Parker, *Bookseller (for Six)*
The Rev. Mr. Jonathan Parker of Plimpton.
Mr. Isaac Parker of Charlestown.
Mr. William Parker, *jun of Portsmouth.*
The Rev. Mr. Ebenezer Parkman of Westborough.
Elias Parkman, *jun. Student at Harvard College.*
Mr. William Parkman, (*for Six*)
The Rev. Mr. Joseph Parsons of Bradford,
Mr. Joseph Parsons.
Richard Patteshall, *B. A.*
Mr. John Payne.
* *The Rev.* Mr. Edward Payson of Rowley, (*for Six*)
Mr. Joseph Payson.
The Rev. Mr. Oliver Peabody, of Natick, (*for Two*)
Capt. Daniel Pecker, (*for Six*)
* Capt. James Pecker, (*for Two*)
Josiah Peirce, *B. A.*
Mr. Moses Peirce.

- Capt. Edward Pell.
 Benjamin Pemberton, *Esq;*
The Rev. Mr. Ebenezer Pemberton, of New-York.
 Mr. Joshua Penhallow, of Portsmouth, (*for Two*)
 Mr. James Penniman.
The Rev. Mr. Daniel Perkins, of Bridgwater.
 Mr. John Perkins, *Physician*.
 Mr. Eleazer Phillips, of Charlestown, *Bookseller* (*for Twelve*)
 * Henry Phillips of Charlestown, *Esq;*
 Mr. John Phillips, (*for Six*)
 Mr. Nicholas Phillips *jun.* of Weymouth.
The Rev. Mr. Samuel Phillips of Andover, (*for Six*)
The Rev. Mr. Theophilus Pickering of Ipswich.
 Mr. Joseph Pitkin of Hartford, (*for Three*)
 James Pitts, *M. A. Merchant*.
 Mr. Thomas Plaisted, *jun.*
 Mr. Benjamin Pratt of Hingham.
The Rev. Mr. John Prentice of Lancaster.
 Joshua Prentice, *Student at Harvard College*, (*for Two*)
The Rev. Mr. Solomon Prentice of Grafton.
 Benjamin Prescott of Groton, *Esq;*
 Mr. William Price.
 Mr. James Prince of Salem.
 Capt. Joseph Prince of Boston.
 Capt. Joseph Prince of Stratford.
 Capt. Moses Prince (*for Two*)
 Nathan Prince, *M. A. Fellow of Harvard College*.
 Mr. John Procter.
 Mr. Nathanael Procter, *Bookseller* (*for Six*)
 Joseph Pynchon, *M. A.*
 Mr. William Pynchon of Springfield (*for Six*)
 William Pynchon, *jun.* of Springfield, *Esq;*

Q

The Hon. Edmund Quincy of Braintree, *Esq;*
The Hon. John Quincy of Braintree, *Esq;* *Speaker of the*
Honourable House of Representatives.

R

- The Hon.* Jonathan Remington of Cambridge, *Esq;*
 Mr William Rand, *Apothecary* (*for Six*)
 Solomon Reed, *Student at Harvard College*.
 Mr. John Rice of Sudbury.
 Mr. Phinehas Rice

- David Robinson, *Student at Harvard College.*
The Rev. Mr. John Robinson of Duxbury (for Six)
 Matthew Rockwell of Windsor, *M. A.*
 Daniel Rogers, *M. A. Fellow of Harvard College.*
 Mr. Gamaliel Rogers, *Printer.*
 Mr. George Rogers, *Merchant (for Six)*
The Rev. Mr. John Rogers of Ipswich.
The Rev. Mr. Nathanael Rogers of Ipswich.
The Rev. Mr. Ebenezer Rossiter of Stonington.
 Mr. William Rorch of Province-Town (for Six)
 David Rowland of Fairfield, *M. A.*
 Jacob Royal, *Esq;*
 John Ruck, *Esq;*
 Mr. Benjamin Russell.
 Chambers Russell of Charlestown, *M. A.*
 Daniel Russell of Charlestown, *Esq;*
 Capt. Giles Russell of Marblehead, *Merchant.*
 Mr. Joseph Ruffet.
 Mr. Thomas Russell.
 Mr. William Russell of Middletown (for Two)

S

- The Hon. Anthony Stoddard, Esq;*
The Rev. Joseph Sewall, D. D.
 Nathanael Sartle of Groton, *Esq;*
 Mr. John Savell.
 Mr. Jonathan Sayward of York.
 Mr. John Scollay.
 Mr. Joseph Scott.
The Rev. Mr. John Seccombe of Harvard.
 Mr Simmons Seccombe (for Three)
 * Mr. Jonathan Sewall.
 Samuel Sewall, *Esq;* (for Six)
 Stephen Sewall, *M. A. Fellow of Harvard College.*
 Capt. Edward Sheaf of Charlestown.
 Mr. Joseph Sherburn, *jun.*
 William Shirley, *Esq;*
The Rev. Mr. William Shurtleff of Portsmouth.
 Mr. John Simpson.
 Mr. John Simpson (for Two)
 Mr. Jonathan Simpson.
 Mr. Jonathan Simpson, *jun.*
 Thomas Skinner of Charlestown, *M. A.*

- The Rev.* Mr. William Smith of Weymouth.
The Rev. Mr. Samuel Spear of Province-Town.
 John Sprague *Student at Harvard College*;
 Mr. William Spring of Newton.
 Mr. Samuel Stacey of Marblehead.
 Mr. John Staniford.
 Mr. Jonathan Stebbens of Springfield.
 Capt. John Steel, *Merchant*.
 Samuel Steel, *Student at Yale College*.
 Ebenezer Stevens of Kingston, *Esq*;
The Rev. Mr. Nathanael Stone of Harwich, (*for Two*)
 Mr. Samuel Stone of Sudbury.
 Mr. Ebenezer Storer.
The Rev. Mr. Seth Storer of Watertown.
 Mr. Samuel Sturgis of Fairfield (*for Three*)
 Mr. Samuel Sturgis of Yarmouth, *M. A.*
 Mr. Richard Sutton of Charlestown.
 Seth Sweetser, of Charlestown. *M. A.*
 Mr. Benjamin Swetland of New-London (*for Three*)
 Mr Benjamin Swett of Hartford (*for Six*)
 Mr. John Symmes.
 Mr. Thomas Symmes of Charlestown.

T

- The Hon.* Samuel Thaxter of Hingham, *Esq*;
The Rev. Mr. John Taylor of Milton.
 Mr. Gershom Tenney.
 Mr. Josiah Thatcher of Norwalk.
 Oxenbridge Thacher, *M. A.*
The Rev. Mr. Peter Thacher.
The Rev. Mr. Peter Thacher of Middleborough;
 Peter Thacher, *jun. Student at Harvard College*.
 Mr. Cornelius Thayer.
 * *The Rev.* Mr. Ebenezer Thayer of Roxbury.
 Mr. Nathanael Thayer.
 Mr. John Thorold of Newbury.
 Mr. Nathanael Thwing
 Thomas Tilestone of Dorchester, *Esq*;
 Mr. John Trail, *Merchant*.
 Mr. James Trumbal of Charlestown.
 Mr. Samuel Trumbal, of Charlestown.
 Mr. Samuel Tompson of Braintree.
 Mr. John Torrey of Weymouth.

The Rev. Mr. Jonathan Townsend of Needham.

Mr. Solomon Townsend.

Solomon Townsend, jun. *A. B.* (for Two)

The Rev. Mr. John Tufts of Newbury (for Six)

Mr. Andrew Tyler, *Goldsmith,* (for Three)

Thomas Tyler, *M. A.* (for Six)

Mr. Samuel Tyley.

V

Mr. Hugh Vans, *Merchant.*

Mr. Elijah Vinal.

John Vinton of Stoneham, *Esq;*

Capt. Nathanael Voie of Milton.

W

The Hon. Isaac Winslow of Marshfield, Esq (for Twelve)

The Hon. Adam Winthrop, Esq;

The Hon. Josiah Willard, Esq, Secretary of the Massachusetts

The Hon. Jacob Wendell, Esq;

The Hon. Samuel Welles, Esq;

The Hon. Joseph Wilder of Lancaster, Esq;

*The Rev. Edward Wigglesworth, D. D. Hollisian Professor
of Divinity, at Harvard College.*

The Rev. Mr. Daniel Wadsworth of Hartford.

John Wainwright of Ipswich, *Esq;*

Mr. Cornelius Waldo, *Merchant.*

Mr. Isaac Walker, *Merchant,* (for Six)

John Walley, *Esq;*

The Rev. Mr. Nehemiah Walter of Roxbury (for Two)

John Walton of Providence, *M. A.*

* *The Rev. Mr. Robert Ward of Wenham.*

Thomas Ward of Newport, *M. A.*

* Mr. Thomas Ward of Charlestown.

Mr. Elihu Wardall.

Mr. Benjamin Ware of Wrentham, *Physician.*

Jonathan Ware of Wrentham, *Esq;*

Mr. William Warner.

Peter Warren, *Esq;* *Commander of his Majesty's Ship Squirrel
(for Two)*

Samuel Watts, *Esq;*

The Rev. Mr. Benjamin Webb of Eastham (for Three)

The Rev. Mr. John Webb.

Mr. Joseph Webb (for Six)

The Rev. Mr. Nathan Webb

- Mr. Samuel Webb of Charlestown.
 Mr. Samuel Webb of Newport.
 Mr. John Welch.
 Mr. Jonathan Welch.
 Francis Wells of Cambridge, *Esq.*
 The Rev. Mr. William Welstead.
 Mr. John Wendell jun. Merchant.
 Mr. Samuel Weston of Duxbury.
 Jeremiah Wheelwright, *B. A.*
 Mr. John Wheelwright, Merchant.
 Mr. William Whipple of Kittery, Merchant (for Two)
 Ebenezer White, *M. A.*
 The Rev. Mr. John White of Gloucester.
 Mr. Josiah White of Lancaster.
 * Mr. Samuel White, Merchant. (for Two)
 Oliver Whiting of Billerica, *Esq.*
 The Rev. Mr. Samuel Whitman of Farmington.
 Ezra Whitmarsh of Weymouth, *M. A.*
 Mr. Jonathan Whitney of Wrentham (for Twenty Four)
 The Rev. Mr. Samuel Wigglesworth of Ipswich (for Two)
 John Wight of Bristol, *M. A.*
 Mr. James Wilder of Lancaster.
 The Rev. Mr. Ebenezer Williams of Pomfret (for Two)
 The Rev. Mr. Eleazer Williams of Mansfield (for Six)
 The Rev. Mr. Elisha Williams, Rector of Yale College in
 New-Haven.
 * The Rev. Mr. John Williams of Deerfield (for Six)
 The Rev. Mr. Nathanael Williams (for Three)
 Mr. Sendall Williams.
 The Rev. Mr. Solomon Williams of Lebanon (for Six)
 The Rev. Mr. Stephen Williams of Springfield.
 The Rev. Mr. Warham Williams of Watertown.
 The Rev. Mr. William Williams of Harfield.
 The Rev. Mr. William Williams of Weston.
 William Williams, *M. A.* (for Twelve)
 Mr. Ephraim Wilson, jun. of Dedham.
 Mr. Henry Wilson of Roxbury.
 Edward Winslow, *Esq.*, Sheriff of Suffolk (for Six)
 Joshua Winslow, *Esq.*; (for Three)
 The Rev. Mr. Jeremiah Wise of Berwick.
 Peleg Wiswall, *M. A.* Master of the North Grammar School.
 Daniel Witham, *M. A.*

Mr. Alexander Wolcott of New-Haven (*for Six*)
 John Wood of Dover, *M. A.* (*for Six*)
The Rev. Mr. Ashbel Woodbridge of Glastenbury (*for Six*)
 Benjamin Woods of Marlborough, *Esq.* (*for Six*)
 Mr. Hezekiah Wright of Northampton.
 Mr. James Wright (*for Six*)
 Capt. William Wyer of Charlestown, *Merchant.*

Y

Mr. William Young.

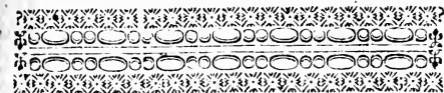
SUBSCRIPTIONS receiv'd since the former Part of the
 List was Printed.

MR. Joseph Bean of Cambridge.
 Mr. Ephraim Breed of Charlestown.
 Mr. Michael Bridgen of Charlestown.
 Mr. Samuel Burr of Charlestown.
 Mr. Caleb Call of Charlestown.
 Mr. John Codman of Charlestown.
 Mr. Daniel Collings of Charlestown.
 Mr. Daniel Cooke of Newton.
 Samuel Dummer, of Wilmington, *Esq.*
 Mr. Peter Edes of Charlestown.
 Capt. Alexander Forsyth, *Merchant.*
 Mr. Daniel Fowle, *Printer.*
 Mr. Joseph Frost of Charlestown.
 Mr. Joseph Hopkins of Charlestown.

OUR Subscription being begun in 1728, and several
 the Subscribers being since deceased, who are mark'd
 with a [*] This may notify the Relatives of such deceas'd
 Persons, that if they incline to take up the Books subscrib'd
 for, they may do it, provided they come or send for
 them in a short time.

AND seeing some Gentlemen's Names in the List hap-
 pen to be printed without their proper Additions, and fear-
 ing it may be so with others, we crave Pardon for such
 Omissions.

THE



T H E
INTRODUCTION.

AS an *Introduction* to the NEW-ENG-
LAND *Chronology*, it may be grate-
ful to many Readers, to see the *Age*
of the *World* when *This Part* of the
Earth came to be known to the *Others*;
and the *Line of Time*, with the Suc-
cession of the Principal Persons, Events and Trans-
actions, which had been running on from the *Cre-
ation* to the *Settlement of this Country* by a Colony from
ENGLAND. And this I shall briefly show under
the *following Articles*: which seem to me, the most
clear and natural Heads, or *successive PERIODS*
of *Chronology*; Especially for an *English Reader*.

- I. The *Scripture* PATRIARCHS.
- II. The JUDGES of *Israhel*.
- III. The KINGS of *Judah*.
- IV. The *Babylonian, Persian, Grecian* and *Egyptian* KINGS.
- V. The *Roman* and *Greek* EMPERORS.
- VI. The KINGS of *England*.
 1. From EGBERT the 1st King of *England*, to the 1st. *Discovery* of the *New World* by CHRISTOPHER COLUMBUS.
 2. From thence to the *Arrival* of the FIRST PLANTERS of *Plimouth* in *New England*.

And that I may crowd the more Matter in a little Room; I shall make use of the following Plain and Easy Characters, For Words and Sentences that may very frequently occur in this Composure.

As,

- Y. Stands for - YEAR.
- Y L. for - Year of LIFE.
- Y R. for - Year of RULE or REIGN.
- Y W. for - Year of the WORLD: i.e. from the CREATION of the WORLD.
- Y C. for - Year of CHRIST: i.e. from the BIRTH of CHRIST.
- b. for - at the BEGINNING of the Year either a little before or after.
- e. for - at the END of the Year, either a little before or after.
- m. for - MONTH.
- d. for - DAY.
- K. for - KING.

And the Years are supposed to be *Solar*, and nearly compleat, i.e. either a little more or less; and to Begin at the *Spring*.

I. Period.

THE Chronology of the Scripture PATRIARCHS.
in a continued Line, From the Creation of ADAM
to the Death of MOSES; containing nearly 2553 com-
pleat Years.

Tho' the Year of the World 1656, is Generally reckon'd to be the Year of NOAH'S FLOOD; Yet taking the *Years of the Patriarchs* for *Full Years* or thereabouts, i. e. either a little over or under, sometimes one and sometimes the other, and so compleat in the whole, as *Helvicus, Petavius, Usher* and most *Chronologers* seem to allow; I think 'tis very Plain, that as ADAM liv'd 130 Years before SETH was Born, and ADAM was not 130 till the *Beginning* of the Year of the World 131, so SETH was Born at the *Beginning* of the same Year; and so of the other Patriarchs: which will therefore unavoidably bring the *Beginning* of the FLOOD to the *Beginning* of the Year of the World 1657. And to this agree the Learned *Funcius, Bucholzer, Scaliger, Reusner, Calvisius, Willet, Alsted, & Swan;* who therefore seem in this *Computation* to be most accurate. And tho', From *Gen. XI. 26.* many *Moderns* and all the *Ancient Chronologers*, even down to *BEROALDUS* a Professor of *Geneva*, have set the *Birth* of ABRAHAM at the 70 Year of TERAH; and the *Samaritan Version* in *Gen. XI. 32.* makes TERAH to live no longer than 145, and so to have Died when ABRAHAM was but 75: Yet inasmuch as the *Hebrews*, with all the *other ancient Versions* * and *Josephus* also, make TERAH to live 205; and as ABRAHAM at 75 Remov'd from *Uran*, *Gen. XII. 4.* and *Stephen* tells us that this was after his *Fathers Death*, *Acts VII. 4;* therefore *BEROALDUS* seem'd rightly to have set the *Birth* of ABRAHAM at the 130 Year of TERAH: and has drawn the following *Train* of celebrated *Writers* after Him --- *Calvinus, P. Martyr, Musculus, Junius Pareus, Scharpius, Capelli Tres, Diodati, Rivetus, Broughton, More, Willet, Ainsworth, Lightfoot, Usher, Richardson, Swan, Allen, Cary, Whiston, Lloyd, Marshal, Dr. Prideaux,* and others, whom we chuse to follow for *further Reasons* which our *design'd Brevity* will not allow us here to mention.

ADAM

* See *Bib. Polyglot.*

N ^o	Birth		Decease	
	First Y L	Y W	Last Y L	
1	ADAM	1 b		I m, 6 d, Adam CREATED
2	Seth	131 b		Adam Aged 130, Seth is Born
3	Enos	236 b		Seth Aged 105, Enos is Born
4	Cainan	326 b		Enos Aged 90, Cainan is Born
5	Mahalaleel	396 b		Cainan 70, Mahalaleel Born
6	Jared	461 b		Mahalaleel 65, Jared Born
7	Enoch	623 b		Jared 162, Enoch Born
8	Methufelah	688 b		Enoch 65, Methufelah Born
9	Lamech	875 b		Methufelah 187, Lamech Born
		930 e	Adam	Adam Dies, Aged 930
		987 e	Enoch	Enoch TRANSLATED
				Aged 365.
10	Noah	1042 e	Seth	Seth Dies, Aged 912.
		57 b		Lamech 182, Noah Born (a)
		140 e	Enos	Enos Dies, Aged 905.
		235 e	Cainan	Cainan Dies, Aged 910.
		290 e	Mahalaleel	Mahalaleel Dies, Aged 895.
		422 e	Jared	Jared Dies, Aged 962.
11	Shem	559 b		Noah 502, Shem Born.
		651 e	Lamech	Lamech Dies, Aged 777.
		656 e	Methufelah	Methufelah Dies, Aged 969.
		657 b		II m, 17 d, FLOOD Begins
				little before Noah's 600
				Ends (b)
		658 b		II m, 27 d, FLOOD Ends
				& Noah goes out of the Ark
12	Arphaxad	659 b		Shem 100, Arphaxad Born.
13	Salah	694 b		Arphaxad 35, Salah Born.
14	Eber	724 b		Salah 30, Eber Born.
15	Peleg	758 b		Eber 34, Peleg Born.
16	Reu	788 b		Peleg 30, Reu Born.
17	Serug	820 b		Reu 32, Serug Born.
18	Nahor	850 b		Serug 30, Nahor Born.
19	Terah	879 b		Nahor 29, Terah Born.
		996 e	Peleg	Peleg Dies, Aged 239.

Nahor

(a) By Gen. VII. 6, 11, & VIII. 13, 14, It seems that Noah was not Born till the III m of this Y.

(b) According to the Note above, and the Preface to this Period,

N ^o	Birth		Decease	
	First Y L	Y W	Last Y L	
20	Abraham	1997 ^e	Nahor	Nahor Dies, Aged 148.
		2006 ^e	Noah	Noah Dies, Aged 950.
		9 ^b		Terah 130, Abraham Born.
		26 ^e	Reu	Reu Dies, Aged 239
		49 ^e	Serug	Serug Dies, Aged 230.
		83 ^e	Terah	Terah Dies, Aged 205.
		84 ^b		In Abib, 15 d, Abraham being 75, and Receiving the PROMISE, Goes out of Haran for Canaan.
21	Isaac	96 ^e	Arphaxad	Arphaxad Dies, Aged 433.
		109 ^b		Abraham 100, Isaac Born.
		126 ^e	Salah	Salah Dies, Aged 433.
22	Jacob	158 ^e	Shem	Shem Dies, Aged 600.
		169 ^b		Isaac 60, Jacob Born.
		183 ^e	Abraham	Abraham Dies, Aged 175.
23	Levi	187 ^e	Eber	Eber Dies, Aged 464.
		256 ^b		Jacob 87, Levi Born.
		288 ^e	Isaac	Isaac Dies, Aged 180.
24	Kohath	290 ^b		Levi 34, Kohath Born (c)
		299 ^b		Jacob 130, Goes into Egypt
		315 ^e	Jacob	Jacob Dies, Aged 147.
		364 ^b		Kohath 74, Amram Born (d)
25	Amram	392 ^e	Levi	Levi Dies, Aged 137.
		422 ^e	Kohath	Kohath Dies, Aged 133.
		434 ^b		Amram 70, Moses Born (e)
26	Moses	500 ^e	Amram	Amram Dies, Aged 137
		514 ^b		In Abib, 15 d, the 430 Y of Bondage Ends; and Moses 80, Begins to lead the Israelites out of Egypt.
				XII m, 1 d, Moses Dies, Aged 120 & Joshua of Ephraim succeeds Him as Ruler of Israel.
		553 ^e	Moses	

II. Period.

(c) Helvicus out of Epiphanius.

(d) Helvicus again out of Epiphanius.

(e) Helvicus out of Nicephorus & Eusebius.

II. Period.

THE Chronology of the *JUDGES* of Israel, From the Death of *MOSES* to the Death of *SAMUEL* and *SAUL*: Containing about 396 compleat Years.

By 1 Kings VI. 1. and 2 Chron. III. 1, 2. compar'd with Numb. XXXIII. 3. It appears there were 479 Years and 17 Days compleat, From the coming out of *EGYPT*, to the Founding of *SOLOMON'S TEMPLE*: whereof 39 Years, 10 Months and the odd 17 Days may be assign'd to *MOSES*; 40 Years to *DAVID*; and 3 Years, 2 Months, to *SOLOMON*; 83 Years, 17 Days, in all. But the remaining 396 Years, being attended with many Difficulties; there have been various Schemes proposed by Learned Men for their Solution: And perhaps the last, devised by Sir *John Marsham*, and follow'd by *Whiston*, *Lloyd* and *Marshal*, may be the best; who suppose the Years of several both of the Oppressions and Judges, to be Contemporany. However, I shall here lay down the PRESIDENCY of the several Judges in a Successive order, according to the Years assign'd them in the Sacred Records, inclusive of the several Oppressions as happening in their Times; and as supposed by *Scharpius*, *Alsted*, *Baylly*, *Broughton*, *Lightfoot*, *Swan*, and *Allen*; as also *Junius*, *Pantaleon*, *More*, *Perkins*, *Helvicus*,* *Isaacson* & *Tallents* only that the latter, supposing it to be 480 Years compleat and 17 Days, From the coming out of *EGYPT* to the Founding of the TEMPLE, make *JOSHUA'S* Rule to be 18 Years whereas the other more exactly make it but about 17, as follows

N.	Judges Y R	Tribes	Y W
1	Joshua. 1 17	Ephraim.	2554 b Joshua Begins to Rule. I. m Abib, 10 d, He leads the Israelites thro' Jordan into Canaan.
2	Othniel. 1 40	Judab.	570 e He Dies, Aged 110. 571 b Othniel Begins to Rule. 610 e He Dies

Ebn

* i. e. One of the Two different Schemes in *Helvicus*.

N	Judges.YR	Tribes	Y W	
3	Ehud. 1	<i>Benjamin</i>	2611 b	Ehud Begins to Rule.
4	Shamgar (b) 80		690 e	(a) Shamgar Dies.
5	Deborah 1		691 b	Deborah Begins to Rule.
6	& Barak (d) 40	<i>Naphtali</i>	730 e	(c) They Die (i.e. the last Survivor)
7	Gideon. 1	<i>Manasseh</i>	731 b	Gideon Begins to Rule.
	40		770 e	He Dies.
(8)	Abimelech 1	<i>Manasseh</i>	771 b	Abimelech made King.
	5		773 e	He is Killed.
9	Tola. 1	<i>Issachar</i>	774 b	Tola Begins to Rule.
	23		796 e	He Dies
10	Jair. 1	<i>Manasseh</i>	797 b	Jair Begins to Rule.
	22		818 e	He Dies.
11	Jephtha. 1	<i>Manasseh</i>	819 b	Jephtha Begins to Rule.
	6		824 e	He Dies.
12	Ibsan. 1	<i>Judah</i>	825 b	Ibsan Begins to Rule.
	7		831 e	He Dies.
13	Elon. 1	<i>Zebulon</i>	832 b	Elon Begins to Rule.
	10		841 e	He Dies.
14	Abdon. 1	<i>Ephraim</i>	842 b	Abdon Begins to Rule.
	8		849 e	He Dies.
15	Sampson. 1	<i>Dan</i>	850 b	Sampson Begins to Rule.
	20		869 e	He Dies.
16	Eli. 1	<i>Levi</i>	870 b	Eli a Priest, Begins to Rule.
	40		909 e	He Dies, Aged 93.
17	Samuel. 1	<i>Levi</i>	910 b	Samuel Begins to Rule.
	30		939 e	His Solitary Rule Ends.
(18)	Saul. 1	<i>Benjamin</i>	930 b	Saul made King. } (e)
	10		949 e	Samuel & Saul Die (f) & David, of the Tribe of Judah suc- ceeds K Saul, as K of Judah.

III Period

(a) 'Tis uncertain when *Ehud* Died & *Shamgar* began to Rule.(b) i. c. 80 Years From the beginning of *Ehud's* Rule.(c) 'Tis uncertain when *Barak* began to Rule, or *who* out-lived.(d) i. c. 40 Years, From the beginning of *Deborah's* Rule.(e) *Helvicus*, out of *Cedrenus*, says that *Saul* was made K, 10 Years before *David*.(f) *Broughton*, out of *Sedar Olam*, says, that *Samuel* & *Saul* Died the same Year, i. c. *Samuel* at the Beginning, and *Saul* at the End.

III. Period.

THE Chronology of the **KINGS** of Judah in a *Linear Succession*, From the Beginning of the Reign of **DAVID**, to the End of **ZEDEKIAH's**: Containing about 467 Compleat Years.

The precise Adjustment of the Years of this Period with the Reigns of the several **KINGS** of Judah and Israel, is encumber'd with so many great Perplexities, as have exercis'd the Wits of the most Sagacious Men as much as any other Part of Scripture Chronology. Whether Mr. *Whiston's* surprizing Hypothesis may be allow'd with safety, who solves them by supposing, that *Jeroboam* Diminished the Year for the Obsequance of the 10 Tribes, by 1 Month, while the Kings of Judah kept to the former Computation; I may not venture to determine. But among all the Systems I have met with, *Bishop USHER's* seems the clearest; which *Swan, Whiston, Lloy-Marshal* and *Dr. Prideaux* almost intirely follow; and which is nearly the same with *Petavius's*, lately followed by *Le Clerc* and *Perizonius*. And here I must observe upon a strict Examination, that *Bp USHER's English Annals* being Printed after his Decease, have many Errors of the Press in Figures, whereas his *Latin Annals* being Published in London while He was Living there, and no doubt Corrected by Himself, do very rarely need Amendment. But whereas that Learned Writer Begins the Y of the Creation at the FALL, and we rather chuse to follow Those who raise it to the SPRING before in the same Y of the Julian Period 710; It therefore happens that our Numbers of the Mundane *Æra* assign'd to the same Events which came to pass in the Spring and Summer are more by 1 than His, both in this and the other Periods, tho' those Events which happened in the Fall and Winter will co-alesce in the same Y of the World as His; with this only Difference, that they are in the Former Part of His Y, but in the Latter of Ours.

No.	Y. W.	Y R. Kings	
1	2950 b	1 David	Begins to Reign over <i>Judab</i> , 7 Y
	957 b	8	He Begins to Reign over all <i>Isra- rael</i> , 33 Y.
	989 e	40	He Relinquishes the Kingdom to his Younger Son <i>Solomon</i> .
2	990 b	1 Solomon	Begins to Reign: and <i>David</i> Dies 6 Months after.
	993 b	4	II m, <i>Ziph</i> , 2 d, the TEMPLE Founded.
	3000	11	VIII m, <i>Bull</i> , the TEMPLE Finished.
	I	12	VII m, <i>Ethanim</i> , in the 1st Y of the III Millenary of the World, and at the Opening of the 9th <i>Jubile</i> , the TEMPLE Dedi- cated. (a)
	29 e	40	<i>Solomon</i> Dies. And his Son
3	306 b	1 Rehoboam	Begins to Reign, and 10 Tribes fall off to <i>Jeroboam</i> .
	46 e	17	<i>Rehoboam</i> Dies. And his Son
4	47 b	1 Abijam	Begins to Reign, 3 Years.
	49 e	3	He Dies. And his Son
5	50 b	1 Afa	Begins to Reign, 41 Years.
	90 e	41	He Dies. And his Son
6	91 b	1 Jehosaphat	Begins to Reign, 25 Years.
	101	11	<i>Homer</i> Born, 420 Year before <i>Herodotus</i> . *
	108 b	18	<i>Jehosaphat</i> Going against the <i>Syrians</i> , makes his Son <i>Jehoram</i> Vice-Roy.
7	112 b	22. 1 Je horam	Made Copartner in the Kingdom, upon <i>Jehosaphat</i> 's going against <i>Moab</i> .
	115 e	25. 4	<i>Jehosaphat</i> Dies. And his Son <i>Jehoram</i>

(a) In the Y of the Julian Period 3710: & before the Real Birth of CHRIST 1000; but according to the Common Account 1004.

* So say *Herodotus* Himself: and agreeably Sir I. Newton 1 ys, that both *Hesiod* & *Homer* Flourish'd 870 Y before the Christian Era, which Bp *Usher* sets in the Y W 3135.

N	Y	W	Y R. Kings	
	3116	b	5	<i>Jehoram</i> Reigns alone, 4 Ye more.
	119	e	8	He Dies. And his Son
8	120	b	1 Ahaziah	Reigns 1 Year, and is slain <i>Jehu</i> .
(9)	121	b	1 (<i>Athaliah</i>)	<i>Athaliah's</i> Mother Begins to Rei 6 Years.
	126	e	6	She is slain by <i>Jehoiada</i> . And
10	127	b	1 Jehoash	Son to <i>Athaliah</i> , Begins to Rei 40 Years.
	166	s	40	He is Killed. And his Son
11	166	c	1 Amaziah	Begins to Reign, 29 Y.
	194	e	29	He is Killed. And his Son
12	195	b	1 Uzziah	Begins to Reign, 52 Y.
	229		35	July, 43 * the 1st OLYMPIAD Restor'd by <i>Iphitus</i> , when <i>Var- ro's</i> Historical Age Begins. (b)
	246	e	52	<i>Uzziah</i> Dies. And his Son
13	247	b	1 Jotham	Begins to Reign, 16 Y.
	252	b	6	April 21 in the 3d Y of the VI Olympiad, ROME Founded by <i>Romulus</i> and <i>Remus</i> , according to <i>Varro</i> . (c)
	258	b	12	The Ancient <i>Assyrian</i> Empire, under <i>Sardanapalus</i> , destroy'd and parted by his Two Com- manders, <i>Tiglathpileser</i> of <i>Me- dia</i> , & <i>Nabonasser</i> of <i>Babylon</i> ; the

* So *Calvisius* & *Alsted*.

(b) An Olympiad contains the space of 4 Years, was commonly Celebrated at the 1st Full Moon after the Summer Solstice, & the 1st Olympiad Begins in the Y of the Julian Period, 3938, & before the Christian Era 776: so *Calvisius*, *Helvicus*, *Peravins*, *Usher*, *Swan*, *Cary*, *Newton*, &c.

(c) Approv'd by *Cicero*, *Pomponius Atticus*, *Augustus*, *Plutarch*, *Pliny*, *Paterculus*, &c. in the Y of the Julian Period, 3961, and before the Christian Era 753.

N. Y. W.	Y R Kings	
		the famous <i>ÆRA</i> of <i>Nabonasser</i> , now K of <i>Babylon</i> , Begins this Spring, on Feb. 26, at Noon, being then the 1st Day of the <i>Egyptian Y.</i> (d)
3262 e 16		<i>Yotham</i> Dies. And his Son
263 b 1	Ahaz	Begins to Reign, 16 Y.
278 b 16	Hezekiah	Son to <i>Ahaz</i> made Partner with Him in the Kingdom.
283 e 6		<i>Ahaz</i> Dies.
		<i>Sbalintansar</i> , K of <i>Assyria</i> , take <i>Samaria</i> , and carries the 10 Tribes into Captivity.
308 e 29		<i>Hezekiah</i> Dies. And his Son
307 b 1	Manasseh	Begins to Reign 55 Y.
324 e 18		<i>Esrubaddon</i> , or <i>Asnapper</i> , K of <i>Assyria</i> seizes <i>Babylon</i> , and adds it to his Empire. Feb. 9, at the e of this Y, being the 1st <i>Egyptian</i> New Year Day of his Reign.
361 e 55		<i>Manasseh</i> Dies. And his Son
362 b 1	Ammon	Begins to Reign, 2 Y.
363 e 2		He is Killed. And his Son
364 b 1	Josiah	Begins to Reign, 31 Y.
365 2		<i>Thales</i> , the Father of the Greek Astronomers, Born at <i>Miletus</i> , and lives 93 Y.
366 3		<i>Solon</i> Born in <i>Salamis</i> , and lives 80 Y. †

Nabo!

(U) In the b of the Y of the *Julian Period* 3967, & 747 before the *Vulgar Æra* of the Birth of *CHRIST*, by the Consent of all *Astronomers*. Whether He began to Reign before, seems uncertain: but this to be sure is the 1st *Egyptian* New Year Day of his Reign. *Ptolemy*.
 || According to *Ptolemy's* Mathematical Canon.
 † Str: *Newton* Places the Birth of *Solon* 10 Y. after.

N.	Y W	Y R. Kings	
	3379 ^e 16		<p><i>Nabopolassar</i> General to <i>Chynladanus</i> K of <i>Affyria</i> and <i>Chaldea</i> rebels against his Master, and makes Himself K of <i>Babylon</i> Jan. 27, at the e of this Y, being the 1st <i>Egyptian</i> New Year Day of his Reign. </p>
	595 ^b 3†		<p><i>Pharaoh-Necho</i> leading his Army out of <i>Egypt</i>, slays <i>Josiah</i> in Battle at <i>Megiddo</i>, & passes on to the <i>Euphrates</i>.</p>
19		<i>Jehoahaz</i>	<p><i>Josiah's</i> 2d Son, Reigns 3 Months <i>Necho</i> beats the <i>Babylonians</i>, takes <i>Carchemish</i>, returns through <i>Judea</i>, and carries <i>Jehoahaz</i> into <i>Egypt</i>.</p>
20		1. <i>Jchoiakim</i>	<p><i>Josiah's</i> Eldest Son, sometime this Summer Begins to Reign 11 Years.</p>
	598	3	<p>This Summer, <i>Nabopolassar</i> makes his Son NEBUCHADNEZZAR Partner in the Empire, and sets him at the Head of his Armies ‡ Whence the Scripture calls this the 1st Y of <i>Nebuchadnezzar</i>.</p>
		4	<p>Whereupon, <i>Nebuchadnezzar</i> beats <i>Necho's</i> Army at the <i>Euphrates</i>, retakes <i>Carchemish</i>, and marches to <i>Judea</i>.</p>
		4	<p>IX m. <i>Chislieu</i>, <i>Nebuchadnezzar</i> takes <i>Jerusalem</i>, and carries <i>Daniel</i> with a great many Others to <i>Babylon</i>: Whence the 70 Years of the <i>Jews</i> CAPTIVITY Begin.</p>

Nabo-

|| According to *Ptolemy*.‡ So *Berosus* in *Josephus*.

No	Y W	Y R. Kings	
3400	5		<i>Nabopolassar</i> Dyng this Summer, <i>Nebuchadnezzar</i> Begins to Reign alone, 43 Y. (c)
406 ^b	11		<i>Jehoiakim</i> taken by the <i>Chaldeans</i> and slain. Whereupon his Son Reigns 3 Months 10 Days: and then with <i>Ezekiel</i> is carried to <i>Babylon</i> , by <i>Nebuchadnezzar</i> , in the 8th Y of his Reign.
		Jecopias	
		I. Zedekiah	<i>Josiah's</i> 3d Son, succeeds in the Km: and this Y, <i>CYRUS</i> the <i>Persian</i> is Born.
417	11		IV m, 9 d, i. e. July 27, <i>Nebuchadnezzar's</i> Army breakes up <i>Jerusalem</i> : and <i>Zedekiah</i> taken, and carried to <i>Babylon</i> .
			V m, 7 d, i. e. Aug. 24, <i>Nebuzardan</i> enters <i>Jerusalem</i> ; and 10 d i. e. Aug. 27, sets the Temple and City on Fire, and breakes down the Walls &c.
			Which is in the Nineteenth Y of <i>Nebuchadnezzar's</i> Reign from his Heading the Army, and the Seventeenth from the First Egyptian New Year Day after his Father's Death: In the Year of the Julian Period 4126; and 588 before the Vulgar Christian Æra. <i>Usser</i> , <i>Prideaux</i> , <i>Newton</i> , &c.

IV. Period.

* Sometimes called *Coniah*, *Conias* and *Jehoiachin*.

(c) But Jan. 21, at the e of this Y, which is at the b of the Y of the Julian Period 4110, being the 1st Egyptian New Year Day of his Reign; *Ptolemy* therefore Begins his Reign from thence, according to his usual Method.

IV. Period.

THE Chronology of the Babylonian, Persian, Grecian and Egyptian MONARCHS successively, from the Destruction of the Kingdom of Judah by Nebuchadnezzar, to the Destruction of the Kingdom of Egypt by Octavius Cæsar: Containing exactly 558 Years.

Thus far the Hebrew and inspired Guides alone have led us in a continued Path from the CREATION. But the Succession of the Kings of Judah failing, we must now look to the Grecian Histories for the following Course of Time to the Beginning of the Roman Empire. And here the most knowing Enquirers have been in a perpetual strife till the Common Year of CHRIST 1613; When the famous MATHEMATICAL CANON of *Claudius Ptolemy* * was happily discovered in a Library in England. Which being founded on Astronomical Appearances and Calculations, drawn from the Records of the Chaldean and Egyptian Historians and Astronomers, was receiv'd with great Joy by the Learned World, and soon became the decisive Umpire among Chronologers, as agreeing with Scripture, with the best ancient History, and with Astronomy; to which they have therefore almost ever since appeal'd as to an uncontested Oracle. It begins with the Reign of NABONASSER K. of *Babylon*, on the 1st d at Noon of the 1st Egyptian m, called *Tboth*, † which then was Feb. 28 of the Julian Period 3967; accounts by Egyptian Years of 365 Days continually without Intercalations; reaches down thro' the Reigns of the Babylonian, Persian, Grecian, Egyptian and Roman Monarchs, to ANTONINUS PIUS, when *Ptolemy* flourished; and numbers the Years of their Reigns by the Number only of the *Tboths*, or rather Egyptian New Year Days included.

* He. was a Great Astronomer of Alexandria in Egypt.

† *Tboth* was the Egyptian Mercury: And as the 1st d of their Year were devoted to Him; both the d and the m were named from Him. Gregory.

Included in them. To this *Canon* therefore we keep invariably in the Present Period: Having carefully examin'd it in Greek and Latin both in *Calvisius* and *Petavius*, in Greek only in *Mr. Gregory*, and in Latin only in *Mr. Cary* and *Mr. Whiston*. I have observed several Errors in the 4 former Printed Copies, whereas the Table in *Mr. Whiston* seems to be free from any, except in the Column He adds of the *Years* of the *Julian Period*, which seem to be too many by 1 down from the b of the R of *Darius Hystaspis*, * and which I have here Corrected. But as we must reduce the *Egyptian Y* in this Ancient *Canon* to the present *Julian*; I shall from this time forward Begin the Y with the 1st of *January* thro'out our following *Chronology*.

No.	Y. W.	¹ <i>Egypt.</i> _{new} Y. D.	Y. R.	Monarchs
				I. BABYLONIAN Monarchs.
1	417		17.	Nebuchadnezzar VII m, His Governour <i>Gedaliab</i> Kill'd.
	421		21	<i>Nebuzaradan</i> carries the Rest of the <i>Jews</i> to <i>Babylon</i> .
	437			<i>Pythagoras</i> Born, and lives 80 Y. (1)
	443 b		43	<i>Nebuchadnezzar</i> Dies, & his Son <i>Evilmerodach</i> succeeds
	b			XII m, 25 d, i. e. April 15, <i>Jeconias</i> releas'd from Prison. (1)
2	444 b	Jan. 11	1	<i>Evilmerodach</i> Reigns 2 Y. (2)
	445		2	He is Kill'd by <i>Nericaßolaffer</i> , his Sister's Husband
3	446 b		10	<i>Nericaßolaffer</i> Reigns 4 Y.

He

* i. e. *Darius* the Son of *Hystaspes*.

(1) *Stanley*, who critically searches into this matter.

(1) *Jan, 11*, this Y is *Nebuchadnezzar's* 43 *Egypt New Y d*, and in the following Summer, the 37 Y of *Jeconias's* Captivity Ends: *Nebuchadnezzar* therefore Dies between *Jan, 11*, and *April 15* of this Y.

(2) This is the 1st *Egypt New Y d* of *Evilmerodach's* Reign: and so of the Rest.

N.	Y. W.	^{ist E. gyp} New Y. D.	Y. R. Monarchs	
	3449		4	He is Slain in Battl ^e by <i>Caxeres</i> (i. e. <i>Darius</i> (the Med ^e) & <i>Cyrus</i> . (3)
4	450 ^b		1	<i>Nabonadius</i> i. e. <i>Belsazzar</i> , Son to <i>Eumerodach</i> , Reigns 17 Y.
	466		17	<i>Babylon</i> taken, & <i>Belsazzar</i> slain.
				II. PERSIAN Monarchs.
5	467 ^l		1	<i>Cyrus</i> With his Uncle <i>Darius</i> Reign together 2 Y.
	468		2	<i>Darius</i> Dying, <i>CYRUS</i> Reigns 7 Y more.
			3	In this 1st Y, (4) He gives LIBERTY to the Jews to Return from their 70 ^y Captivity.
	475		9	He Dies. And his Son
6	476 ^l		1	<i>Cambyfes</i> Reigns 8 Y.
	483		8	He Kills his Brother <i>Smerdis</i> and Dies: and the Male Line of <i>Cyrus</i> ends, (5)
7	484 ^l		1	<i>Darius</i> <i>Hystaspis</i> made K by <i>Lociery</i> , & Reigns 36 Y.
	485			<i>Pindar</i> Born. (c.b)
	489 ^l		6	XII m, <i>Adar</i> , 3 ^d , the TEMPLE Finished.
	497			<i>Kings of Rome</i> Expell'd, and <i>Consuls</i> 1st Elected (c. & c.)
	513			<i>Zoroastres</i> appears at the Persian Court. (p)

(3) *Nericaßelasse's* Son *Laboroßarchod* Reigns 9 m, and then is Killed. But there being no *Egypt* New Y d in his R, the *Canon* Omits Him.

(4) Both the *Scripture* and *Xenophon* call this the 1st Y of *Cyrus*.

(5) For the Reason above, the *Canon* leaves out *Smerdis* a Countess's Son of *Cyrus*, who succeeded *Cambyfes* 7 m, and was then discover'd and Killed.

(c.b) *Calvisius* and *Helvius*.

(c. & c) *Calvisius*, *Helvius*, *Cary*, *Strauchius*, *Newton*, & c.

(p) *Dr. Prideaux*.

No	Y. W.	1st E. Y. D.	Y	R. Monarchs	
3515					The Persians invade Attica and are beat at Marathion. (u)
519					Darius Dies. And his Younger son
8	Dec. 23		1	Xerxes	by Atossa Daughter to Cyrus, Reigns 21 Y.
521					Herodotus Born (u)
525					Xerxes passes into Greece with 2 Million Men, & his vast Navy beat at the Straits of Salamis. (u)
534					Thucydides Born (u)
536					Socrates, Born, & Lives 70 Y.
540			21		Xerxes Kill'd. And his younger Son
9	17		1	Artaxerxes	Longimanus, Reigns 41 Y.
545					Democritus Born; and soon after, Hyppocrates (d)
547 ^b			7		[m, 1 d; Ezra being appointed to Restore the Religious State of Judea, sets out from Babylon.
					V m, 1 d, He Arrives at Jerusalem.
559 ^e					[X m, Chislien, Nehemial inform'd of the wretched state of Judea and Jerusalem.
560 ^b					[m, Nisan, He is appointed to Rebuild the City, and made Governour of Judea for 12 Y. (5)
569					Isocrates Born, & Lives 98 Y.

Meton

(u) Usher. (d) Diogenes Laertius.

(5) By Comparing the 2 last Articles it seems that Artaxerxes Began his Reign between Nisan & Chislien in Y W 3540.

N	Y W	15 th E ^{gypt} new Y. D.	Y. R. Monarchs	
	3573			Meton observes the <i>Summer Solstice</i> to be on <i>June 21</i> in the Morning, & Form the <i>Lunar Cycle</i> of 19 Y.
	574 ^b			This Spring, the <i>Peloponnesian War</i> Begins. (u)
	577			<i>Plato</i> Born, & Lives 80 Y.
	581			<i>Artaxerxes</i> Dies. (6) And his Bastard Son
IC		Dec. 7	1. <i>Darius</i>	<i>Nothus</i> , Reigns 19 Y
	600		19	He Dies. And his Son
II			2. <i>Artaxerxes</i>	<i>Mnemom</i> call'd <i>Arfaces</i> , R. 40 Y.
	604			At the Battle of <i>Cunaxa</i> , <i>Cteffas</i> taken Captive, & <i>Xenophon</i> Retreats to <i>Greece</i> . (u)
	621			<i>Aristotle</i> Born, and Lives 63 Y. (u)
	624			<i>Demosthenes</i> Born, and Lives 59 Y. (c)
	646		46	<i>Mnemom</i> Dies, aged 94. And his Son
		Nov. 21	1. <i>Ochus</i>	<i>Artaxerxes</i> , Reigns 21 Y.
	649			This Summer <i>Alexander</i> the Great Born (u)
	664			<i>Epicurus</i> Born, and Lives 72 Y. (d. c. u)
	667		21	<i>Ochus</i> Poyson'd. And his youngest Son
I			16	call'd <i>Arfes</i> , Reigns 2 Y.
	669		2	He is also Poyson'd, & the whole Race of <i>Mnemom</i> cut off. (7)

Codomannus

(6) His only lawful Son *Xerxes* Succeeded, but was quickly Kill'd and Succeeded by his Brother *Sogdian*, and He by his Brother *Nothus* but as the 2 former Reign'd but 8 Months, & had no *Egypt* New Year included; the *Canon* therefore leaves them both out.

(7) Tho' He had 3 Sons by his Queen, & 115 Sons by Concubines.

Y. W.	^{1st} ^{2nd} ^{3rd} ^{4th} ^{5th} ^{6th} ^{7th} ^{8th} ^{9th} ^{10th} ^{11th} ^{12th} ^{13th} ^{14th} ^{15th} ^{16th} ^{17th} ^{18th} ^{19th} ^{20th} ^{21st} ^{22nd} ^{23rd} ^{24th} ^{25th} ^{26th} ^{27th} ^{28th} ^{29th} ^{30th} ^{31st} ^{32nd} ^{33rd} ^{34th} ^{35th} ^{36th} ^{37th} ^{38th} ^{39th} ^{40th} ^{41st} ^{42nd} ^{43rd} ^{44th} ^{45th} ^{46th} ^{47th} ^{48th} ^{49th} ^{50th} ^{51st} ^{52nd} ^{53rd} ^{54th} ^{55th} ^{56th} ^{57th} ^{58th} ^{59th} ^{60th} ^{61st} ^{62nd} ^{63rd} ^{64th} ^{65th} ^{66th} ^{67th} ^{68th} ^{69th} ^{70th} ^{71st} ^{72nd} ^{73rd} ^{74th} ^{75th} ^{76th} ^{77th} ^{78th} ^{79th} ^{80th} ^{81st} ^{82nd} ^{83rd} ^{84th} ^{85th} ^{86th} ^{87th} ^{88th} ^{89th} ^{90th} ^{91st} ^{92nd} ^{93rd} ^{94th} ^{95th} ^{96th} ^{97th} ^{98th} ^{99th} ^{100th}	Y. R. Monarchs		
3669 e	Nov. 15	1	Darius	Codomannus, Great Grandton of Nothus Reigns 4 Y.
671 b				Alexander Sails to Asia. (u) May 20, He beats the Persian Army at the Granicus (u)
672				November, He beats Darius at Issus. (u)
673		4		He Founde Alexandria in Egypt Whence the Canon Begins his R. (u)
				III. GRECIAN Monarchs.
		14	I. Alexander	the Great, Reigns 8 Y.
674				Octob. 1, (s) He beats Darius near Arbela, & takes Babylon & c (u. s)
675				June 28, Darius Kill'd by his Officers, the Persian Empire goes to the Grecians, & Calippus Begins his Period of 76 Y (u s. a)
681				May 22, Alexander Dies. And his Bastard Brother
		12	I. Philip	Arideus, Reigns 7 Y.
688				He is Kill'd. And Alexander's Son
		10	I. Alexander	Ægus, by Roxana, Reign: (8)
693				Sept. 6, (a) Seleucus seizes Babylon, and Reigns. (9)
				Alexander

(s) Srauchius. (a) Alsted.

Srauchius says it Began at the Summer Solstice; and Alsted, on June 28.

(8) The Canon makes it 12 Y from the b of his R to the b of the R of Ptolemy Lagus over Egypt.

(9) Whence the Era of the Seleucides Begins with the Eastern Nations; except the Chaldeans who begin it in the following Spring, & the 1st Book of Maccabees in the Spring before. (Alsted)

N	Y.W.	1st Egy. New Y.D.	Y. R. Monarchs	
	694 ^e		6	Alexander Agus Kill'd
	696			The Bastard Son of Alexander
				the Great, Kill'd, his
				Ends, & his Empire Divid
	700			among his Generals (c)
				Ptolemy Lagus settled K
				Egypt, Phœnicia & Jud
			[The Ptolemies]	IV. EGYPTIAN Monarch
1	Nov. 7		1. Lagus	Reigns 20 Y.
	704			Seleucus seizes Syria.
	714			Archimedes B, and Liv
				79 Y. (cr)
	720		20	Lagus resigns to his Young
				Son
2			2	1 Philadelphus Who Reigns 38 Y.
	721			Lagus Dies.
	728			The Hebrew BIBLE Trans
				lated into Greek. (u, p)
	745			Berosus, being Old, Writ
	752			Hannibal Born, and Liv
				70 Y. (c. 11)
	755			The Parthians under Arse
				ses, Begin the Parthian
				Empire.
	758		38	Philadelphus Dies. And his Son
3	Oct. 24		1. Euergetes. I	Reigns 25 Y.
	769			P. Scipio B, and Liv
				52 Y (c)
	772			Cato the Censor B, and Liv
				to the 85 Y. (c. 11)
	783		25	Euergetes Dies. And his Son
4		18	1. Philopator	Reigns 17 Y.

-Syracus

(cr.) Cary. (p) Dr. Prideaux.

(10) The following 6 Years being Times of great Confusion, thro' the
 Siege of Alexander's Generals for the several Parts of the Empire, till
 Ptolemy Lagus comes to be Settled K of Egypt; the Canon therefore
 adds the said 6 Years also to Agus.

No. Y. W	157 Egv 157 Y. D	Y. R. Monarchs	
379	Luc.	7 I. Epiphanes	Syracuse taken, and Archimedes Slain. Polybius B, & Lives 82 Y. (c) Philapator D And his Son Reigns 24 Y.
800			Antiochus the Great, K of Syria, seizes Palestine.
801	Oct. 13		P Scipio Overthrows Hannibal in Africa
803			L Scipio beats Antiochus the Great, and forces him to quit the Lesser Asia
815			P Scipio Africanus D, Aged 52 (c)
821			Hannibal Drinks Poyson and D, Aged 70 (c. u)
822		24	Epiphanes Kill'd by Poyson. And his Son
824		7	Reigns 35 Y
835		I. Philometor	Antiochus Epiphanes, K of Syria, Plunders Jerusalem and the Temple.
837			His Army cruelly Destroys the City, sets up the Image of Jupiter in the Temple, and Persecutes the Jews.
843			Whereupon Mattathias a Priest, and his Sons the Maccabees take Arms (11)
856			Hipparchus Begins his Celestial Observations, & finds the Autumnal Equinox on Sept. 27 (c. u)
			Cato the Elder D, Aetatis 85. (c. b. u)
			Philometor

(11) From Him Succeeds a Race of Princes ruling in Judea, till the Roman Senate gave the King from King Antigonis to Herod an Idumaean.

N ^o Y W.	15 th Egyp. new Y. D.	Y. R. Monarchs.	
3859	35		<i>Philometor</i> , Wounded in Battle, D. And his Son Kill'd by <i>Philometor</i> Brother, viz.
7 862	Sep. 29.	1. <i>Euergetes II.</i> called <i>Physcon</i> , who R. 29 Y	Sept. 28, <i>Hipparchus</i> Begins his Period of 304 Y (c. cr.)
888	29		<i>Euergetes</i> D. And his Son call'd <i>Lathurus</i> , R. 36 Y (12)
8 898	21	1. <i>Soter</i>	<i>Cicero</i> B, & Lives 64 Y. (c. n)
899			<i>Pompey the Great</i> B, & Lives 58 Y. (c. u)
905			<i>Julius Cesar</i> B, and Lives 56 Y (c. u)
924	36		<i>Soter</i> D (13) And his Bastard Son
9 933	12	1. <i>Dionysius</i>	<i>Neos</i> , call'd <i>Auletes</i> , R. 29 Y
935			<i>Herod the Great</i> B, and Lives 69 Y. (u. p)
940			<i>Virgil</i> B, & Lives 52 Y (c. n)
			<i>Horace</i> B, & Lives 57 Y. (c. n)
			<i>Pompey</i> Puts an End to the Kingdom of the <i>Seleucida</i> Kings of Syria, and makes the Kingdom a Roman Province.
942			<i>Octavius</i> B, and Lives 76 Y. (c. u) (14)
			Dec. 28, <i>Pompey</i> takes <i>Jerusalem</i> . (c. u)
943			<i>Diodorus Siculus</i> Flourishes (c. n)

Pompey

(12) The former Part of his R His Mother Governed.

(13) *Cicero* & *Suetonius* say, that *Soter's* only Legitimate Off-spring *Bernice* immediately Succeeded Him and Married her Cousin *Alexander*, who quickly Killing her, Reigned 15 Y; and then the Egyptians expelling Him, raised *Auletes* to the Throne: But *Appian* says that *Alexander* Reign'd but 19 d after He Kill'd his Queen; and then the Egyptians Killing Him, *Auletes* Succeeded; (u) And the CANON follows *Appian*.

(14) He was *Julius Cesar's* Sister's Grandson by her Daughter *Asia*.

N Y. W	¹ ² ³ ⁴ ⁵ ⁶ ⁷ ⁸ ⁹ ¹⁰ ¹¹ ¹² ¹³ ¹⁴ ¹⁵ ¹⁶ ¹⁷ ¹⁸ ¹⁹ ²⁰ ²¹ ²² ²³ ²⁴ ²⁵ ²⁶ ²⁷ ²⁸ ²⁹ ³⁰ ³¹ ³² ³³ ³⁴ ³⁵ ³⁶ ³⁷ ³⁸ ³⁹ ⁴⁰ ⁴¹ ⁴² ⁴³ ⁴⁴ ⁴⁵ ⁴⁶ ⁴⁷ ⁴⁸ ⁴⁹ ⁵⁰ ⁵¹ ⁵² ⁵³ ⁵⁴ ⁵⁵ ⁵⁶ ⁵⁷ ⁵⁸ ⁵⁹ ⁶⁰ ⁶¹ ⁶² ⁶³ ⁶⁴ ⁶⁵ ⁶⁶ ⁶⁷ ⁶⁸ ⁶⁹ ⁷⁰ ⁷¹ ⁷² ⁷³ ⁷⁴ ⁷⁵ ⁷⁶ ⁷⁷ ⁷⁸ ⁷⁹ ⁸⁰ ⁸¹ ⁸² ⁸³ ⁸⁴ ⁸⁵ ⁸⁶ ⁸⁷ ⁸⁸ ⁸⁹ ⁹⁰ ⁹¹ ⁹² ⁹³ ⁹⁴ ⁹⁵ ⁹⁶ ⁹⁷ ⁹⁸ ⁹⁹ ¹⁰⁰	Y R. Monarch.	
3945			Pompey, Crassus and Julius
			Caesar form the 1st Triumvirate.
946			Livy B, & Lives 76 Y (c. b. i)
950			Aug. 26 Julius Caesar 1st
			Lands in Britain. (c. i. ba)
951			This Spring, he Lands the 2d
			time in Britain. (c. d. ba)
			Crassus Plunders the Temple
			of Jerusalem
952			He is slain in Battle by the
			Parthians.
953			Dionysius Neos D. (15) And
10	Sept. 5	1, Cleopatra	Reigns 22 Y.
955			Caesar Passes the Rubicon and
			Begins the Civil War. (u)
957			Pompey Beats Caesar at Dyr-
			rachium: but is Beat by
			Caesar at Pharsalia, and
			Kill'd in Egypt (c. b. u)
959			Cato the Younger Kills Him-
			self at Utica. (c. u)
			Caesar, as High Priest, Re-
			forms the Roman Calen-
960 b			dar. (c. u) (16)
			Jan. 1 being now plac'd at
			the Winter Solstice, the 1st
			Julian Y Begins (c. u) (17)
			March,

(b) Helvicus. (i) Isaacson. (ha) Dr. Halley in Philosoph. Transac.

(15) He had 2 Legitimate Sons: But by Julius Caesar's Favout, Cleopatra, is Prefer'd before them.

(16) In order to which, by the Direction of Sosigenes He makes this Y to consist of 445 d, (Lydiat, Petavius, Wsher, Stravuchius, Prideaux, &c.)

(17) These Y are called Julian from Julius Caesar who appointed them: They contain 365 d, 6 hours; which 6 hours in 4 Y make 1 d, and added in Feb. every 4th Y, makes that Y to consist of 366 d, and is call'd a Leap Y: But thro' Mistake, the Romans made every third Y a Leap Y for the 1st 36 Y of this Era; and then Augustus reduc'd them into Order. (Lydiat, Calvisius, Petavius, Wsher, Prideaux.)

No Y.W. ^{1st. E. 770^p} new Y.D. Y. R. Monarchs

3961 b		March, 15, <i>Caesar</i> Kill d the Senate (c. u)
962		<i>Ovid</i> B, and Lives 59 Y. (c. <i>Octavius</i> ; <i>Antony</i> , & <i>Lepidus</i> form the 2d <i>Triumvirate</i> And <i>Antony</i> Kills <i>Cicer</i> Aged 64. (c. u)
963		<i>Octavius</i> & <i>Antony</i> vanquish <i>Brutus</i> and <i>Cassius</i> <i>Philippi</i> . (c. u)
965		The <i>Parthians</i> Conquer <i>Sy</i> <i>ria</i> & <i>Phenicia</i> , & take <i>Jeru</i> <i>salem</i> : and <i>Herod</i> flyin to <i>Rome</i> , the Senate vote Him K of <i>Judea</i> (c. u)
966		<i>Ventidius</i> beats the <i>Parthians</i> out of <i>Phenicia</i> & <i>Syria</i> (c. u)
967		Dec. 31, (18) By the Help of <i>Sofus</i> , <i>Herod</i> takes <i>Jeru</i> <i>salem</i> and therein K <i>Ant</i> <i>igonus</i> : (c. u)
968		This Summer, <i>Antony</i> Kills K <i>Antigonus</i> at <i>Antiocb</i> . (19)
969		<i>Octavius</i> deposes <i>Lepidus</i> from the <i>Triumvirate</i> ; (c. u)
974		Sept. 3. (20) the Marine Victo ry of <i>Octavius</i> over <i>Antony</i> & <i>Cleopatra</i> at <i>Actium</i> (c. u.)
975		Aug. 1, <i>Octavius</i> takes <i>Alexan</i> <i>dria</i> : at which <i>Antony</i> Kills Himself, & soon after <i>Cleo</i> <i>patra</i> : & <i>Egypt</i> is made a <i>Roman Province</i> . (c. h. u.)

V. *Period.*

(18) By the *Mistake* above, this was called the 1st of *Jan.* of the following Y.

(19) By the continual *Instigation* and *Bribery* of *Herod*. (u. p)

(20) By the *Mistake* above, this was called the 2 of *Sept.*

V. Period.

THE Chronology of the Roman EMPERORS successively, From the Beginning of the Reign of AUGUSTUS, to the Death of CONSTANTINE the Great, the 1st Christian Emperor, when the Empire came to be Divided: being the Space of 365 Years, 9 Months

Having brought the Reader thro' the darker Scenes of the ancient Ages to the b of the *Roman Emperors*; we are opening now into fairer Prospects, and the Path of Time grows clearer and more certain; partly by the Regulation of the Y by *Julius Caesar*, and partly by the Advance of Learning in the Roman Empire. But tho' the Course of Time thro' the present Period meets with little or no Difficulty; yet the punctual Dates of those great Events— the Decease of *Herod*, and the Birth, Ministry and Death of *JOHN the Baptist* and our Blessed SAVIOUR, have perplex'd the Minds of the most learned men as much as any other Points of History. For the *New English Reader's* fuller view of these famous Problems, I must refer to *Scaliger, Calvisius, Petavius, Strauchius, Gregory, Lightfoot, Swan, Whiston, Whitby, Prideaux, Marshal & Lardner*, whose Performances are found among us; but above all, to the critical Examination of *Paterculus, Josephus, Tacitus, Suetonius & Dio*, compar'd with the Writers of the *New Testament*: without consulting whose Originals, I find there can be no Safety or Exactness in our Reasonings from them.

However, to oblige my Readers that cannot come at these authentick Records, I may briefly observe, as to the DEATH of *HEROD*, --- That tho' A Bp. *Usher* and Mr. *Whiston* place it in *November*; yet *Josephus* plainly representing that he Died a little before the *Passover*, and the Jewish Writer from whom they take that End of *Herod's* Life, being a Modern Author and of little Credit, as Dr. *Whitby* observes from Dr. *Allix*; the Learned therefore seem to be giving up this Article, and the great Enquiry is, whether *Herod* Died in the *Spring* of the Y of *Rome* 750, 751, or 752, i. e. according to *Varro's* Computation, which *Petavius, Cary & Perizonius* follow in their Chronological Tables: tho' the very same years are called 749, 750, 751, according

according to *Cato*; followed by *Helvicus*, *Isaacson*, *Sava* and *Tallents*. Now because *Josephus* mentions an Eclipse of the Moon at *Jericho* in the Time of *Herod's* Final Illness; Astronomers searching for this Celestial Character, *Kepler* and *Petavius* have found it on *March 13* in the Y of *Rome 750* and therefore place the Decease of *Herod* between this Phenomenon and *April 11*, the d of the following Passover. And tho' *Herod* had not arriv'd to the 37th entire Y from the time He was declared King by the Roman Senate; yet if *Josephus* Begins his Jewish Years with the 1st of *Nisan*, as *Ptolomy* --- his Egyptian with the 1st of *Thoth*; then on the 1st of *Nisan* in 750, *Herod* enter'd his 37th Y, and there is no Difficulty.

For (1) *Josephus* tells us, that *Herod* was declared King by the Romans in the 184th Olympiad, *Calvinus* and *Pollio* being Consuls: *Dio* says, that these were Consuls in the Y of *Rome 714*: and the Learned all agree that this Olympiad ended in the Summer of this very Y. But by comparing these 2 Authorities it seems to me that *Herod* did not Sail to *Rome* till the Winter coming on at the End of 714; and tho' *Calvinus* & *Pollio* began their Consulships in the 184th Olympiad; yet the 185th began in the Summer before *Herod's* Voyage; which *Josephus* expressly tells us was after *Pentecost*, & (Χειμῶνος οὐτος,) in the Winter Season. (2) *Josephus* also says, that *Herod* Reigned 37 Y, that his Son *Philip* Succeeded Him in Part of his Dominions, Ruled also 37 Y, and Died in the 20th Y of the Empire of *Tiberius*: and all Chronologers agree that the 20th Y of *Tiberius* Began on *Aug. 19*, in the Y of *Rome 786*. By this it is plain, *Josephus* means, not intire Years, with respect to either Son or Father, but the 37th Y current only. (3) *Josephus* also writes in his Book of the War, that *Archelaus* Succeeded *Herod* in another Part of his Kingdom, viz *Judea*, and being accus'd in the 9th Y of his Government, He was Banish'd to *Jenna*: But in his Book of *Antiquities* written after the other, and we may suppose more Correctly, He says, that *Archelaus* was Accus'd & Banish'd in the 10th Y of his Government; and

* See the Calculation of this Eclipse at the end of Mr. *Whiston's* Astronomical Lectures; tho' his Calculation is for the Meridj in *Jerusalem*, which makes it something later in the Morning than it appear'd at *Jericho*.

in his own Life, He repeats the same, asserting that His Father's Death was in the said 10th Y^r of Archelaus, By which it seems that Archelaus was accus'd & sent to Rome in the Spring of his 9th Y^r, & was got into his 10th before his Trial there and Exile. And Dio says, He was accus'd & banish'd to Rome & his Estate confiscated in the Y^r of Rome 759, Lepidus and Aruntius being Consuls. (4) Josephus also tells us, that upon Archelaus's Banishment, Augustus sent Cyrenius, who seized his Estate in the 37th Y^r after Antony was beat by Octavian at Actium; and the Learned all agree that the 37th Y^r from that Event Began on Sept. 2. in this very Y^r of Rome which Dio speaks of, viz. 759.

If therefore, 714, ending with the last Month Adar of the Jewish Y^r, be reckon'd by Josephus for the 1st of Herod's Reign, and so his 2d Y^r Beginning with the 1st of Nisan; Then the latter e of Mar. 750 will be in his 37th Y^r; Then Mar. 759 will be in the e of Archelaus's 9th, and the rest of the Y^r will be his 10th; Then his Estate will be seiz'd in the same Y^r, sometime after Sept. 2; And then the 37th of Philip will begin in Mar. 786, and He must Die between Aug. 19 this same Y^r (when Tiberius enters on his 20th,) and the Nisan of the next, when otherwise Philip wou'd enter into his 38th.

But if we fix the Decease of Herod to the Spring of 751; then we slight the Eclipse above said (which no Astronomer will be free to) & cannot so easily make Josephus & Dio agree. And if we carry his Death to the Spring of 752; then we both slight the Eclipse, and make Josephus interfere both with Dio and with Himself also. Whereas if we keep to the Celestial Character, with the natural and easy Supposition above; there is a perfect Harmony in all their Numbers.

Now, the 750 Y^r of Rome is the 4710 of the Julian Period; and in the Spring of this Y^r, I at present incline to place the Decease of Herod: tho' if a Lunar Eclipse at Jericho, cou'd be found by Mr. Flamsteed's Observations, & Sir I. Newton's Theory, in the latter part of this Y^r, or b of the next; I shou'd then incline to think his Death was in the Spring ensuing. And by Mat. I. we know that CHRIST was Born before Herod Died; as by Luke I. The Birth of JOHN was about half a Year before our SAVIOUR'S.

No|Y. W|Emperor|

No	Y. W	Emperor
1	3975	Octavius
		Aug. 31. [1] The 1st <i>Egypt.</i> new Y d of Conquering <i>Anthony & Egypt</i> , and becoming Sole <i>Military Head</i> of the Roman Empire, for 43 Y (<i>s. d. pt & c.</i>)
	978	
		Jan. 7. He receives the whole Administration from the Senate: Jan. 13. [2] the Name Him <i>Augustus</i> : and the REPUBLIC Turn'd into a MONARCHY (<i>c. p. u. & c.</i>)
	984	
		Marc Agrippa [3] Marries <i>Julia</i> , only Child of <i>Augustus</i> (<i>c.</i>)
	985	
		The BLESSED VIRGIN Born (<i>n.</i>)
	986	
		Virgil Dies at <i>Brundisium</i> , Ætatis 52 (<i>c.</i>)
	987	
		Herod Begins to Rebuild the Temple (<i>j. ll. n.</i>)
	992	
		Lepidus the High Priest of Rome Dies, and <i>Augustus</i> succeeds (<i>c.</i>)
	993	
		March 19. M. Agrippa Dies (<i>c.</i>)
	995	
		Tiberius Marries <i>Julia</i> (<i>c.</i>) [4]
	997	
		<i>Augustus</i> Begins to Rectify the <i>Julian</i> (<i>c. u. pr.</i>) [5]
		<i>Horace</i> Ætatis 57, & <i>Mecenas</i> Die (<i>c.</i>)
	998	
		<i>Dionysius Halicarnassens</i> Begins to write (<i>c.</i>)
	4000	
		JOHN the Baptist Bin the Former Part of the Y, & CHRIST in the Latter (<i>p. u. sw. cr. ll. pr.</i>)
	4001	
		Herod D. Æt. 70 (<i>j.</i>) [6] and his Son <i>Archelaus</i> Governs in <i>Judea</i> 9 Y (<i>j. d. k. p. cr.</i>)
	4004	
		The last Y [7] before the <i>Vulgar Christian</i> Æra

[1] By the mistake above, this was call'd Aug. 29, and hence the *Egyptian* Æra begins, by the Consent of all Chronologers.

s. Suetonius. d. Dio. pt. Ptolemy. c. Calvisius. p. Petavius. u. 28 lib.

[2] So Ovid; but *Censorinus* on Jan. 17 (*c. u.*)

[3] By whom she had *Agrippina & Agrippa-Posthummus*, &c (*c.*)

n. *Nicephorus*. j. *Josephus*. ll. *Lloyd*. m. *Marshall*.

[4] But had no Issue by Her: tho' He had a Son by a former Wife, (*i.*)

[5] By omitting the 3 Intercalations for the 12 Years following. (*c. u. pr.*)

pr. *Prideaux*. sw. *Swan*. cr. *Cary*. k. *Kepler*.

[6] Between an Eclipse of the Moon on Mar. 13 and the Passover on April 11 (*j. d. k. p. cr.*)

[7] Cycle of the Sun 9, Y of Rome according to *Varro*, *Tacitus* and *Dio* 753, *Julian* Y 45, and Y of the *Julian Period* 4713; as all Chronologers agree.

N | Y | C | Emperor

I. CENTURY.

1	Jan. 1.	Begins the 1st Y of the <i>Christian</i> or <i>Dionysian Æra</i> , call'd <i>Anno Domini</i> [8]
4	At the End of Feb.	the <i>Julian Y</i> comes right, and so continues (c. u. &c)
6	Archelaus	Accus'd before <i>Augustus</i> , is Banish'd to <i>Vienna</i> . (j. d. p. u. &c)
	Between Sept. 2	this Y & Sept. 2. next, <i>Judea</i> made a <i>Roman Province</i> & Annex'd to <i>Syria</i> (i. d. c. u. &c)
8	November,	<i>Ovid</i> Banish'd (c. u.)
12	<i>Tiberius</i>	made <i>Prince</i> & <i>Colleague</i> with <i>Augustus</i> in the <i>Provinces</i> & <i>Armies</i> (pa. t. s. d.)
14 43.	Aug. 19	<i>Augustus</i> Dies <i>Ætatis</i> 76, and his only <i>Grandson</i> Kill'd by
2	<i>Tiberius</i>	[9] Who Reigns 22 Y, 6 m, 27 d [10]
17	<i>Ovid</i>	Dies in <i>Exile</i> , <i>Ætatis</i> 59 (c. u.)
18	<i>Livy</i>	Dies <i>Ætatis</i> 76 (c) & <i>Strabo</i> Publishes his <i>Geography</i> (pr)
25	<i>Strabo</i>	Dies (b)
26	<i>Valerius Maximus</i>	and <i>Volleius Paterculus</i> Flourish (b)
28 15.	JOHN	Begins his <i>Publick Ministry</i> and <i>Baptizes</i> CHRIST [11]
29	The <i>Passover</i> ,	on <i>Lord's-Day</i> April 17. (c)
30	The <i>Passover</i> ,	on <i>Saturday</i> , April 8 (c)

The

[8] 1st brought into use by *Dionysius Exiguus* in the common Y C 527, who supposing CHRIST was Born on *December 25* of the foregoing Y, Began the *Christian Æra* with this 1st of Jan.

pa. *Paterculus*, t. *Tacitus*. h. *Helvicus*.

[9] He was of the *Claudian Family*, & but *Son in Law* to *Augustus*. (s)

[10] So *Tacitus* & *Suetonius*, tho' *Dis* 10 d more.

[11] In the 15 Y of the R of *Tiberius*; which Begins *Aug. 19* this Y. (*Luk. III. pt. c. fw. w. m.*) Tho' *Abp Usher*, & *Dr. Prideaux* place the b of the *Baptist's Ministry* 2 Y sooner, viz. in the 15th of *Tiberius's* *Principality*, (see *Luk. III. pr. tr. pa. t. s. d.*)
w. *Whiston*. tr. *Lardner*.

N. Y. C Emperor

31		The Passover on Tuesday March 27 (c)
32		The Passover on Tuesday, April 15 (c)
33		The Passover on Fryday April 3. when CHRIST was Crucified (c. r. u. s. w. c. w. ll m. &c) [12] Lords-Day, April 5. He Arises from the Dead (c. r. u. ll &c) Thursday, May 14. He Ascends to Heaven (c. r. u. &c) Lord's Day, May 24 the d of Pentecost, the HOLY GHOST pou'd out (c. r. u. ll &c)
34		Stephen the 1st Christian Martyr Stoned (u)
35		Saul Converted & called Paul (p u ll) & Tiberius proposes in the Senate to Destroy CHRIST (u)
37		March 16 [13] Tiberius Dies <i>Ætatis</i> 58 (t. d. c. p. u) and his only Grandson Killed by his Brother's Grandson
3	Caligula	[14] Who R 3 Y, 10 m, 8 d. (c. p. u) [15] Josephus Born between Sept. this Y. & March next (s)
38		June 13. Agricola the Roman General Born (s)
40		Philo Judæus goes Embassador to Rome (c) and the BLESSED VIRGIN D, <i>Ætatis</i> 60 (s)
41		Jan. 24. Caligula kill'd, <i>Ætatis</i> 30 (s) and his Uncle
4	Claudius	[16] Reigns 13 Y, 8 m, 20 d (t. s. d. c. p. u)
43		Plautius & Vespasian sail to Britain, fight successfully, & Claudius follows them (u)
44		Claudius Returns to Rome, Triumphs, & calls his Son Britannicus (t. c)

Apollonius

r. Bp Richardson.

[12] In the 19th Y of the R of Tiberius, which Ends Aug. 19, (t. d.)

[13] So Tacitus and Suetonius; tho' Dio 10 d after.

[14] Son to Agrippina by Germanicus the Son of Drusus younger Brother of Tiberius (s)

[15] So Tacitus and Suetonius; tho' Dio 10 d less.

[16] Younger Brother to Germanicus, and Both Sons of Drusus by Antonia minor, Daughter of Marc Antony by Octavia Sister of Augustus (s)

Y.C. Emperor

46		<i>Apollonius Tyaneus</i> Flourishes (u)
48		<i>Quintus Curtius</i> Flourishes (c)
52		The 1st Famous Council at <i>Jerusalem</i> (u ll)
54		Oct. 13. <i>Claudius Poyson'd</i> <i>Ætatis</i> 64 (t s. d & c) and his only Son Kill'd by
	Nero	[17] who Reigns 13 Y, 7m, 28 d (t s. c. u)
60		<i>Paul</i> seized at <i>Jerusalem</i> (u ll)
61		<i>Boadicia</i> a <i>British</i> Q kills 70 (t) or 80 thousand <i>Romans</i> with their Associates (d) But <i>Paulinus</i> in 1 Battle Slays as many <i>Britons</i> : and <i>Boadicia</i> Kills Herself. (t. d. c)
62		<i>Persius</i> the Poet Dies, <i>Ætatis</i> , 29 (c)
64		<i>Nero</i> 1st Persecutes the <i>Christians</i> at <i>Rome</i> (c. u)
65		<i>Seneca</i> & <i>Lucan</i> put to Death by <i>Nero</i> (t. c. p.)
66		In May, <i>Gessius Florus</i> Begins the <i>Jewish</i> <i>War</i> (j. c. u)
67		June 29, <i>Paul</i> Beheaded, & <i>Peter</i> Crucified at <i>Rome</i> (p. u. ll)
68		In March, the Army in <i>Spain</i> set up <i>Galba</i> (t. c. u)
		June 8 <i>Nero</i> Kills Himself, <i>Ætatis</i> 31 (t. d.) 32 (s) [18] And
6	Galba	Comes to <i>Rome</i> & Reigns (t. s. d. c. u)
69		Jan. 3. The Army in <i>Gaul</i> set up <i>Vitellius</i> (t. c. u)
		Jan. 15. <i>Galba</i> Kill'd at <i>Rome</i> , <i>Ætatis</i> 73 (t. s. d. u) by
7	Otho	Who Reigns There; 94 d. (t. c. u)
		April 19, <i>Otho</i> Kills Himself, <i>Ætatis</i> 37 (t. d. c) 38 (s) And
8	Vitellius	Comes to <i>Rome</i> and Reigns (t. s. d. c. u)
		July 1. The Army in <i>Egypt</i> Proclaim <i>Ves-</i> <i>pasian</i> (t. s. c. u)

Dec.

[17] Son of *Domitius* by *Agrippina Junr* Daughter of *Germanicus* by
Agrippina Senr (s)[18] And thus the *Julian*, *Octavian*, *Claudian* and *Domitian* Familie
expire.

No Y.C Emperor

		Dec. 20. (t. m) <i>Vitellius</i> Kill'd at Rome, <i>Ætatis</i> 55 (d) 57 (t. s). [19]
9	Vespasian	R. (from July 1.) 10 Y, wanting 6 d (s. d. c.)
70		April 14, The <i>Passover</i> Begins, and <i>Titus</i> lays siege to <i>Jerusalem</i> (j. c. p. u)
		July 17, The <i>Daily Sacrifice</i> ceases (j. c. u. m)
		Aug. 10, The <i>Temple</i> Burns, & the <i>Roman</i> Edifices set on the <i>Eastern Gate</i> (j. u. m)
		Sep 8, <i>Titus</i> takes and destroys the whole <i>City</i> (j. c. u. m)
73		<i>Judea</i> intirely subdued, laid waste and quieted (j. c. u.)
77		<i>Pliny</i> Dedicates his <i>Natural History</i> to <i>Titus</i> (c.)
79		June 24, <i>Vespasian</i> Dies, <i>Ætatis</i> 70. (s. d. c. p.) And, his <i>Eldest Son</i>
10	Titus	Reigns 2 Y, 2 m. 20 d. (s. d. c. p)
		<i>Agricola</i> goes into <i>Britain</i> , and conquers the <i>Isle of Man</i> , &c. (t. c.)
		Nov. 2; <i>Pliny</i> Dies by the <i>Eruption of Vesuvius</i> . (c. p.)
81		Sept. 13, <i>Titus</i> Dies, <i>Ætatis</i> 41 (s. c. p) and his <i>Younger Brother</i>
11	Domitian	Reigns 15 Y, 5 d (s. d. c.)
		<i>Agricola</i> Discovers & Conquers <i>New Nations</i> in <i>Britain</i> (t. c.)
82		<i>Juvenal</i> & <i>Martial</i> Flourish (c)
		<i>Agricola</i> 1st Discovers <i>Britain</i> to be an <i>Island</i> , and Conquers the <i>Orcades</i> (t. c)
83		Having Conquer'd <i>Britain</i> , He goes into <i>Ireland</i> (t. c)
85		<i>Statius</i> the <i>Poet</i> Flourishes (c)
87		<i>Agricola</i> Returns to <i>Rome</i> (c)
90		The <i>Apostle JOHN</i> Banish'd into <i>Patmos</i> (c)
93		<i>Clemens Romanus</i> writes to the <i>Corinthians</i> (c)
		Aug. 23. <i>Agricola</i> D, <i>Ætatis</i> 56 (t. c)

Josephus

[19] *Galba*, *Otho* and *Vitellius* were of several Families: and their Reigns being short and intersecting, *Ptolemy* omits them, and sets *Vespasian* next to *Nero*.

Y	C	Emperors	
94			<i>Josephus</i> Finishes his <i>Antiquities</i> , Æt. 56 (j. c.) [20]
95			<i>JOHN</i> writes the <i>Revelation</i> . : and <i>Quintilian</i> Dies (c)
96			Sep 18, <i>Domitian</i> Kill'd, Æt. 45, (s. d. c. p.) [21] And
97	2	<i>Nerva</i>	Chose by the <i>Senate</i> ; R 1 Y, 4 m, 9 d (d. c.) <i>Apollonius Tyaneus</i> D. Æt. 100 (d. ph. tl)
98			<i>Tacitus</i> writes of the <i>German Manners</i> (c) Jan. 27, <i>Nerva</i> D, Æt. 66 (d. c. p.) And
99	3	<i>Trajan</i>	A <i>Spaniard</i> (hd) R 19 Y, 6 m, 15 d. (d. c. p.) [22]
100			<i>JOHN</i> the <i>Apostle</i> D, at <i>Ephesus</i> (c) <i>Clemens Romanus</i> D, (p) and the <i>Apostolick</i> <i>Age</i> Ends.
II. CENTURY.			
102			<i>Pliny</i> junr, goes <i>Proconsul</i> to <i>Bithynia</i> (c)
107			<i>Ignatius</i> thrown to the <i>Lions</i> at <i>Rome</i> (c) [23]
108			<i>Trajan</i> subdues <i>Armenia</i> , & extends the <i>Empire</i> from the <i>Euphrates</i> to the <i>Tigris</i> (d. c.)
115			He takes <i>Arbela</i> , &c. and subdues <i>Assyria</i> (d. c.)
117			Aug. 10, He D, in <i>Cilicia</i> , Æt. 64 (c. p.) and
119	14	<i>Adrian</i>	A <i>Spaniard</i> also, R 20 Y, 11 m (d. c.)
122			<i>Plutarch</i> Flourishes (c)
123			<i>Adrian</i> goes into <i>Britain</i> (c) & Builds a <i>Military</i> <i>Wall</i> of 50 Miles in Length (b r)
125			<i>Appian</i> , the <i>Historian</i> , Flourishes (b)
125			<i>Ptolemy</i> Begins his <i>Celestial Observations</i> at <i>Alexandria</i> (c)

Suetonius,

[20] Between *Sept. last* Y, & *March* this, in the 13th Y of *Domitian* (j)

[21] The *Last* of the 12 *CÆSARS* (*Julius* being the 1st) describ'd by
Suetonius: and in *Domitian* the *Vespasian Family* also Ends.

ph. *Philostrophus*. tl. *Tillemont*. hd. *Herodian*. hr. *Hearn*.

[22] Of *Obscure Birth*, and the 1st Emperor that was not a *Roman*:
tho He carried the *Empire* to the greatest Extent, From the *Orcades*
of *Scotland*, to the *Bounds* of *India* (a. hd)

[23] *Petavius* says in the *Year* after.

N^o Y.C. Emperor |

	127		<i>suetonius</i> , the Historian; Flourishes (c.b)
	138		July 10, <i>Adrian</i> D, <i>Æt</i> 63 (d.c.p) and
15		Antoninus	<i>Pius</i> R 22 Y, 7 m, 26 d (c.p) He makes his Son in Law, <i>LUCIUS VERUS</i> his Colleague (d.c.p) <i>Justin Martyr</i> , a Philosopher, becomes Christian (c)
	142		<i>Pausanias</i> writes his History (c)
	144		<i>Justin</i> the Historian, (b) <i>Galen</i> the Philisian And <i>Aquila</i> , Flourish (c)
	147		<i>Arrian</i> , the Historian, Flourishes (c)
	148		<i>Dicogenes Laertius</i> Flourishes (b)
	150		<i>Justin Martyr</i> writes his 1st Apology (c.b)
	161		Mar. 6. <i>Antoninus</i> D, <i>Æt.</i> 75 (c) and his Son in Law.
16		Aurelius	Reigns 19 Y, 11 d (d.c)
	162		<i>Justin Martyr</i> writes his 2d Apology (c)
	163		June 1. He is Beheaded at Rome (c)
	164		Christianity Countenanc'd by Royal Autho- rity in Britain (c)
	167		Mar. 22, <i>Polycarp</i> Burnt at <i>Smyrna</i> (c.p)
	169		In Dec. <i>LUCIUS VERUS</i> , Emperor, D: (c)
	172		<i>Epictetus</i> , the Philosopher, Flourishes (c)
	180		Mar. 16, <i>Aurelius</i> D, at <i>Vienna</i> , <i>Æt.</i> 59 (d.c.) and his Son
17		Commodus	Reigns 12 Y, 9 m, 14 d. (d.c.p)
	181		<i>Lucius</i> , a British K; promotes Christianity (c)
	182		<i>Theodotion</i> makes his Greek Version (c)
	185		<i>Origen</i> Born, and Lives 69 Y (c.p)
	190		The Jewish Misna written (c)
	192		Dec. 31. <i>Commodus</i> Strangled, <i>Æt.</i> 32 (d.c.p) &
18	193	Percinax	Jan: 1, Chose by the Senate, R 87 d. (d.c.p) Mar. 28, <i>Æt</i> 68; He is Kill'd by the Sol- diers, who sell the Empire to
19		Julian	Who Reigns 66 d (d.c.p) <i>NIGER</i> set up by the Army in Syria, and <i>Albinus</i> in Britain (bd. c) June 1, <i>Julian</i> <i>Æt.</i> 61 (d) is Kill'd by

N. Y. C. / Emperors

	Severus	An African, set up by the Army in <i>Illyricum</i> , R 17 Y, 8 m, 3 d (d.c.p)
194		<i>Clemens Alexandrius</i> Flourishes (c) Severus beats <i>Niger</i> at <i>Issus</i> , & beheads Him at <i>Antioch</i> (bd.c)
195		<i>Tertullian</i> Begins to Write (c)
198		Severus beats <i>Albinus</i> at <i>Lyons</i> , who is there beheaded (bd.c)
III. CENTURY.		
201		<i>Zymachus</i> sets out his <i>Greek Version</i> (c)
202		<i>Lucius Florus</i> & <i>Philostratus</i> Flourish (b)
203		<i>Irenaeus</i> Bp. of <i>Lyons</i> put to Death (c)
208		Severus Goes to War in <i>Britain</i> (c.p)
209		<i>Minutius Felix</i> Flourishes (c)
211		Feb. 4 Severus D, at <i>Tork</i> , Æt. 66 (d.c.p) and his Sons
211	Caracalla	And <i>GETA</i> Reign (d. bd) <i>Caracalla</i> R 6 Y, 2 m, 2 d (d.c.p)
212		Feb. 25. He Kills his Brother <i>Geta</i> , Æt. 23 (d.c.p) and
217		April 8, Æt. 30 (d) He is Kill'd in <i>Meso-</i> <i>potamia</i> , by the Intrigue of
217	Macrinus	A Moor, Chose by the Army [24] R 1 Y, 1 m, 28 d (d.c)
218		June 9, He and his Son Kill'd (d.c) by
218	Bassianus	A Syrian Priest, set up by the Soldiers [25] R 3 Y, 9 m, 4 d (d.c)
220		<i>Julius Africanus</i> the Historian Flourishes (c)
221		<i>Tertullian</i> writes <i>Ad Scapulam</i> (c)
222		Mar. 10, <i>Bassianus</i> , Æt. 19, Kill'd by the Soldiers (d.c) and his Cousin
224	Alexander	Another Syrian Priest, R 13 Y; 9 d (c.p)
226		<i>Artaxerxes</i> a Persian, Rebels against the <i>Partians</i> (c.p)

[24] The Army 1st Chose *AUDENTIUS*; but He Refused the Empire (bd)[25] A Counterfeit Son of *Caracalla*, and went by the Name of *Antonine*,
Auritus, *Heliogabalus*, &c. (d)

N- Y.C	Emperors	
228		<i>Ælian</i> , the Historian, Flourishes (c)
229		<i>Artaxerxes</i> beats & Kills <i>Artabanus</i> King of <i>Parthia</i> , and takes his Kingdom (c)
		Here <i>Dion Cassius</i> Ends his Roman Hist (c)
230		<i>Longinus</i> Writes (c)
231		<i>Origen</i> compleats his <i>Tripartite Bible</i> (c)
235		Mar. 18, <i>Alexander</i> Kill'd in Germany
		<i>Ætatis</i> 28 (bd) by
25	Maximine	Set up by the Soldiers, R. 2 Y, 6 m (c. p) [26]
236		<i>GORDIAN</i> the Father & Son set up in Africa
		But the Son being overcome & Kill'd, the
		Father hangs Himself, <i>Ætatis</i> 80 (c. p)
237		In October, <i>Maximine</i> and his Son Kill'd at
		<i>Aquilea</i> (bd. c) And
26	Maximus	And <i>ALBINUS</i> , chose by the Senate, Reign
		together. (bd. f. p)
238		In March, They are Kill'd by the Soldiers
		(bd. c. p) who make
27	Gordian	Emperors, <i>Ætatis</i> 14 (bd) Who Reign
		6 Years (c. p) [27]
		Here <i>Herodian</i> Ends his Rom. Hist. (bd)
		And <i>Censorinus</i> Writes (c. p)
244		In March, <i>Gordian</i> <i>Ætatis</i> 20, is Kill'd in
		<i>Persia</i> , (c. p) by
28	Philip	<i>Arabs</i> , set up by the Soldiers, R. 6 Y (c) [28]
248		<i>Cyprian</i> made Bishop of <i>Carthage</i> (p)
250		<i>Philip</i> Kill'd in Battle at <i>Verona</i> (c) by
29	Decius	An <i>Hungarian</i> , set up by the Soldiers, Reigns
		1 Year 3 m (c)
251		He and his Son Slain in Battle by the
		<i>Goths</i> (c. p) and
30	Gallus	Chose by the Soldiers, R. 2 Y, 4 m (p. br)

[26] He had been a *Thracian Shepherd*, of mean Birth, and prefer'd only for his Great Body and Courage (bd)

[27] He was the Son of *Gordian* the Elder's Daughter (bd)

[28] His Father had been Captain of a Band of Robbers (c)

[Y.C.] Emperors]

253		He and his Son Kill'd in Battle by his Officer (c) viz.
253	Maximilian	Set up by the Soldiers in <i>Illyricum</i> [29] But in the 5 ^m after, They Kill Him (c. p) for Fear of
254	Valerian	Set up by the Army in <i>Germany</i> , Reigns near 7 Years (c)
254		Origen Dies, Ætatis 70 (c)
258		Cyprian, with his Elders, Banished (c)
259		Valerian taken & Kill'd by the Persians (c. p) And his Son
260	Gallienus	Reigns 9 Y (br) [30] Sept. 14. Cyprian Beheaded (c)
260		ODENATUS of <i>Palmyra</i> , Repells the Persians (c)
264		He Conquers the Eastern part of the Empire, and is Proclaimed King (c. p)
266		He being Kill'd, his Queen Zenobia maintains the Empire (c)
268		Mar. 21. Gallienus, Æt. 50, with his Brother, Kill'd at <i>Milan</i> (c. p) And
269	Claudius II	A <i>Dalmatian</i> , R 1 Y, 10 m, 15 d (br) Zenobia seizes upon <i>Egypt</i> (c)
270		Claudius, in 2 or 3 Battles, Slays above 300 thousand <i>Scythians</i> , <i>Goths</i> , &c. (c. p)
270	Quintillus	Feb. 5, Claudius D. (c. p) and his Brother Assumes the Empire (c. p) But Feb. 22, the Soldiers Kill Him at <i>Aquilea</i> (c. p) and chuse
270	Aurelian	A <i>Dacian</i> , of Obscure Birth, R near 5 Y (c. p)
273		He takes <i>Zenobia</i> & <i>Palmyra</i> , and puts <i>Longinus</i> to Death (c. p)
274		CONSTANTINE the Great Born (p)

Jan.

[29] He was of *Moorish* Extra^r and Born of obscure Parents (c)

[30] In his R, about 30 Officers set up Themselves in Divers Parts of the Empire; but are at length Destroyed (c)

N. Y. C. Emperors

275		Jan. 29, Aurelian is Kill'd near Byzantium (c. p) And
37	Facitus	Sep. 25, chose by the Senate, R. 6 m, 20 d
276		April 13, He Dies (c. p) and his Brother
38	Florian	Assumes the Empire, R. 2 m, 20 d
		July 3, He is Kill'd by the Soldiers in
		Cilicia (c. p) And
39	Probus	An Hungarian, chose by the Senate, R. 6
		4 m (c. p)
277		In several Battles He slays near 400 thousand
		Germans, recovers 60 Cities & beats the
		out of Gaul (c)
282		Nov. 2, The Soldiers Kill Him in Hungary (c)
40	Carus	An Illyrican, Reigns above 1 Y (c. p)
283		He Dies by Lightning in Persia (c. p) And
		his Sons
41	Carinus	And NUMERIANUS succeed Him (c. p)
284		Apr. 21 Numerianus Kill'd in Asia (c)
		SABINUS sets up in Italy; but Carinus over-
		comes Him at Verona (c)
42	Dioclesian	An Illyrican, of obscure Birth, set up by the
		Soldiers, R. 20 Y. (c)
		Aug. 29, Begins the Egyptian Æra of Dioc-
		clesian, or Æra of Martyrs (c. p) [31]
		Dioclesian beats Carinus in 2 Battles. (c)
285		Carinus Kill'd, in Massia by one of his Of-
		ficers (c. p)
286		Apr. 1. Dioclesian makes MAXIMIAN his
		Colleague (c. p)
		Carausius sets up in Britain, and R. 7 Y (c)
288		Achilles sets up in Egypt (c)
291		Dioclesian and Maximian make Constantius
		and Galerius, Cæsar (c. p) [32]

Carausius

[31] Petavius, from the Alexandrian Chronicle, tells us, that on Sept. 29 of this Y, Dioclesian was Proclaim'd Emperor at Chalcædon.

[32] Constantius was the Son of Eutropius by the Daughter of Crispian, Brether to Claudius II (c)

Y.C | Emperors |

292		<i>Carausius</i> Kill'd by his Intimate <i>Alecto</i> , who Reigns in <i>Britain</i> 3 Years (c)
294		<i>Dioclesian</i> overcomes and Kills <i>Achilles</i> , and Reduces <i>Egypt</i> (c)
295		<i>Alecto</i> is overcome, and <i>Britain</i> Reduced (c)
297		<i>Arnobius</i> Writes & Flourishes in <i>Africa</i> . (p)
IV. CENTURY.		
303		In <i>March</i> , The Emperors put out a most severe <i>Edict</i> against the <i>Christians</i> (c. p) [33]
304		<i>April</i> 1 (p) or 21 (c) They both lay down their Empire. And
43	<i>Constantius Chlorus</i>	Reigns in the <i>West</i> , and <i>GALERIUS</i> in the <i>East</i> (c. p) And are the first who <i>Divide</i> the Empire (c. v)
306		<i>Constantius</i> Relinquishes <i>Italy</i> and <i>Africa</i> to <i>Galerius</i> (c)
		<i>July</i> 25, <i>Constantius</i> Dies at <i>Tork</i> (c. p) and his Son
44	<i>Constantin</i>	The Great, <i>Æt.</i> 33, <i>R.</i> 30 Y, 9 m, 27 d (c. p) <i>Sept.</i> 25, the <i>Soldiers</i> at <i>Rome</i> set up <i>MAX-</i> <i>ENTIUS</i> (c. p)
309		<i>Maximian</i> , Rising against <i>Constantin</i> , is taken and put to <i>Death</i> (c) [34]
311		<i>Galerius</i> D, & <i>LICINIUS</i> R in the <i>East</i> (c. p)
		<i>Constantin</i> Declares Himself a <i>Christian</i> . (c)
312		<i>Sept.</i> 24, He overcomes <i>Maxentius</i> near <i>Rome</i> ; who flying, is Drown'd in the <i>Tiber</i> : and <i>Constantin</i> Recovers <i>Italy</i> (c. p)
313		<i>Constantin's</i> Son <i>Constantin</i> Born (c)

Oft.

[33] Whereby Their Meetings are dissolved, their Churches pulled down. their Bibles Burnt, &c. In *Egypt* only, which is but one Province of the Empire, there were 144 thousand Kill'd and 700 thousand Banished (c)

[34] So *Calvisius*, from *Zosimus*: But *Eusebius* says He hang'd Himself and *Peravus* sets it in the Y C 310.
e. *Eusebius*. v. *Valesius*.

N | Y | C |

- Oct. 2. A Number of Bishops meet at Rome, and
 Condemn *Donatus* and his Followers (c. p)
- Dec. 3, *Dioctlesian D.*, in Retirement, at *Salona* (c)
- 314 Oct. 8. *Constantin* Beats *Licinius* in Hungary: and again
 in *Thrace*; and they Agree & Divide the Empire (c. p)
- 315 *Arius* put out of the *Presbytery* at *Alexandria*, on the
 Account of his Heresies. (c)
- 317 *Constantin's* Son *Constantius* Born (c)
- 320 *Licinius* Persecutes the *Christians*; Forbidding them to
 meet in *Synods*, &c (e. c)
- 321 *Constantin's* Son *Constans* Born (c)
- 322 *Lactantius* Writes his *Divine Institutions* (c)
- 323 July 3, *Constantin* Beats *Licinius* near *Adriople* (sg. c.) [35]
- 324 Sep. 18, He defeats Him finally, near *Chalcedon*, [36]
 Becomes *Sole Emperor*, Restores the *Christian Liber-*
ties (c. p. v) and Here *Eusebius* Ends his *History* (e)
- 325 *Licinius*, Conspiring, is put to Death (c. p)
- May 20, The Famous 1st GENERAL COUNCIL
 meets at *Nice* [37] Condemns *Arius* and his *Opinions*,
 and Asserts the *Deity* of *CHRIST* (sc. p)
- 326 *Athanasius* made *Bishop* of *Alexandria* (c. p)
- 330 May 11, *Constantin* Dedicates *Byzantium*, and makes
 it the 2d *Seat* of the *Empire* (c. p) [38]
- 336 *Arius* Dies at *Constantinople* (c. p)
- 337 *Constantin* falling ill, is *Baptiz'd*: and May 22, Dies at
Nicomedia, Æt. 65 (sc) By Will Dividing the *Empire*
 among his 3 Sons (c. p)

VI. Period.

St. Sigoisus, in *Valesius*. St. Socrates *Scholasticus*.

[35] *Peravius* and *Valesius*, from *Iulianus*, place this *Victory* in the
 following Y with the other.

[36] Of *Licinius's* Army of 130 thousand in this *Battle*, scarce 30
 thousand escaped (c)

[37] It consisted of 318, *Bishops*, or *Pastors* of Churches, besides *Elders*,
Deacons &c. (c. p) and *Valesius*, From the *Alexandrian Chronicle* &c
 places their Convention on *June* 19 this Y: But this being *Saturday*,
 and *May* 20, being *Thursday*, I rather incline to sc. p.

[38] Calling it *New Rome*; but the name of *Constantinople* soon Pre-
 vailed, and still continues (c. sc.)

VI. Period.

THE Chronology of the Greek or Eastern EMPE-
RORS, From the Complete Division of the Empire
at the Death of CONSTANTIN the Great, to the
Restoration of the Western Empire by CHARLES the
Great of France, and the Beginning of the Reign of
ÆGBERT the first King of England: Containing
about 463 Years; 7 Months.

We are now arriv'd at the fatal Partition of the Roman Em-
pire. For tho' Marc Antony, Octavius and Lepidus, and some-
time after, Sextus Pompey with them, assign'd themselves their
several Shares thereof, to Reduce to Order, Defend and Gove-
rn; Yet, as Dio Observes * this was at first for 5 Y only,
and then Renew'd for 5 Y more, while the Empire remain'd
united in Rome the Capital. And thus it likewise held intire,
while Dioclesian and Maximian, with their 2 Cæsars under them,
took their several Provinces to Reduce and Vindicate. But
when Constantius & Galerius receiv'd the Empire, they Parted
it at least for Life, if not for Property: and Eusebius tells us, †,
that this was the first Division of the Empire; *It was a thing,*
says He, which never fell out before. However, it seem'd to
continue in some sort intire, while Rome remain'd the Imperial
City, without a Rival.

But when Constantin the Great, had with extraordinary
Magnificence Rebuilt and Adorn'd Byzantium, and in the So-
lemn Dedication given it the Name of NEW ROME; He
made it the Imperial Seat, of the Eastern Provinces, and to
have no Subjection to the Other. Here He therefore fix'd his
Re-

* D Cassius; Lib XLVI-XLIX.

† Ecl. Hist; Lib. VIII, Cap. 13.

Reliance, and Reigned over the whole; Succeeded, with his 3 Sons under Him, till his Decease in the Y C 337; When the Empire came to be Parted in the most effectual manner; CONSTANTIN the eldest had *Europe* on this side of the Alps; CONSTANTIUS the 2d had *Thrace, Asia & Egypt*; being nearly the same with the now *Turkish Empire*: and CONSTANS the Youngest had the Rest of *Europe and Africa*.

The Part which fell to *Constantin* was indeed in the 3 Years after, united to the Dominion of *Constans*: and both together bearing the Name of the WESTERN EMPIRE, was miserably harrass'd and rent to pieces by the *Picts, Scots, and Saxons* in *Britain*; and by the *Goths, Vandals, Franks, Peruli,* and other Barbarous Nations in the *Continent*; till it intirely ended with *Augustus* in the Y C 476; tho' in a measure Revived at the End of the present Interval by *Charles the Great of France*, in the Year 800. But the Part which fell to *Constantinus* had the Name of the EASTERN EMPIRE, and endur'd the attacks of the *Persians, Saracens, Turks,* and Others, till 1453; when it was forc'd to yeild to the *Ottoman Arms*.

The Succession of these *Eastern Emperors* I therefore chuse to follow through the present Period; and the more for this, that they were not only the *Greatest Princes* that were then in the World, but the Affairs of *Learning* then subsisted chiefly in their Dominions, and the *Times of their Succession* are more exactly stated than those of other Monarchs. For though the *polite and fine way* of Writing among the *Roman and Greek Historians* declined greatly in the latter part of the foregoing Period, and expires in this, yet the *Notes of Time* were so well preserved, that Disputes among *Chronologers* grow less and less considerable. They chiefly, I think, refer to the *Roman Pontiffs* in the *Western Empire*; wherein *Onuphrius* and *Baronius* disagree; which seem indeed to be very uncertain and incapable of Decision, and with which we are little concerned.

Note, In the Present Period, where no Historian is cited, the Articles are taken from CALVISIUS.

Constantinus

Y.C.	Eastern Emperors	
Sec. I. To the Destruction of the Western Empire		
337 340	Constantius	May 22, R in the East, 24 Y, 5 m, 12 d (c.p) In March, Constantine invading Constantius, is slain near Aquileia: and Constantius takes his Part of the Empire (c.p) Eusebius, the Historian, D. (c.p) & Jerom B [1]
350		Jan. 18, Magnentius sets up in Gaul for the Western Empire, and at the Pyrenes Kills Constantius, Æt 30 (sc.p)
		June 3, Nepotianus sets up at Rome (sc.p) [2]
		July 1, Magnentius's Army overcomes and Slays Nepotianus, and seizes Italy (c.p) and Africa (sc)
352		Constantius beats Magnentius near Mursa in Pannonia (c.p)
353		He beats Magnentius twice in Gaul Aug. 11 [3] Magnentius Kills Himself in Lyons: and Constantius becomes Sole Monarch of both the Empires (c.p.v)
354		Julian [4] Studies at Athens with Nazianzen and Basil
355		Nov. 13, Augustin called Austin, B (c) v. 354 (p)
359		Ammitanus, the Historian, is in the Persian War
361		Julian Rebels in Gaul, and marches to Thrace Nov. 3, Constantius Dies in Cilicia, Æ. 46 (sc.c) [5] And
		Julian

e. Calvisius. p. Petavius. sc. Socrates Scholasticus. v. Valisius.

[1] So Dupin, tho Petavius says that Prosper sets his Birth in 330.

[2] He was Son to Eutropia, Daughter to Constantius Chlorus (p. v)

[3] So p and v from Idatius; tho Socrates says Aug. 15 (sc)

[4] He was Son to Julius, Son to Constantius Chlorus (hr)

[5] He leaves an unborn Daughter; after Married to the Emperor Gratian, but left no Issue.

No	Y.C	Eastern Emperors	Reigns
2	162	Julian	Reigns 1 Y, 7 m, 22 d (c. o. p) He is an Apostate to Heathenism, and Persecutes the Christians, Prohibiting their Schools, &c. (c. 1) June 26. He is Slain in Battle with Constantine the Great. (c. 1) [6] And
3	364	Jovian	A Pannonian, (c. 1) June 27. Chose by the Army, R. 7 m, 22 d (c. p) Feb. 17. (c. 1) or 19. (p) Jovian D by the Emperor of Characoth in Galatta, &c. 34 (c. 1) A Pannonian, (c. 1) Feb. 25. Chose by the Army, R. over the whole 34 d, and then in the West only, 7 m, 18 d. He making his Brother
4	365	Valens	Apr. 1, Emperor in the East, R. 14 m, 2 d (c. 1) Theon, the Astronomer, Flourishes Hilary, Bp of Poitiers, (c. 1) 367. (c. 1) Theodosius the Roman General, Repells the Picts and Scots who had invaded Britain. Basil made Bishop of Casarea in Cappadocia (c. 1) 370. (p) The Jerusalem Talmud Finished by Johanan
5	371	Valens	Athanasius Dies (c. p) Gallazar, an Arian Bp, translates the Bible into Gothick, &c. Amrose, a Civil Officer, chose by the People Bp of Milan & Baptiz'd 3 d after (c. 1) 375 Epiphanius a Bp in Cyprus, writes of Heresies of Valentinian D, with a sudden Fit of Anger, &c. 55. and his Sons GRATIAN and VALENTINIAN II Reign in the West (c. 1)
6	373	Valens	
7	374	Valens	
8	375	Valens	

[6] And, in Him the Imperial Line of Constantine the Great and of Constantine Chlorus Ends.
[7] They were the Sons of One Gratian, a Roper by Trade (hr) dit Dupin.

N Y C	Eastern Emperors		Western
376		They divide the Western Empire	
378	Jan 12	Jan 1. Basil D. (c) 378 (p)	
379	IMHOUS	Aug 29 (p) or 30 (c) Valens beat by the	
379	Theodosius	of Galla, flying wounded into a Cottage in Thrace, is Burnt to Death	
379	Theodosius	and his Nephew	
379	Theodosius	Rules the Eastern Empire	
379	Theodosius	Nazianzen made Bishop of Constantinople	
379	Theodosius	or in Nov 379	
379	Theodosius	Janu 16, Gratian makes his General	
379	Theodosius	College in the Empire	
381	Theodosius	Reigns in the East	
381	Theodosius	In May, The General Council meets at Constantinople	
381	Theodosius	When Nazianzen Resigns	
383	Theodosius	his Bishopric he returns to private life	
383	Theodosius	Austrian Ec 29, preaches a Sermon at Rome	
383	Theodosius	MAXIMUS the Roman General drives the	
383	Theodosius	Scots out of Britain into Scandia	
383	Theodosius	where they keep 20000000 for Emperor and	
383	Theodosius	passes into Gaul	
383	Theodosius	Aug 25. He kills Gratian, Ec 25 & Pope	
383	Theodosius	splits Britain, Gaul, Spain and Africa	
387	Theodosius	Maximus Marches to Italy, and Valentinian	
387	Theodosius	flies by Sea to Thessalonica	
388	Theodosius	In July, Ec 53, becomes a Christian	
388	Theodosius	July 29, Theodosius beats Maximus near the	
388	Theodosius	Alps (c) 29, Ec 27, Maximus Killed at	
388	Theodosius	Aquila (c) 29, Ec 27, Theodosius Restores the	
388	Theodosius	Western Empire to Valentinian.	

[8] GRATIAN taking Britain, Germany, Gaul and Spain; and VALENTINIAN Italy, Illyricum, Sicily and Africa (c)

[9] - He was call'd Theodosius the Great, and was Son to Theodosius the Roman General in Britain. (c)

[10] It consisted of but 150 bishops, of Pastors of Churches, Condemn'd Macdonius and his Opinions, and asserts the Deity of the HOLY GHOST (c. p.)

N. Y. C.	Eastern Emperors	
289		May 9, <i>Nazianzen Dies</i> (c. p)
492		May 15, <i>Valentinian Æt. 27</i> , Strangled at <i>Thessalonica</i> by the Intrigue of <i>EUGENIUS</i> , who
395		Assumes the Western Empire (sc. c. p. v) [11]
394		This was the <i>Last Olympiad</i> observ'd in <i>Greece</i>
		<i>Sulpitius Severus</i> embraces Christianity.
		Sept 6, <i>Theodosius</i> Bears and Kills <i>Eugenius</i>
		near <i>Aquileia</i> , and Recovers the Western
		Empire (c. p)
395		Jan. 17, He D at <i>Milan</i> Æt. 61 (sc. c. p) and
S	Arcadius	by Will; his Sons
		Æt. 18, (p) R in the East 13 Y, 3 m, 1 d
		and <i>HONORIUS</i> , Æt. 11 (p) in the West
		12 S Y, 6 m, (c)
		<i>Austin</i> Ordain'd Bishop of <i>Hippo</i> , in <i>Africa</i>
		<i>Jerom</i> Turns the <i>Hebrew Bible</i> into <i>Latin</i> .
397		Apr 4, <i>Ambrrose</i> D; Æt. 64 (c. p)
398		Jan. 26, (c) or Feb: 26 (sc. p) <i>Chryso- stom</i>
		Ordained Bishop of <i>Constantinople</i> .
400		The <i>Goths</i> under <i>Alaricus</i> Brake into <i>Dalmatia</i>
		and <i>Pannonia</i> .
		<i>Sulpitius Severus</i> Writes his History, From
		the Creation to this Year.
		V. CENTURY.
401		Apr. 10, <i>Theodosius II</i> Born to <i>Arcadius</i> (sc. c. p)
		and Baptiz'd by <i>Chryso- stom</i> .
		<i>Alaricus</i> brakes into <i>Noricum</i> & <i>Italy</i> .
402		<i>Stilicho</i> [12] Beats <i>Alaricus</i> back to <i>Illyricum</i>
		<i>Epiphanius</i> , Bishop in <i>Cyprus</i> , Dies (c. v)
404		June 20. <i>Chryso- stom</i> Banish'd by <i>Arcadius</i>
		into <i>Cilicia</i> (sc. c. p)

Pelagius

[11] He was of obscure Birth, and from a Grammar School-master became a Scribe and Treasurer to *Valentinian* (c)

[12] He was a *Pandal* by Birth (p) But chief Minister of State, and General to *Honorius* (c)

Y.C	Eastern Emperors	
405		<i>Pelagius</i> grows noted for his Errors [13]
406		<i>Radagaisus</i> leads 200 thousand <i>Seythians</i> and other Barbarians into <i>Italy</i> : <i>Bud Stilicho</i> Slays 100 thousand with <i>Radagaisus</i> , & the Rest Surrender (c. p)
407		Dec 31, <i>Godigisilus</i> leads the <i>Vandals</i> & other Barbarians to the <i>Rhine</i> (c. p)
408	Theodosius	They miserably wast the bordering Countries The Roman Soldiers in <i>Britain</i> mutiny, and chuse one <i>Constantin</i> Emperor [14] who going over to <i>Gaul</i> , the Soldiers there Receive Him also (c. p)
409		Sept. 14 (v) or Nov. 14, <i>Chrysoptom</i> Æt 53, D in Exile, near the <i>Euxine</i> Sea (sc. c. p)
410		May 1, <i>Arcadius</i> Æt 31, Dies at <i>Constantinople</i> (sc. c. p) and his Son
411		The II, R 42 Y, 2 m, 28 d (c. p)
412		The <i>Vandals</i> march into the West and South Parts of <i>Gaul</i> , and wast them.
413		Aug. 23, <i>Honorius</i> Beheads <i>Stilicho</i> : & Oct. 15, The <i>Vandals</i> March for <i>Spain</i> , & seize it.
414		<i>Alaricus</i> marches into <i>Italy</i> , & besieges <i>Rome</i>
415		Aug. 24, By Stratagem He takes the City, compells the Citizens to Renounce <i>Honorius</i> , and Retires.
416		<i>Alaricus</i> Returns to <i>Rome</i> , & Besieges it again
417		Apr. 1, He takes the City, gives it 3 Days to the Plunder of his Army: and then lays wast the Rest of <i>Italy</i> (c. p)
418		<i>Alaricus</i> Dies in <i>Italy</i> , and the <i>Goths</i> chuse <i>Ataulphus</i> King.
419		<i>Constantin</i> Overcome & taken by <i>Constantius</i> [15] in <i>Gaul</i> , & put to D at <i>Ravenna</i> (c. p)
420		The

[13] *Petavius* says He was a *Scotsman*; *Heard* says a *Welshman*.

[14] He was one of mean Degree, and Chosen Emperor, for the Name sake only (c. p)

[15] An *Illyrican* by Birth and General to *Honorius* (c. p)

N^o. Y. C.

- The Scots, under Fergus, Return from Scandia to Britain
 Athaulphus, quits Italy, & seizes the Southern Part, of Gaul
 412 Oct. 18 (sc. c) Cyril made Bishop of Alexandria (c. p)
 415 Athaulphus quitting Gaul, Goes into Spain, & is Kill'd (c. p)
 416 Two Councils in Africa Condemn Pelagius (c. p)
 Honorius Gives Wallia King of the Goths Part of Spain, on
 condition of Warring against the Vandals.
 417 Wallia beats them in many Battles, and Honorius Gives
 Him the Western Part of Gaul also.
 418 Apr. 24. Pharamond chose Duke of the Franes in Franconia
 and July 23, He takes the Title of King [16]
 419 July 2, Valentiny III Born. [17]
 420 Ferom Dies, and Buried at Bethlehem (c. p)
 423 Theodoret chosen Bishop of Cyrus in Syria (c. p)
 Aug. 15, Honorius Dies at Rome, Et. 59, & his Secretary
 JOHN assumes his Empire (sc. c. p)
 425 In Feb. John seiz'd & put to Death at Ravenna (c. p)
 Oct. 15, (c) or 23 (p) Theodosius makes VALENTINI-
 AN III Emperor of the West, who R 29 Y, 5 m.
 427 In May, the Vandals under Gensericus quitting Spain,
 with 80000 ppls to Africa & seize Mauritania (c. p)
 429 The City of Venice Founded.
 430 Aug. 28, Austin D at Hippo, besieg'd by the Vandals (c. p)
 431 Jun 22, the III General Council meets at Ephesus (sc. c. p) [18]
 435 Feb. 11. Valentiny, by Treaty yeilds Numidia to the
 Vandals.
 Feb. 25. Theodosius Publishes his Code of Laws [19]
 439 Socrates and Sozomen here end their Histories (sc. c)
 Oct. 20. (c) or 29 (p) Gensericus takes Carthage.
 442 Attila K of the Huns wasteth Thracia, Macedonia & Greece
 44 He returns to Scythia with 120 thousand Captives.
 444 Apr. 9 (c) or Jun 9 (p) Cyril of Alexandria Dies.

Prosper

[16] He is the 17 of the Franes who wears the Title of King (c)
 [17] Son to Constantius the Roman General by Placidia's Daughter to
 Theodosius the Great (sc. c. p)
 [18] It had above 200 Bishops, and Condemns Nestorius (c. p)
 [19] It contains a Collection of all the Usual Laws from Constantine
 the Great (c)

Y.C	Eastern Emperors	
445		<i>Proper</i> here Ends his Chronicle
447		<i>Meroveus</i> Begins to Reign over the <i>Franks</i> , & was their 1st K. who subdu'd part of <i>Gaul</i>
448		<i>Theodofius</i> adds [to his Code, The <i>Novella</i> . The <i>Britons</i> haraſs'd by the <i>Piſts</i> and <i>Scots</i> , ſend to the <i>Saxons</i> for Aid.
449		<i>Meroveus</i> ſeizes the <i>North Eaſtern Part</i> of <i>Gaul</i> . <i>Hengiſt</i> and <i>Horſa</i> , Brothers, Transport the <i>Saxons</i> in 3 Ships to <i>Britain</i> .
450		Aug. 1. <i>Theodofius</i> , Thrown from his Horſe a Hunting, Dies (c. p) and Aug. 25 (v)
451	Marcianus	A <i>Thracian</i> R. 6 Y, 6 m. (eg. c. p. v) [20]
451		<i>Attila</i> with 700 thousand Men, waſteth <i>Germany</i> & enters <i>Gaul</i> (c) But Sept. 27. (p) the <i>Romans</i> & <i>Goths</i> under <i>Ætius</i> & <i>Theudoric</i> beat Him; when <i>Theudoric</i> with 180 thousand on both ſides were ſlain in Battle. and 90 thousand Dye of their Wounds [21]
452		Oct. 8. The IV General Council meets at <i>Chalcedon</i> (c p) [22]
452		<i>Hengiſt</i> makes Peace with the <i>Piſts</i> , and falls on the <i>Britons</i> .
455		<i>Attila</i> driven by <i>Thorifmund</i> King of the <i>Goths</i> into <i>Scythia</i> , Dies.
454		<i>Valentinian</i> Kills his General <i>Ætius</i> (c. v)
455		Mar. 17. <i>MAXIMUS</i> Kills <i>Valentinian</i> , [23] and ſets up for Emperor of the <i>Weſt</i> (c. p)
		Up on

eg. *Evagrius*.

[20] *Pulcheria* Siſter of *Theodofius* II, a Virgin, *Æt.* 52, took Him for Her Husband, & advanc'd Him to the Empire, though a Man of low Deſcent.

[21] This Battle was Fought near *Chalons* in *Gaul*: and *Ferrarius* makes the Slain 180 thousand; *Petavius* ſays, *Jornandes* reckons, 170 thousand; and *Idrius*, 300 thousand.

[22] It had 630 Biſhops or Paſtors, & Condemns *Eutyches* & his Errors (eg. c. p)

[23] And in Him the Imperial Line of *Theodofius* the Great, Ends.



N	Y	C	Eastern Emperors	
				Upon which <i>Genferic</i> sails from <i>Africa</i> : <i>Yun.</i> comes to <i>Rome</i> & Kills <i>Maximus</i> : <i>Yun.</i> Enters the City, spoils it for 14 d, and Returns (c. p.)
				<i>July</i> . 10, The Roman Soldiers in <i>Gaul</i> make <i>AVITUS</i> Emperor of the <i>West</i> (c. p. v)
456				<i>May</i> 17. He is forc'd to Relign (sg. c.) <i>Portimer</i> , a British King, Kills <i>Horsa</i> and forces <i>Hengist</i> back to <i>Saxony</i> .
457				<i>Jan.</i> 26 <i>Marcianus</i> Dies (c. p. v) and <i>ATHRACIAN</i> Crown'd; <i>Feb</i> 7 (v) <i>R</i> 17 Y (eg. 4)
			Leo I.	<i>MAJORANUS</i> sent by <i>Leo</i> , Crown'd <i>Apr</i> at <i>Ravenna</i> <i>R</i> 4 Y, 4 m (c. p. v)
				<i>Hengist</i> Returns to <i>Britain</i> , takes the <i>Kingd</i> <i>Kent</i> , which he transmits to his Posterity
461				<i>Aug.</i> 2, <i>Majoranus</i> Depos'd, and <i>Aug.</i> 7 Kill'd by his General <i>Ricimer</i> (c. p.)
				<i>Nov.</i> 19, <i>SEVERUS</i> Declar'd Emperor of the <i>West</i> , Reigns 3 Y, 9 m (c. p.)
465				<i>Aug.</i> 15. <i>Severus</i> D (c. p.) by Poyson (p. & the Senate send to <i>Leo</i> for another.
466				<i>Proster</i> of <i>Acquitain</i> Dies.
467				<i>ANTHEMIUS</i> , sent by <i>Leo</i> , Crown'd <i>Apr.</i> 12, (Reigns 5 Y, 3 m (eg. 6 p))
472				<i>Ricimer</i> Rises against <i>Anthemius</i> ; <i>July</i> 11, Kills Him, and sets up <i>OLYBRIUS</i> , who R 3 m, 12 d (c. p.) [24]
				<i>Aug.</i> 18, <i>Ricimer</i> . & <i>Oct.</i> 23, <i>Olybrius</i> D (c. p.)
473				<i>Mar.</i> 5, <i>GLYCERIUS</i> Crown'd at <i>Ravenna</i> , Reigns 1 Y, 3 m, 19 d (c. p.)
474				In <i>Jan.</i> (p) <i>Leo</i> Dies (eg. c. p.) and Intant Son of <i>Zeno</i> by <i>Ariadne</i> Daughter to <i>Le</i> and <i>Verina</i> (eg. c. p) Reigns 3 m.
			Leo II.	<i>Leo</i> II D, <i>Æt.</i> 1 Y, 6 m: and his Father <i>Zeno</i>

[24] Tho' *Calvisius* & *Petavius* agree both in the b & e of the R of *OLYBRIUS*: yet *Calvisius* plainly mistakes in making his Reign 3 m, 23 d

Y.C	Eastern Emperors	
475	Zeno	An <i>Isaurian</i> , Reigns 17 Y, 3 m (eg c) NEPOS sent by Leo I, deposes <i>Glycerius</i> , and June 24 is Crown'd Imp. of the West (c p)
475		<i>Childeric</i> King of the <i>Francs</i> Begins to Beat the <i>Romans</i> out of <i>Gaul</i> . <i>Nepos</i> makes <i>Orestes</i> a <i>Gov</i> his Colleague : Aug. 28, He deposes <i>Nepos</i> at <i>Ravenna</i> : Oct. 31, He makes his Son <i>Momyllus</i> Emperor of the West (c. p) [25]
476	Basiliscus	Brother to <i>Verina</i> (eg) Drives <i>Zeno</i> into <i>Isauria</i> (c. p & R 1 Y, 6 m (c) 2 Y (eg) [26] <i>Odoacer</i> King of the <i>Heruli</i> comes into <i>Italy</i> , and takes <i>Orestes</i> : Aug. 23, is Proclaim'd King of <i>Italy</i> : Aug. 28, Kills <i>Orestes</i> : Sept. 4, Banishes <i>Momyllus</i> : and Entering <i>Rome</i> ; Puts an END to the WESTERN EMPIRE (c. p)
		Sect. II. To the Revival of the <i>Western Empire</i> .
477	(Zeno)	<i>Childeric</i> wins a great Part of <i>Gaul</i> . More <i>Saxons</i> Go into <i>Britain</i> under <i>Ellia</i> . Recovers the <i>Eastern Empire</i> , and <i>Basiliscus</i> Starv'd to Death (eg. c. p)
479		The <i>Lombards</i> , so call'd for their long Beards, (c. p) from <i>Scandia</i> , take <i>Pomerania</i> , & keep it 40 Y.
480		May. 9; <i>Nepos</i> , late Emperor, Kill'd (c. p) by his Officers.
481		<i>Vortigern</i> , a <i>British King</i> , drove into a Tower and Burnt, by his own People [1]

H 2

Clovis

[25] For his low Stature, He is call'd *Augustulus* (c) and *Evagrius* call
Him *Komulus* (eg)[26] And all the while, *Zeno* and his Wife *Ariadne* live only on Roots,
Herbs and Water (c. p)[1] *Calvisius*, by Mistak; calls Him *Vortimer*.

N	Y.C	Eastern Emperors	
486			Clouis King of the <i>Franks</i> , extends his Kingdom in <i>Gaul</i> (c. p) & puts an End to the Roman Power There.
490			Theodoric, King of the <i>Goths</i> in <i>Moesia</i> [2] marches to <i>Italy</i> , & beats <i>Odoacer</i> in 3 Battles.
491			Zeno Dies [3] and his Wife raises & Marries
15		Anasthlias	A <i>Grecian</i> below the Senatorian Order: Apr. 9, Crown'd; R 27 Y, 3 m, 3 d (eg 4)
492			Ella Begins the <i>South Saxon Km</i> in <i>Britain</i>
493			Theodoric Kills <i>Odoacer</i> , and seizes the Kingdom of <i>Italy</i> (c. p)
494			Pope <i>Gelasius</i> calls a Council of 70 Bishops in which He asserts his Primacy over all Churches
495			<i>Cerdic</i> , a <i>Saxon</i> , Sails to <i>Britain</i> with 3 Ships, and Beats the <i>Britons</i> .
500			Theodoric Enters <i>Rome</i> in Great Splendor.
VI. CENTURY.			
506			Feb. 2, <i>Alaric</i> , King of the <i>Goths</i> in <i>Gaul</i> , and <i>Spain</i> (c. p) Publishes his Abridgment of the <i>Theodosian Code</i> .
			The <i>Babylonian Talmud</i> , Collected by <i>Rabbi Aser</i> , Published.
507			Clouis Beats and Kills <i>Alaric</i> , & takes Part of his Kingdom (c. p) [4]
514			<i>Cassiodorus</i> , Sole Consul of <i>Rome</i> .
518			<i>Proclus</i> , the Mathematician, Flourishes. July 9, (c) <i>Anasthlias D</i> , Æt. 88 (p) [5] and <i>Justin</i>

[2] These were called, *Ostro-Goths*, or *Eastern Goths*; those in *Gaul* and *Spain*, were called *Visti-Goths*, or *Western Goths* (c. p)

[3] He came to Life in the Tomb: whence his dolorous Cries were heard: But his Wife Forbidding to open it, He Dies for Hunger, having gnaw'd the Flesh of his Arms to the Bone (c)

[4] Upon *Alaric's* Death, his Son succeeds to the Km in *Spain* only, and *Theodoric* takes the *South Eastern Part* of *Gaul* (c. p)

[5] He is Killed by *Liebtine*, in an exceeding strong Building, contrived by *Proclus* to secure Him from it (c. p)

N. Y. O.	Eastern Emperors	
61	Justin	Set up by the Guards (eg. c) R 9 Y, 23 d [6] Arthur Begins to Reign in Britain 24 Years
519		Cerdic Begins the West Saxon Kingdom
526		May 29, a Great Earthquake at Antioch, (eg. c. p.) wherein 300 thousand Perish w/ Theodoric puts Boethius to Death; & D. (c. p.) Priscian Flourishes at Constantinople.
		The Lombards seize Pannonia (c. p.) and stay 42 Years.
527		Dionysius Exiguus Begins to Reckon the Years from the Birth of CHRIST [7]
		Apr. 1, Justin makes his Sister's Son, Just- inian, Colleague (c. p.)
		Aug 1, Justin D. (eg. c. p) Æt. 77 (p.) and Æt. 45 (p) R. 58 Y, 3 m, 12 d.
17	Justinian	The Franks subdue Thuringia (c) or 528 (p)
529		Feb. 7, Justinian Publishes his Code of Laws.
		The Franks subdue Burgundia (i)
533		In Nov, Belisarius Beats the Vandals in Africa, and Takes Carthage (c. p.)
		In Nov, Justinian Publishes his Institutions, and in Dec. his Digesta [8]
534		Belisarius Finishing the War in Africa, puts an end to the Vandal Kingdom, and car- ries their King to Constantinople (c. p.)
535		Belisarius Reduces Sicily (c. p.)
536		Evagrius Scholasticus Dies in Syria (eg. v.) Belisarius Reduces the Eastern Part of Italy; and Dec. 10, Enters Rome. (c. p.)
		Vitiges

[6] He was a Thracian of the meanest Birth, being in his Youth a Swineherd (c) and could not Write his name (p)

[7] Dionysius was a Scythian by Descent, & Plac'd the Birth of CHRIST 2 or 3 or 4 Years too late, as is generally now agreed.

[8] The Digesta are a Collection; and the Institutions, an Abridgment of the Roman Laws which had been made for 1200 Y past (c)

N [Y.C.]

- 537 *Vitiges* King of the *Goths* in *Italy*, Quits the *Gothic* Part of *Gaul* to the *Franks*; Hence called *France*.
- 538 The *Goths* & *Burgundians* take *Milan*, & Kill 300 thousand People [9]
- 540 *Belisarius* takes *Ravenna* with *Vitiges*; and call'd to Repel the *Persians*, carries Him to *Constantinople* (c.)
- 541 The last Election of CONSULS at *Rome*.
Belisarius Ravages *Assyria*.
- 542 So Great a Plague at *Constantinople*; that 10 thousand Dye in 1 day [10]
- 547 Jan. 17, *Totilas* King of the *Goths* in *Italy*, takes *Rome*.
Fate *Belisarius* Returning, Enters and Defends it
and Beats Him away.
- Ida*, the *Saxon*, Begins the Kingdom of *Northumberland*.
- 549 *Belisarius* Recall'd to Repel the *Persians*.
- 550 *Totilas* Besieges and takes *Rome* again.
The *Slavi* under *Lechus* Seize on *Poland*, & Begin the Kingdom.
- 552 July 9, The *Armenians* Begin their *Æra* [11]
- 553 May 1, The V General Council meets at *Constantinople* [12]
Narses sent to *Italy*, Beats *Totilas*, Wounds Him to Death
and by the end of *July*, Recovers *Rome* and almost
all *Italy*. (c. p.) [13]
- 554 In Feb. *Teias*, the last King of the *Goths* in *Italy*,
Overcome and Slain.
- 556 *Narses* Finishing the War in *Italy*, Puts an End to the
Gothic Kingdom There.

Belisarius

- [9] By the Wars in *Italy*, the *Fields* lay untill'd, and so great a *Famine* follow'd, that in *Picenum* 50 thousand Men Perish'd, the *Women* Eat their *Children*, 2 *Women* Kill'd 17 *Men* and Eat them (c)
- [10] *Evagrius* says, This *Plague* spread over the *World*, lasted 52 Years, and in a manner Destroyed the whole *Earth* (ex)
- [11] Their *Years* are exactly in the Form of *Nabouasser's*, which they observe to this d (c)
- [12] It had above 150 *Bishops*; and Condemns the *Erronious* Writings of *Theodorus*, *Theodoret* and *Ibas* (eg. c. p. v)
- [13] *Narses* was by Descent a *Persian*, and an *Eunuch*, but a Great Commander (p)

Y.C.	Eastern Emperors	
563		<i>Belisarius Dies in Honour [14]</i>
565		Nov. 13. (c) or 14. (p) <i>Justinian Dies, Æt. 84, (br) and his Sister's Son</i>
565	Justin II.	Reigns 12 Y, 10 m, 22 d.
567		<i>Justin sends Longinus, the 1st EXARCH, to Ravenna.</i>
568		<i>Alboin King of the Lombards leaves Pannonia, and seizes the North of Italy (c. p.)</i>
569		Sept. 3, (c) He marches into the Western Part (c. p.)
570		May 5, MAHOMET Born; Lives 63 Y.
571		<i>Alboin subduing the Western Part of Italy, is Proclaimed King of Italy.</i>
578		Sept. 26, <i>Justin makes Tiberius, a Thracian, his Colleague (c. p. v)</i>
579	Tiberius	Oct. 5, <i>Justin Dies (c. v) and Reigns alone 3 Y, 10 m, 9 d (eg. c. p)</i>
580		<i>Gildas, the British Historian, Flourishes.</i>
582		Aug. 13, <i>Tiberius Marries his Daughter to Mauricius a Roman, & makes Him Colleague (eg. c. p)</i>
582	Mauricius	Aug. 14, <i>Tiberius Dies (c. p.) and Reigns 20 Y, 3 m, 9 d.</i>
588		<i>An Earthquake destroys 60 thousand more at Antioch.</i>
590		<i>A Council in France Declares the Lord's Day to Begin at Evening.</i>
593		<i>Evagrius Writes his History this Year [15]</i>
595		<i>John, Bishop of Constantinople, Assumes the Title of Universal Bishop.</i>
596		<i>Pope Gregory sends Austin, a Monk, to Britain, to Christianize the Saxons (c. p)</i>
597		Dec. 25. He and his Companions Baptize <i>Edelbert King of Kent, & 10 thousand of his Subjects.</i>

VII. CEN.

[14] The Story of his Blindness and Begging, is a Fiction of the Papists, to Punish Him for the Power H. exercised over their Pousiffs (c.)

[15] In the 12 Year of Mauricius (eg) which is between Aug. 14 this Year and Aug. 14. next (c. p. v)

No	Y.C	Emperors
		Eastern

VII. CENTURY.

21	602	Phocas	A Centurion set up by the Army; Nov 23 Install'd at Constantinople: Nov. 27, Kill Mauricius's Sons before his Eyes, at Chalcedon, & then cuts off his Head (p)
	604		May 26, Austin the Monk, D in Britain (c. sm)
	606		Feb. 6, Boniface III, Chose Pope, calls a Council of 72 Bishops; who Decree, that not the Patriarch of Constantinople, but the Roman Pontiff shall be stiled Universal Bp
22	610	Heracilius	The Roman Governor in Africa (c. br.) in July (c) Sails to Constantinople, Bears and takes Phocas: Oct. 3 (p) cuts off his Head, and R 30 Y, 7 m, 8 d.
	611		Constantin Born to Heracilius.
	614		Deus Dedit chosen Pope (c) who 1st Forbids Parents to Answer for their Children at Baptism (c. br)
	615		The Persians take Jerusalem, & Kill 90 thousand People (c) or in June, 614 (p)
	622		July 15, at Sunset, Mahomet Flies out of Mecca: Whence the Arabian, Hegira or Era Begins (c p) [16]
	628		The Persians Restore all to the Grecians (c. p)
	630		Clotair King of France overcomes the Westphalians and Frisians.
	631		June 17 (c) Mahomet Dies, Æt 63 (c. p)
	632		June 16 The Saracens Beat and Slay the Persian King Izdegird: whence the Persian Era Begins [17]

Aug.

sm Sammes Britannia.

[16] July 15 at Stouset is the Beginning of Fryday July 16 according to the Oriental Reckoning: And these Arabian Years are Lunar, or 12 Months; whereof the Odd have 30 d, the Even 29; 354 in all.

[17] The Years are of the same sort with Nabonasser's: and the Persian still make it the Head of their Civil Computations (c)

Y C	Eastern Emperors	
634		Aug. 23, The Saracens take Damascus.
635		They invade Egypt.
636		They take JERUSALEM [18] & Antioch.
639		They take Edessa and all Mesopotamia.
641	Constantin	May 11. Heraclius Dies: and his Son By his 1st Wife, Reigns 4 m (c p) In Sept, his Mother in Law Martina Poysons Him and makes her Son
644	Heracleon	Emperor: who Reigns 6 m. The Saracens take Casarea, in Palestine.
642		In Feb, the Senate depose Heracleon, cut off his Nose & his Mothers Tongue (c.p) & set up
643	Constans	Constantin's Son: who Reigns 27 Y (c p) The Schavi, under Zechus seize Bohemia.
645		With 1700 Sail, the Saracens take Cyprus.
648		They take Rhodes.
653		This Summer Constans Kill'd in a Bath at Syracuse: (c.p) and his Son
668	Constantin	Pogonatus, Reigns 17 Y (c.p) The Saracens take 80 thousand Captives out of Africa.
670		Beda, the British Historian Born.
680		Nov 7, The VI General Council opens at Con- stantinople, & holds to Sept. following [19]
685	Justinian	In Sept, (c) Constantin D (c.p) and his Son II, Æt. 16, Reigns.
694	(Leontius)	Deposes Him, cuts off his Nose, sends Him into Banishment, and Reigns 3 Y.
697		The Saracens drive the Romans out of all Africa: Upon which the Army sets up
711	(Absimarus)	Who Sails to Constantinople, takes Leontius, cuts off his Nose, shuts Him up in a Mo- nastery, and Reigns 7 Y. (c. p)

Absima-

[18] Which continues in their hands 463 Y to Y C 1099, when God-
frey of Bulloign retakes it (c)

[19] It has 150 Bps, (c) and Condemns the Monothelites (c.p)

No	Y.C	Eastern Emperors	
	698		<i>Abfmarus</i> watteth Syria, & Kills 200 thousand Saracens.
VIII. CENTURY.			
	703	(Justinian II,	Takes <i>Constantinople</i> , Recovers the Empire and hangs <i>Abfmarus</i> .
	704		<i>Aripertus</i> K of <i>Lombardy</i> , Gives the <i>Cottian Alps</i> which is the 1st Province Given to the Pope
	711		In May the Saracens under <i>Taric</i> land at <i>Gibraltar</i> [20] beat <i>Roderic's</i> Army in 2 Battles
			In Dec, The Army on the <i>Euxine</i> Sea set up
50		Philippicus	Who Sails to <i>Constantinople</i> , Kills <i>Justinian</i> with his Son, (c p) & Reigns 1 Y, 6 m: And thus the Imperial Line of <i>Heraclius</i> ends
	712		The Saracens take several Cities in <i>Spain</i> .
	713		June 3. An Officer privily digs out <i>Philippicus's</i> Eyes (c. p) and
31		Artemius	June 4, Begins to Reign (c. p)
			Sept. 10, The Saracens, after 7 Days Fight Slay King <i>Roderic</i> , and seize his Kingdom
	714		The Army, in <i>Phenicia</i> , set up <i>Theodosius</i> , a Collector of Taxes (c.p) & a Man of mean Extract (br) & Besiege <i>Constantinople</i> 6 m
32	715	Theodosius	Takes the City, with <i>Artemius</i> , shaves & sends Him into a <i>Monastery</i> :
33	716	Leo III	An <i>Isaurian</i> Capt. (c) of obscure Birth (p) Set up by the Army in <i>Armenia</i> ; Mar. 25 <i>Theodosius</i> abdicates, & with his Son, Retires into a <i>Monastery</i> ; & Leo R. 25 Y, 2 m, 24 d
	718		In Dec, <i>Constantine</i> Born to Leo.
	726		The Saracens breaking into <i>France</i> , <i>Charley Martel</i> Beats, and in one Battle Kills 370 thousand (c) or 375 thousand (p) [21]
			In.

[20] Which is a corruption of *Gebel Taric*, i.e. The *Mounts* of *Taric* (c)
 [21] He was the FRENCH GENERAL, the *Bastard* Son of *Pepin*.

A. D.	Eastern Emperors	
727		<i>Ina</i> , K of the <i>West Saxons</i> goes to <i>Rome</i> , & makes his Kingdom Tributary to the Pope [22]
730		Jan. 7, <i>Leo</i> issues out an Edict against <i>Images</i> (p)
731		<i>Beda</i> , Æt 59. Finishes his <i>Hist. of the English</i> (c p)
734		<i>Beda</i> Dies on Ascension Day, May 6 [23]
741		June 18, <i>Leo</i> Dies (c. p) and his Son
54	Constantin	Reigns 34 Y, 2 m, 27 d, (c. p)
51	(Artavasdas)	June 27, He marches against the <i>Saracens</i> ; and Who had Married his Sister, Sets up at Constantinople.
742		<i>Charles the Great</i> Born to <i>Pepin</i> , Son of <i>Charles Martel</i> .
743	(Constantin)	In Sept, <i>Constantin</i> Besieges Constantinople.
744		Nov. 2, Takes it, & Puts out <i>Artavasdas</i> Eyes
744		The <i>Hunns</i> seize on <i>Transylvania</i> .
750		Jan. 25, <i>Leo</i> Born to <i>Constantin</i> (c. p)
752		Pope <i>Zachary</i> Deposits <i>Childeric</i> K of <i>France</i> , Orders Him into a <i>Monastery</i> , Releases <i>Pepin</i> of his Oath, & Assigns Him the Km (c. p) [24]
		<i>Aistulphus</i> King of <i>Lombardy</i> takes <i>Ravenna</i> and puts an End to the <i>Exarchate</i> in <i>Italy</i> , which had lasted 182 Y.
754		Feb. 10 (c) a General Council meets at Constantinople, (c. p), & holds to Aug 8. (c) [25]
755		<i>Pepin</i> makes <i>Aistulphus</i> yeild to the Pope all the Places He had taken from the <i>Exarch</i> .
		<i>Froiola</i> ,

[22] Every House was to Pay a Roman Penny (i.e. seven pence half-penny) a Year: Thence called Peter Pence (c)

[23] *Petrivius* says, on Ascension d next Y, May 6, (p) But Ascension d next Y being May 26, *Calvisius* seems to be Right.

[24] *Childeric* was the last of the *Merovean* Line: and *Pepin* was his chief Minister of State and General (c. p)

[25] It has 338 Bps, condemns *Images*, (c. p) and the Eastern Churches call it the VII General Council: tho' the Worshipers of *Images* won't allow it (c)

No	Y C	Eastern Emperors	
	759		Froila, a Gothic King in Spain, beats the Saracens, and Slays 52 thousand in one Battle.
	766		Organs first bro't to France from Constantinople. Aug 17. Constantin makes an Edict to Dissolve the Monasteries in Europe
	767		Another, for Dissolving those in Asia,
	768		Sept. 24, Papin Dies; and his Son Charles Reigns (c. p) [26]
	771		Jan. 14 (p) Constantin Born to Leo (c. p)
	774		Charles Takes Desiderius King of Lombardy, puts an end to the Kingdom, adds it to his own & carries the King to France.
	775		H. subdues Westphalia and Frisia. Sept. 14, Constantin D (c. p.) and his Son Æt 26 (p) Reigns 5 Years, 6 Days
36	Leo IV		Charles subdues the Saxons as far as the Elbe
	780		Sept. 6 (c) or 8 (p) Leo Dies, and his Son With his Widow Irene R. together 10 Y, 1 m
37	Constantin		Charles subdues Bavaria. Sept. 24, a General Council meets at Nice (c. p) and continues to Oct. 13. (p) [27]
	787		The Danes 1st come to the South of Britain in 3 Ships, and waste the Sea-Coasts.
	790		Charles wasteth the Sea-Coasts of Spain, and drives the Saracens out of several Places (In Octob, Irene Depos'd (c. p)
	791		Charles beats the Hungarians as far as the River Raab.

[26] His Brother Charlemain R with him: but D in 771, without Heir Male, and leave the whole to Charles surnam'd the Great (c. p)

[27] It has 350 Bps, (p) Restores the Worship of Images, (c. p) tho' not with Divine Honour (c) and the Papists call this the VII General Council.

Eastern	
Y.C	Emperors
790	In Aug, <i>Constantin</i> puts out his Uncles <i>Nicephorus</i> (c.p) and <i>Christopher's</i> Eyes (c) <i>Syncellus</i> Writes his <i>Chronology</i> .
793	<i>Alphonfus</i> a Gothic King of <i>Spain</i> , Rebels against the <i>Saracens</i> , Slays 70 thousand, and tices Himself.
794	The <i>Danes</i> a 2d time waste the South of <i>Britain</i>
795	A Great Council at <i>Francfort</i> (c. p) [28] <i>Teudunus</i> King of the <i>Hunns</i> yields Himself and his to <i>Charles</i> .
797	<i>Irene</i> Aug. 19, (c) Orders her Son <i>Constantin's</i> Eyes to be Dug out, who Dies a few days after (c. p) and then Killing <i>Nicephorus</i> and <i>Christopher</i> , she Reigns alone [29]
800	Nov. 24, <i>Charles</i> enters <i>Rome</i> : Dec. 25, Pope <i>Leo</i> Crowns Him EMPEROR of the WEST (c p) which the People approve with loud Acclamations . About the same time EGBERT Begins to Reign over the <i>West Saxons</i> ; who subdues the <i>Rest</i> , and becomes the 1st Monarch of ENGLAND .

[28] It has 300 Bps, besides Abbots, &c. from all Parts of *Charlet's* Dominions (c) and condemns the *Worship of Images* (c.p)

[29] They were her Husband's Brothers : And thus the Race of *Leo*, the *Isaurian*, Ends.

VII. and Last Period.

THE Chronology of the ENGLISH Monarchs
 From the Revival of the Western Empire by
 CHARLES the Great of France, and b of the R of
 EGBERT, 1st Supream K of England in the Y C 800
 to the D of Q. ELIZABETH, and b of the R of
 JAMES, the First Monarch of Great Britain, in 1603;
 Being 802 Years, 3 Months.

Having passed thro' the most busy and confus'd Period the
 World has known, we are now arriving at a more settled State
 of things, Especially in the *West of Europe*. And the End of the
 Y C 800, seems to be one of the most remarkable *Points of Time*
 in History, on these 2 accounts, (1) The Revival of the *Western*
 Empire in CHARLES the Great of France, Crown'd Empe-
 ror of the *West at Rome*, on Dec. 25 this Y: (2) The b of the
 R of EGBERT the Great, as *Rapin* calls him, about the same
 Time ascending the Throne of *Wessex* *; who in the course
 of 28 Y conquers the 5 other Saxon Kingdoms in the South
 Part of *Britain*, and becomes the 1st Supreme K of *England*.

The *Eastern* Empire indeed continues 652 Y, 5 m longer.
 But as this is dwindling away by degrees, and both the Powers
 and Transactions in the *West of Europe* grow more considera-
 ble, as well as more nearly affect us, and the Successions of the
 Monarchs both of the *Franks* and *English* are pretty certainly
 adjust'd; we shall therefore thise the Scene of our Chronology
 from the *Eastern* to the *Western* Parts of the Ancient Roman
 Empire.

* *Wessex*, or the *West Saxon* Km, then contain'd that Part of *England*
 excepting *Kent* and *Cornwall*, which lies on the *South* side of the
Thames: the Km of *Sussex* having been subdu'd and incorporated in-
 to *Wessex* by K *Ina* in Y C 722. (*Matthew of Westminster*)

quire, and annex it to the Lines of the Kings of England. And inasmuch as our Introduction is thus drawn out to an unexpected Length, and our *English* Histories are in the Hands of many; I shall therefore spare my Readers here, and give them little more than as accurate a *List*, as I am at present able to compose, of our *own Monarchs*.

But there offers a material *Difficulty* at the very Head of the present Period, which I must apply myself to solve, as I have met with none that have attempted it before me. It concerns the b of the R of *Egbert*. For (1) Some place it in the *T C 800*; as *Ethelwerd*, *Malmsbury*, *Huntingdon*; *Hoveden* †; and from them the following Moderns, *Polydore Virgil*, *Pantheon*, *Sir H. Savil* ‡, *Glouer* and *Mills*, *Mundy*, *Speed*, *Helvius*, *Isaacson*, *Alsted*, *Boxhornius*, *Fuller*, *Milton*, *Whitlock*, the *Radices* at the End of *Littleton* and *Cambridg* Dictionaries, *Tallent*, *Eachard*, *Rapin*; and so *Baker*, *Howell*, *Pointer* and *Salmon* seem to imply. (2) Some, in *801*; as *Harrison*, and *Justinied*, *Calvisius*, *Perizonius*, *Hubner* and *Anderson*. (3) Others in *802*; as *M* of *Westminster*, || *Stow*, *Howes*, *Daniel*, and *Tyrel*. *Hoveden* says, Some b the R of *Egbert* in *802*; and *Tyrel* says that *Affer*, S of *Durham* and the Bp of *Litchfield* are of the same Opinion.

To clear this matter, I (1) Observe that *Rapin* tells us, When *Egbert* was chosen K of *Wessex*, he was at *ROME* with *CHARLES* the Great, who was soon after invested with the Imperial Crown; and There he took his leave of that Great Prince, &c. Tho' whence *Rapin* had this Intelligence, I shou'd be glad to find. (2) *Liechtenaw*, *Cario**, *Calvisius* and *Ricciolius* inform us, that *Charles* the Great, travelling from *France*, enter'd *Rome* Nov. 24, 800; was crown'd Emperor there Dec 25, and *Liechtenaw* and *Calvisius* tell us, he left that City on Apr 24, following.

B)

† *Hoveden* says, *Anno Gratia 800, vel ut Quidam volunt 802.*

‡ In his *Fasti Rerum Angliae*, &c.

|| And yet *M* of *Westminster* t to the D of *Egbert* in 837, after a R of 37 Y, 7 m, which raises the b to 800.

* In his *Chronicon*, chiefly made by *Meletanion* and *Peuccr*.

By this it seems (1) That Egbert set out with Charles from France some time in *October* or *November*, and that Britic of *Wessex* was then alive. (2) That between Nov 24, and Dec 25, Egbert not only heard at *Rome* of his Election, but also set out thence for *England*. (3) We must therefore place his Election about *November*; and the b of his actual R about the same time with the b of Charles's Empire. Or however, to define *This* Period more precisely — From the e of the *Last* to the e of *This*; i. e. From the Imperial Coronation of Charles at *Rome* to the D of *Q Elizabeth*, the *Last* mere Monarch of *England*, and b of the R of *James*, the *First* of *Great Britain*, is exactly 802 Y 3 m.

Sect. I. To the Discovery of the NEW WORLD by Columbus in 1492.

Having compar'd above 30 noted Lists and Histories of our Kings, both in *English* and *Latin*, I found so many Inconsistencies and Mistakes among them, especially in the Years before the *Norman* Conquest; that I was forc'd to lay by all the late Historians, and betake myself intirely to those more Ancient and Original Authors *Ethelwerd*, *Ingulphus*, *Malmsbury*, *Huntingdon*, *Hoveden*, *M* of *Westminster*, and *R* of *Chester*; who are the only old Writers on that former Part of the Period I can hear of in this Country: the 6 First in *Latin*, the last translated out of that Language into *English* by *Trevisa* in 1357, as *Trevisa* and *Caxton* tell us. And as I have carefully perus'd them; I shall draw the following List intirely from them as far as they go: Excepting, where they are wanting in the precise Notes of Time; I shall then take out of *Holinshed*, *Stow*, *Speed*, *Tyrrel*, *Eachard*, *Rapin*, or any other wherever I find them.

N. B. Wherever I use the Words *Elect*, *Elected*, *Chuse* or *Chosen*; they are so Express'd in the Original Authors cited.

N.Y.C.

I. The WEST SAXON Line.

- 800 EGBERT, Descended from *Cerdic*, b to R. over *Wessex* (*e m bn.bv*) Reigns after *Charles's* Coronation 37 Y, 1 m, 10 d. [1]
- 809 He reduces *Cornwal* and adds it to his Kingdom (*w*)
- 814 (i. e. 813, 14) Jan. 28. CHARLES the Great D (*c.p*)
Æt 71 (*p*) and his Son LEWIS R. (*c.p*)
- 824 Egber. subdues the Kms of *Kent* and *Essex*, and adds them to his own (*e.m.bn.bv*) and the Km of the *East-Angles* submits to his Protection (*e.bn.bv*)
- 827 He makes the Ks of *Mercia* and *Northumberland* his Vassals (*e bn bv*)
- 828 He makes the Ks of *Wales* his Tributaries (*e bn.bv*)
- 837 (i.e. 837, 8) He D (*e.m.bn.bv.w*) Feb 4 (*sp.ec*) In the Margin of *Malsbury*, we therefore read 838(m) & ETHELULPH, Son of Egbert (*e.m.bn.bv.w*) Reigns 19 Y, 11 m, 9 d.
- 838 The Scots extirpate the *Pictish* Nation (*pl b.c*)
- 840 June 20. LEWIS Emperor D: upon which his 3 Sons Divide the WESTERN EMPIRE; Charles the Youngest taking FRANCE; Lewis, GERMANY; and Lotharius the Eldest, ITALY, Burgundy and Lorrain, with the Imperial Dignity (*c.p*)
- 849 Alfred B to Ethelulph (*bv.w*)
- 857 (i.e. 857, 8) Ethelulph Dies (*e.m.w.*) Jan. 13; (*cb*) and
- 5 ETHELBALD, 1st surviving Son of Ethelulph (*e.w. cb*) R 2 Y, 11 m, 7 d, after the D of his Father [2]
- 861 He D (*e.w*) Dec. 20 (*sp.ec*) and

ETHEL-

[1] He was the 17th successive K of *Wessex*, tho' not in a direct Descent; and with a Q Dowager made Q Regent, he was the 18th successive Monarch. (*m.bn.bv.w*)

e. Ethelwerd m. Malsbury. bn. Huntingdon. hv. Hoveden. w. M of *Wessex*. in *ster.* c. *Calvisius.* p. *Petavius.* sp. *Speed.* ec. *Eachard.* pl. *Polydorus Vergilius.* h. *Buchanan.* cb. K of *Chester.*

[2] *Mare,* *Helvicus* and *Daniel* strangely omit him.

No Y C

- 4 ETHELBERT, 2d surviving Son of *Ethelulph* (*e.w.d*)
R 5 Y, (*e.m.bn.bv*)
- 866 He D (*e.bv.w*) i.e. at the end of 866. and
- 5 ETHELRED I, 3d surviving Son of *Ethelulph* (*e.w.d*)
R 5 Y, and a little more (*bn*)
- 872 He D (*e.i.m.bv*) Apr. 23 (*w.ch*) So that the R of
Ethelbert and *Ethelred* amount exactly to 10 Y
4 m, 3 d, and
- 6 ALFRED, 4th surviving Son of *Ethelulph* (*e.m.w.d*)
R 29 Y, 6 m, 5 d, tho' his Elder Brother's Son
Ethelwald was living all the while (*m.w*)
- 901 He D (*e.m.bn*) Oct. 26. (*e*) or rather *Wednesday* Oct
28. (*bu.w*) [3] and
- 7 EDWARD I, Son of *Alfred* (*e.m.bn.bv.w*) Elected
(*e.bv.w*) R 23 Y, (*m.bn.w*) Tho' his Father's
Elder Brother's Son *Ethelwald* was living, and
Claim'd the Crown (*m.w*)
- 924 He D (*m.w* and
(*Ethelward*) 1st Legitimate Son of *Edward* b to R
but D a few days after his Father (*m*) is by this
means left out of the Catalogue of Kings. and
- 8 ATHELSTAN, base Born Son of *Edward* (*m.w*) Æt 30
(*m*) Elected K (*m.bn.w*) while he had 3 Legiti-
mate Brothers living (*m.bv.w*) R 16 Y (*m.bv*)
- 940 He D (*m.bv.w*) Oct 27 (*bu.w*) [4] So that the R of
Edward & *Athelstan* amount exactly to 39 Y, and
- 9 EDMUND I, 2d Surviving and Legitimate Son of
Edward (*m.bv.w*) Æt 18 (*m.bv*) R 5 Y, 7 m (*bu*)
- 943 Edgar Born to King *Edmund* (*bu.w*)

K. Ed.

i. *Ingulphus*.

[3] *Hoveden* says, 899, *Indition* 4 : but *Indit.* 4, is 901. & *Westminst.*
says, *Wednesday* Oct. 28, 900, *Indit.* 5 : but *Wednesday* Oct. 28, b
in 901, *Indit.* 4.

[4] *Hoveden*, by mistake calls this *Wednesday* Oct. 27. *Indit.* 14 ;
when Oct. 27 this Y is *Tuesday* and *Indit.* 13 with the Latins ; tho'
14 with the Greeks.

QYC1

- 946 K Edmund kill'd in a Fray (*m.bv.w*) Tuesday May 26 (*e.i.m.bn.bv.w*) and EDRED, 3d Surviving and Legitimate Son of Edward (*m.bv.w*) R 9 Y, 6m, (*e.m*) [5]
- 955 He D (*m.bv.w*) Nov. 23 (*e*) without Issue, (*ch*) and EDWIN, 1st Son of Edmund (*m.bn.bv.w.cb*) R 4 Y (*e.m.bn.w*) or rather 3 Y, 9 m (*bv*)
- 957 He is renounc'd by the Northern Half of the Km, which Elects his younger Br Edgar K (*bv.w.cb*)
- 959 Edwin Dies (*m.bv.w*) and EDGAR, 2d Son of Edmund (*m.bn.bv.w.cb*) Æt 16 (*m.bv.cb*) Elected K over the whole (*bv.w*) R near 16 Y (*m*)
- 975 He D (*i.m.bv.w*) Thursday July 8 (*e.bv*) Æt 52 (*i.bv*) So that the R of Edwin and Edgar amount exactly to 19 Y, 7 m, 15 d. And here Ethelwerd ends his History (*e*) and EDWARD II, 1st Son of Edgar (*i.m.w*) after a great strife Elected K (*bv.w*) R 3 Y, 8 m, 10 d.
- 978 (*i.e.* 978,9) He is kill'd (*bv.w*) by his Stepmother (*m.bv.w*) March 18 (*tr.tn*) Malmshury therefore says 979 (*m*) [6] and
- 984 ETHELRED II, 2d Son of Edgar (*m.w*) Æt 11 (*m.cb*) R 37 Y, 1 m, 5 d. [7]
- 987 The Nobles of France Reject the Race of CHARLES the Great, and chuse Hugh Capet, Earl of Paris, King; from whom the Kings of France have since Descended. (*c.p*)
- 1013 Swane K of Denmark Lands in Kent (*bn.bv.w.*) in July

[5] Huntingdon says Edmund I, and Edred were Sons of Athelstan. (*hn*)

tr. Tyrrel. in. Tindal in the margin of *Rapin. r. Rapin.*

[6] The Monkish Writers call him Edward the Martyr, only because he was a Friend to their Superstitions (*r*) and March 18, from his Death, is call'd St Edward's Day. (*tn*)

[7] *i.e.* accounting to the d of his D; but to the Conquest of England by Swane, no more than 34 Y, 5 m.

No. Y C I

July (*bu.w*) Thence sails to the *Humber*, and conquers all the *North* and *West* of *England* (*m.bn.bu.w*)

In *Aug* (*m.w*) *Ethelred* quits *London*, flies to the *Ile* of *Wight*, and *Swane* is universally acknowledged K of *England* (*m.bn.bu.w*)

II. The DANISH Line begins.

1 SWANE, in *Aug.* conquers *England*, having no Relation to the *Crown* by *Blood*.

1014 (i.e. 10 3 14) Beginning of *Jan.* *Ethelred* flies from the *Ile* of *Wight* to *Normandy* (*m.bu.w*)

2 Feb 3. *Swane* Kill'd (*bu.w.cb*) i.e. 1013, 14. And CANUTE, Son of *Swane*, Elected K by the *Danes* (*m.bn.bu.w*) But the *English* send for (*Ethelred*) [8] who in *Lent* returns to *England* (*bu.cb*) drives *Canute* to *Denmark*, and resumes the *Crown*, (*m.bn.bu.w*)

1015 This *Summer* (*m*) *Canute* returns to *England*, Lands in *Kent*, and Recovers the *Southern* part of the *Kingdom* (*m.bn.bu.w*) [9]

1016 *Munday, Apr. 23, Ethelred Dies* at *London* (*bu.w.cb*) [10] and

15 [EDMUND, II] call'd *Ironside*, 1st Son of *Ethelred*, Elected (*ibn*) and Proclaimed K by the *Citizens*, (*m.w*) R 7 m, 7 d. But the rest of *England* Elected *Canute* their K, (*m.bu.w.cb*)

Oct. 18, is their last *Battle* (*w*) upon which they agree to divide the *Km*; *Edmund* taking the *Southern* Part and *Canute* the *Northern*, (*m.bu.w*)

Nov. 30. K Edmund Kill'd (*m.bu* [11]*w.cb*) and

(*Canute*)

[8] They send for and promise to stand by him, upon condition he would Rule better. (*m.bn.bu.w.cb*)

[9] *Hoveden* seems to Place *Canute's* Return between *Aug. 15*, & *Sep. 8.* (*bu*)

[10] *Malmesbury* by mistake says, *St. Gregory's* for *St. George's* d: and so *Holinsh.* observes.

[11] *Hoveden* mistakes in calling this the 15th *Indit*, when it is the 14th.

YCI

Canute) by the whole Km is Elected K (*bu*) while
 3 Sons of K *Ethelred* and 2 Sons of K *Edmund*
 are living (*m.bu.w*) R 18 Y, 11 m, 13 d, after
Edmund.

1035 Wednesday, Nov 12; *Canute* the Great D (*bu.w*) [12]
 and

HAROLD I, Bise Born Son of *Canute* (*w*) after a
 great strife (*cb*) Elected K (*i.m.bn.bu.w.cb*) Reigns
 4 Y, 4 m, 5 d.

1040 He Dies (*w.cb*) in April (*m*) 16 Kal Apr. (*tr* †)
 i.e. March 17 and

HARLICNUTE, a younger Son of *Canute* (*m.bn.bu.w.cb*) Elected K (*bn*) and the chief Men of the
 Km send for him beyond Sea (*bu,w.cb*) while se-
 veral of *Ethelred's* Offspring are living, (*m.bu.w*)
 R 2 Y, 2 m, 22 d.

1042 He Dies (*bu.cb.m* ||) Tuesday June 8 (*cb*) [13] and

III. The SAXON or ENGLISH Line Returns.

EDWARD III, the 3d Son of *Ethelred*, Elected King
 (*ibn*) while *Edward* Son of his Elder Brother K
Edmund, is living (*m.bu.w*) R 23 Y, 6 m, 27 d
 (*bu*) or rather 28 d. And he is styl'd by the Mon-
 kish Writers, *The Confessor*, for being addicted to
 their Superstitions.

1066 K *Edward* D (*ibn bu w*) Thursday Jan. 5 (*bn.bu.w.cb*) i.e. Jan. 5, 1065, 6. and

HAROLD

[12] He was K of *England, Denmark, Norway* (*i.m.bn.bu.w*) and part
 of *Sweden* (*i.m*) and a little before he D, made his Sons, *Swane* K
 of *Norway*, and *Hardicnute* K o *Denmark*. (*bu.w.cb*)

tr †. *Tyrol* from the *Saxon Annals*.

m †. i.e. *Malmshury* in his *Continuation of Bede*.

[13] *bu* by mistake says 6 Ides July, Tuesday; whereas 6 Ides July
 this Year is Saturday: He should therefore have said 6 Ides June,
 which is Tuesday June 8, as *Chester* has it.

No. Y. C. P.

- 2 HAROLD II, a Son of *Godwin* Earl of *Kent*, of the Relation to the Crown by Blood, Elected King R 9 m, 9 d, (*bu*) and the Lords made him K, (*cb*) while *Edgar Atheling* with his 2 Sisters, Children of *Edward* Son of King *Edmund II*, are living in *England*. (*m.bn.bu.cb*)
 Sept. 28, (*bl*) *William*, Base-born Son of *Robert Duke* of *Normandy*, neither of *Saxon* nor *Danish* Royal Blood, Lands near *Hastings* in *Suffex*; where he stays 15 d. (*m.w.cb*) Saturday Oct. 14, slays K. *Harold* there in Battle, and gains the Crown (*bn.bu.w.cb*) [14] and

IV. The NORMAN Line begins.

- 1 WILLIAM I, call'd sometimes the Conqueror and sometimes the Bastard, R 20 Y, 10 m, 28 d, (*bu.w*) or, more exactly 26 d.
 1067 *Edgar Atheling* goes into *Scotland*, marries his Sister *Margaret* to *Malcom* the K, (*bn.w.cb*) from whom the *Scotish* Kings descend. (*m.bn.bu.cb*)
 1085 Here *Ingulphus* Ends his History. (*i*)
 1087 *William I*, Dies (*m.bu.w.cb*) Sept. 9 (*bu.w*) Æt 59 (*m.cb*) [15] and
 2 WILLIAM II, call'd *Rufus*, 2d surviving Son of *William I*, succeeds, while his Elder Brother *Robert* is Living (*m.bn.bu.w.cb*) R 12 Y, 10 m, 23 d.
 1100 He is accidentally slain a Hunting (*m.bn.bu.w.cb*) Thursday, Aug. 2 (*m.bn.bu*) Æt 44. (*cb*) and
 3 HENRY I, the 3d surviving Son of *William I*, Elected K while his Elder Brother *Robert* is Living, (*m.bn.w.cb*) Æt 32 (*m.w.cb*)

Nov.

bl. Holinshed.

[14] *bu* says right, this Battle was on *Calixtus* d being Saturday, which is Oct. 14: but wrong in calling this 11 Cal. Nov. which is Oct. 21, and a *Lordsday*.

[15] *m* and *cb* mistake in saying he D in the 22d Year of his R.

Y.C.

- Nov. 11, he marries *Maud*, Daughter of *Malcom K* of the Scots by *Margaret* aboveſaid, and R 35 Y, 4 m. (*m*)
- 1135 He D (*m.bn.bv.w*) Dec 1. (*m.bn.bv*) [16] and STEPHEN, a younger Son of *Stephen* Earl of *Blots* a Norman (*m.bn.bv*) by *Adela* Daughter of *William I* (*m.bn.w*) accepted K (*m.bn*) while *Maud* Daughter of *Henry I*, is Living (*m.bn.bv.w.cb*) R 18 Y, 10 m, 24 d comprehending his 9 Months Captivity.
- 1141 Feb. 2 (i.e. 1140, 1) [17] K *Stephen* taken in Battle and carried to MAUD (*bn.bv.w.cb*) who is hereupon acknowledged Queen by the whole Kingdom excepting *Kent*. (*bn.bv.cb*)
- Nov. 1 K *Stephen* releas'd (*m.w*) Recovers the Kingdom (*bn.bv.w.cb*)
- 1143 Here *Malmsbury* ends his *History & Novella* (*m*)
- 1154 K *Stephen I* (*bn.bv.w*) Oct, 25 (*bn.w*) and Here *Huntingdon* ends his *History* (*bn*) [18] and

V. The FRENCH Line, or *Plantagenets* of the House of *Anjou*, Begins.

- HENRY II, a Son of *Geoffry Plantagenet* Earl of *Anjou* (*w.cb*) by Q *Maud*, Daughter of *Henry I* (*m.bn.w.cb*) Æt 22, (*bv.w*) R 34 Y, 8 m, 11 d. [19]
- 1171 Saturday, Oct. 16 (*bv*) he Sails from *Milford-Haven* for *Ireland*, (*bv.w.cb*) arrives at *Cork* the next day upon which all *Ireland* receive him for their Sovereign Lord (*bv*)

He

[16] By his Q he leaves only one Child, viz. *Maud*, to whose Succession all the chief Men of the Kingdom ſware, (*m.bn.bv.w.cb*) But *bn, bv, w*, miſtake in ſaying he Reign'd but 35 Years 3 months.

[17] *m* by miſtake ſays, Lordsday Feb. 2, 1142: For Lordsday Feb. 2, is 1140, 1.

[18] And yet *w* ſays, *Huntingdon* ended his *History* in 1135.

[19] He is the 1st K of *England* ſince *Edward the Confessor*, that hath any Royal *Saxon* Blood, having receiv'd it only from his Mother; tho' the Kings of *Scotland* are of Prior Birth.

No. Y. C. I.

- 1189 He D (*bu. w. ch.*) Thursday July 6 (*bu. w.*) and
2 RICHARD I, Eldest surviving Son of Henry II (*bu. w. ch.*) R 9 Y, 9 m.
- 1199 He D of a Wound receiv'd at a Siege in France
(*bu. w. ch. f.*) Tuesday Apr. 6 (*bu. ch.*) and
3 JOHN, Youngest Son of Henry II, Succeeds, who
Arthur Soa of his Elder Br Geoffry is Living (*bu. w. ch. f.*) R 17 Y, 6 m, 13 d.
- 1202 Here Hoveden Ends his *Annals.* (*bu.*)
- 1215 June 15, K John Grants the 1st *Magna Charta* of
England. *
- 1216 K John D (*w. f.*) Oct. 19 (*w. f.*) being Poyson'd by
Monk (*ch. f.*) and
4 HENRY III, Eldest Son to K John (*w. ch. f.*) Æt
(*ch. f.*) R 56 Y, 27 days.
- 1224 (i.e. 1224, 5) Feb. 10, the 9th Y of his R, he Grants
the present *Magna Charta.* [20]
- 1272 Nov 16, he D (*w. ch. f.*) Æt 65. (*w.*) and
5 EDWARD I, or rather IV, Eldest Son of Henry III
(*w. ch. f.*) R 34 Y, 7 m, 21 d. (*w.*)
- 1282 Leolin P of Wales Rebelling, is Kill'd in a Fight
(*w. ch. f.*) viz, Dec. 3 (*f.*)
- 1283 David Brother to Leolin Taken (*w. ch. f.*) June 24 (*f.*)
Drawn and Hang'd (*w. ch. f.*) about Octob. (*f.*) And
Wales wholly Subdu'd and Subjected to the English
Government. (*w. ch. f.*)
- 1305 Flavio of Amalfi near Naples, 1st discovers the Polar
virtue of the Loadstone, & applies it to Navigation (*f.*)
- 1307 Edward I. D (*w. ch. f.*) Fryday July 7 (*w. f.*) Æt 68
Years, 20 days. (*w.*)
- Here M of Westminster Ends his History. And
EDWARD

f. an old Manuscript of the 7th Part of *Fabian's Chronicle.*

* So the *Latin Charter*, in *Tyrrel.*

[20] So the *Latin Charter* in *Coke's Institutes*: In some things differing from the other, as they appear compar'd in *Tyrrel.*

f. *Scow.* bl. *Holinshed.* pl. *Polydorus Vergilius.*

NYC

- EDWARD II, surviving Son to *Edward I* (cbf) *Æt* 24 (w.f) R 19 Y, 6 m, 18 d.
- 1312 Nov. 13. Prince *Edward*, Born to King *Edward II*. (cb.bl.ft).
- 1326 (i.e. 1326,7) Tuesday *Jan. 13*. a Parliament at *Westminster* agree to Depose him (cb.f.bl)
- Jan. 25, They actually Renounce him (f.bl.ft) and raise his Son
- 1 EDWARD III, *Æt* 15, to the Throne (cb.f.pl) R 50 Y, 4 m, 28 d (bl)
- Sept. 21, *Edward II*. D in Prison (cb.f) by a violent Death (f.bl.ft) *Æt* 43 (pl)
- 1344 *Macham*, an *Englishman*, Sailing from *England* for *Spain*, driven out of his Court, 1st Discovers the *Isle of Madera* (g)
- 1357 Here *Chester* ends his *Chronicle* (cb) and *Caxton* carries it on to 1460. (cx)
- 1376 Lordiday, *June 8*, the famous *Black Prince*, eldest Son to *K Edward III*, Dies (f.bl.ft) *Æt* 46 (pl.bl)
- Thursday, Feb. 19, 1376,7, *John Wickliff*, the 1st English Reformer, brought before the Bishops in *Paul's Church, London* (ft) and silenc'd (bl)
- 1377 *June 22*, *Edward III*, Dies (f) *Æt* 65 (pl.bl.ft) and
- 8 RICHARD II, Son of the *Black Prince*, *Æt* 11 (cx.f.pl)
- Reigns 22 Years, 3 months, 8 days (f)
- 1380 GUNS 1st used by the *Venetians*; the Nature of the Powder being before accidentally discover'd by a *German Chymist* (pl.p) viz *Berthold Schwartz* a Monk (c.a) [21]
- 1382 *Wickliff* finishes his Translation of the *BIBLE* into *English* (f)

Dec.

g. Galvanus. cx.Caxton. p.Petavius. c.Calvisius. a.Asted. ft.Fuller.
 [21] *Alitea* says, *Froissard* makes mention of *Guns* in 1340; and that in 1380, *Schwartz* Publishes the Manner of using them. And *Calvisius* says, *Mariana* Describes the *Moor* in *Spain* as using *Guns* in 1342.

No|Y C|

- 1384 Dec. 31, *John Wickliff*, Parson of *Lutterworth* Dies there (f)
- 1395 The *Spaniards* 1st Discover & Settle the *Canaries* (g)
- 1399 The Parliament depose *Richard II* (ex.f.bl.f) Tuesday Sept 30 (fbl) and chuse for King (ex.bl.f)
- 9 HENRY IV, Son to the Duke of *Lancaster*, 3d Son of *Edward III*, While the Heirs of the Duke of *Clarence* the 2d Son are living (ex.f) R 13 Y, 5 m, 21 d (f) or rather 20 d (f)
- 1400 (i.e. 1399,400) *Richard II*, Kill'd in Prison (ex.f) Æt 33 (pl) March 12 bro'r, Dead, to London (ex.f)
- 1412 (i.e. 1412,13) *Henry IV*; Dies (ex.f) March 20 (f.bl.f) Æt 46 (pl.bl.f) and
- 10 HENRY V, Æt 26 (gd) Son of *Henry IV*, succeeds while the Senior Heirs of the Duke of *Clarence* are Living (ex.f) R 9 Y, 5 m, 10 d (f) or rather 11 d
- 1415 The Coasts of *Africa*, not being known beyond *Cape Non*, in 29 Degrees North Latitude; the *Portugals* discover *Cape Bajador* 3 Degrees farther (g)
- 1419 June 11, *Henry V*, marries the *French K's* Daughter, and is made Regent & Heir of that Km (ex.f) [22]
- 1422 In Aug. *Henry V*, Dies (ex) Aug. 31 (f.bl.f) Æt 36 (ex.pl) and
- 11 HENRY VI, only Son of *Henry V*, Æt 8 m, 23 days, succeeds (ex.f) R 38 Y, 6 m, 4 d (f)
- 1428 LAWRENCE COSTER at *Haerlem* in *Holland*, Begins to PRINT * from Letters at first cut on *Wooden Tables*, then in *Lead*, and then in *Tin* (bj)
- 1431 Dec. 7, *Henry VI*, Crown'd K of *France* in *Paris* (ex.f.f)
- 1440 At Christmas *John Faustus*, Servant to *COSTER*, Runs away with his Master's PRINTING-TOOLS

10

[22] *Cayton & Fabian* say, *Trinity Sunday*, in the 7th Year of *Henry V*, which is *June 11*, 1419. *Holinshed* and *Stow* say, the Day after *Trinity Sunday*, in the 8th Y of *Henry V*, which is *June 3*, 1420.

* From the *Inscription* I saw over his Door at *Haerlem*.

gd. *Goodwin*. bj. *Hadrian Junius* in *Boetornia*.

1441

to *Mentz*; where he Practices the Art, and claims the Honour of its Invention. (*hj*)

1441 *Gonsales and Tristan, Portugese*, discover the Coasts of *Africa* as far as *Cape Blanco* (*g*)

1442 *Faustus* first Prints a Book at *Mentz* (*hj.br*) with *COSTER's* Types (*hj*)

1446 *John Guttenberg of Strafsburg* contrives the Art (i.e. the present Way) of **PRINTING**, removes to *Mentz*, and here compleats it (*cn*) *Faustus* being assistant to him (*a*)

Denis Fernandes Esq; of *Lisbon*, 1st Discovers the River *Senega* a Mouth of the *Niger*, and the famous *Cape De Verde* in *Africa* (*g*)

1449 The *Portugese* 1st Possess the *Azores* (*g*)

1450 *Faustus* 1st Prints a Book at *Mentz* with *Copper* and *Leaden* Types (*ma*) [23]

1453 *May 29, Tuesday*, the *Turkish* Monarch *Mahomet* takes *Constantinople* (*c.p*) and puts an end to the *Greek Eastern* Empire.

1460 (i.e. 1460, 1) *March 2* (*st*) the Lords meet and Depose *Henry VI*, and Elect

12 **EDWARD IV**, Eldest Son to *Richard Duke of York*, for King (*cx.f.bl.st*) *Æt* 18 (*st*)

March 4, They Proclaim him **K** (*cx.f.bl.st*) Reigns 22 Years, 1 month, 5 days (*f*) and

Here *Caxton* ends his *Chronicle* (*cx*)

1462 *De Noli* a *Genoese* sails from *Portugal*, and 1st discovers the *Cape De Verde Islands* (*g*)

1467 *Oct 28*, **ERASMUS** Born at *Rotterdam* in *Holland* (*c*)
Off.

br. Bertius in *Alsted*. *cn* the Continuator of *Licthenaw*. *ma. Mariangelus* in *Boxhornio*.

[23] *Mariangelus* ascribes the Invention of *Copper* and *Leaden* Types to *Faustus*: The *Colonian Annalist* ascribes the present way of **PRINTING** (i.e. by separate Letters) to *Guttenberg*: and they both, with *Cluverus* agree on the 1st Printing of a Book therewith, in 1450. (See *Cluverus* and *Boxhornio*)

No|Y C|†

- 1470 Oct. 3 (jt) Edward IV, Flies to Flanders, and Saturday, Oct. 13;
(Henry VI) Deliver'd out of the Tower, and admitted King again (f ft)
Nov. 26, † A Parliament meets at Westminster, and K Edward Proclaim'd Usurper (f.bl)
- 1471 (i.e. 1470, 1) March 14 (bl) Edward IV, Lands in the North of England (f.bl.ft)
(Edward IV) Apr. 11 ‡ comes to London, takes K Henry & gain (f.bl.ft) & sends him to the Tower (ft) where he is Kill'd, the night after May 21 (ft) & the next day his Corps expos'd in Paul's Church, London (f.ft.)
This Year, Desaren and Descouar discover Guinea for the King of Portugal (g)
- 1472 Seguiria Discovers Prince's Island near the Equinoctial, and St. Thomas's Island under it, with the western Coast of Ethiopia as far as Cape Catharine. He is the first that passes the Line (g)
- 1483 Apr. 9, Edward IV, Dies (f pl bl.ft) Æt 42 (ft.) † 50 (pl) and his Eldest Son
- 13 EDWARD V, Æt 13 (f.bl.ft) bears the Name of King 2 months, 11 days (f)
Wednesday, June 18, some of the chief of the Nobility and Commons set up for K, his Father's youngest Brother Richard; who takes the Royal Style and Power in Westminster-Hall on Thursday June 19 (f.bl.ft) and Fryday June 20, is Proclaimed King (f) [24] by the Name of
- RICHARD

† Polydore also says Nov. 26; but wrongly sets it in 1471.

‡ f says, Sheresburesday, which is Maundy Thursday (M. nshew) and this Y, April 11, and pl says Apr. 11, but wrongly places it in 1472.

|| f says on Ascension Eve, May 22, which is Right: bl also says Ascension Eve, but his Margin is wrong, in calling this May 29, and consequently in Placing the Death of K Henry on May 23.

† Sir T. More, in bl, and ft, says Æt 53: But Stow corrects him, and says it should be 42.

[24] f calls Thursday, June 20, and Fryday, 21: and ft in the margin calls Wednesday, June 22, and Thursday 25; whence other Historians follow their mistakes; when Wednesday this Year is June 18, &c.

YCI

- RICHARD III, and R 2 Y, 2 m, 1 d (*bl. ff*) or rather 2. d (*f*) soon after which, Edward V, with his only Brother Richard are Kill'd in the Tower (*f pl. bl. ff*)
 Nov. 10, LUTHER Born at Eysleben in Saxony (*fl. c*)
 1484 Diego Caon Knight sails to the River Congo, and discovers the Shores of Africa to the Tropick of Capricorn (*q*)
 1485 Aug. 22, K Richard Slain in Battle by Henry Tudor Earl of Richmond; who thereupon is Proclaim'd K in the Field (*f. bl. ff*) † R 23 Y, 8 m (*ff*) And Here the Manuscript of Fabian's Chronicle Ends,

VI. The WELCH Line, or Line of Tudors.

- HENRY VII, Off. 30, Crown'd at Westminster (*bl. ff*)
 Nov. 7, a Parliamenc of his Calling, Meets (*bl. ff*)
 Attaints the late K Richard, and settles the Crown on K Henry VII, and his Heirs (*bl*) [25]
 1485 (i.e. 1485, 6) Jan 18, He marries Elizabeth the eldest Daughter of K Edward IV (*bl. ff*)
 1486 Aug. Bartholomew Diaz, Sails from Portugal, 1st Discovers the famous Cape of Good Hope, the Southernmost Point of Africa, & returns in Dec. 1487 (*ps*)
 Sept. 20 (*gm sp*) Arthur Eldest Son to K Henry Born (*bl. ff*) [26]
 1487 (i.e. 1487, 8) Jan 1, ZUINGLIUS B in Switzerland (*ff*)
 1489 Nov. 29, Margaret, Eldest Daughter to K Henry, B (*sp*)
 1491 June 22, Henry, 2d Son to K Henry, Born, afterwards King Henry VIII (*bl. ff*)

Scct. II

* *St. Sleidan. c. Calvinus.*

† *pl.* says also, Aug. 22; but wrongly places it in 1486.

[25] His only Relation to the Crown is by his Mother, Granddaughter to John Beaufort, a Base-born Son of John a Gaunt.

ps. Purchase. *gm.* Glover & Milles. *sp.* Speca. *fl.* Fidler.

* [26] In one Place, *bl* sets his Birth in the 2d Y of Henry VII; In another Place he sets it in the 3d Y, which seems more likely.

Sect. II. *To the Discovery of NEW-ENGLAND, and Death of Q ELIZABETH*

The united Continents of Asia, Africa and Europe, have been the only Stage of History, from the CREATION to the Year 1492. We are now to turn our Eyes to the West, and see a NEW WORLD appearing in the Atlantick Ocean to the great Surprise and Entertainment of the other. CHRISTOPHER COLUMBUS or Colonus, a Genoese is the 1st Discoverer. Being a skilful Geographer and Navigator, and of a very curious Mind. He becomes possess'd, with a strong Perswasion, that in order to Ballance the Terraqueous Globe & Proportion the Seas and Land to each other, there must needs be form'd a mighty Continent on the other Side, which Boldness, Art and Resolution would soon Discover. He 1st proposes his undertaking to the Genoese, and then to John King of Portugal; but being deny'd, He applies to Ferdinand and Isabella King and Queen of Spain, who after 5 Tears urging, are at last prevail'd upon to furnish him with 3 Ships and 90 Men * for this great Enterprize; which through the growing Opposition of his fearful Mariners, he at length accomplishes, to his own immortal Fame, and the infinite Advantage of innumerable others. And as we are now Bound for this Western World, I shall chiefly fill our final Section with the principal and gradual Discoveries and Plantations there, till we 1st Discover the North Eastern Part we now call NEW-ENGLAND: with the most material Hints of the Rise and Progress of that Reform'd Religion, which at length Produc'd its present Settlement.

N. B. We still begin with the famous Julian Year, viz. with Jan. 1, which I think the whole Christian World observes, except the South Part of Britain.

* Herera says 90 Men; but Galvanus says 120.

Cf K of England Henry VII K of Spain Ferdinand.

1492 Fryday, Aug. 3, † Columbus sails from Palos in Spain: Calls at the Canaries: (g.b) Thursday, Sept. 6, Sails thence Westward: Sept 14, 1st observes the Variation of the Compass: At 10 in the Evening between Oct. 11 and 12, he descries a Lighe: At 2 next Morning, Roderic Triana 1st Discovers Land; (b) [1] being Guanabani, (g.b) one of the Islands of the New World, call'd Lucayoes: (b) where Columbus goes ashore and calls it St Salvador (g.b) being 2¹/₂ out 25 Deg. North Latitude (g) Saturday Oct. 27, Discovers Cuba. Dec. 6, arrives at Bobio, which he calls Hispaniola (b) where he builds a Fort and leaves 38 men (g) or 39, (b)

1493 Wednesday, Jan. 16, he sails from Hispaniola: Saturday, Feb. 18, arrives at St Mary's, one of the Azores: Munday, March 4, at the River of Lisbon; and Fryday March 15, at Palos. (b)

Bartholomew Diaz sails from Portugal, 1st Passes the Cape of Good Hope, and sails to the ancient Etbiofia. (pr)

Wednesday, Sept. 25, ‡ Columbus sails from Cadiz in Spain: Lordsday, Nov 3, Discovers one of the Caribbees, which he calls Dominica: next day sails Northward to another, which he calls Marigalante: next day to another, which he calls Guadelupe: Nov. 10, Discovers another, which he calls Monserrat: then another, which he calls Antigua (b) and 50 more to the Northwestward (at) with Boriquen, now call'd Porto Rico: (g.b) Fryday, 22, arrives at Hispaniola. (b)

1494 Thursday, Apr. 24, He sails for Cuba: Apr. 29, descries it: sails along the Southern Shore, and spies Jamaica: Munday, May 14, arrives there: Returns to Cuba and Hispaniola (b)

March,

† Harris and the Atlas Geographus mistake in saying Aug. 2.

‡ Galvanus. b. Herera.

[1] Galvanus says, They Discover Land on Oct. 10. and perhaps Herera might mistake, from the Seamen's method; who set down at Noon, Oct. 11, all the Events of the 24 Hours preceeding, and give 'em the Date of Oct. 11.

pr. Perler. at Atlas Geographus.

† Galvanus mistakes in saying Oct. 25.

Y.C. | K of England Henry VII | K of Spain Ferdinand

1496 | March, 10, Columbus sails for Spain; and June
arrives at Cadiz (b)

This Spring *Jahn Cabota*, a Venetian, sails with 2 Ships from England, steers Westward: Discovers the Shore of the New World in 45 Degr. North Latitude: sails along the Coast Northward, to 60, and then Southward to 30. Some say to Cape Florida, in 25: and returns to England (g) [2]

1497 | Thursday, Feb. 16, Melancthon Born at Bretten, in the
Palatinate (c)

June 20, *Vasques Gama* sails from Lisbon Southward. Passes the Cape of Good Hope, 1st sails to the East Indies and returning by the same Cape, arrives at Lisbon in Sept. 1499 (g)

1498 | Wednesday, May 30, [3] Columbus sails from San Lucas

in Spain: July 31, Discovers an Island, (b) which he calls *Trinidad* (g.b) in 9 Degrees North Latitude: (g) Wednesday, Aug. 1, he 1st Discovers the CONTINENT (b) sails along the main-Coast Westward, (g.b) Discovers *Margarita* (h) and many other Islands (g.b) for 200 Leagues to *Cape Vela* (g) crosses over to *Hispaniola* (g.b) where, being seiz'd and sent Home in Chains by a new Spanish Governor, he arrives at *Cadiz*, Nov. 25. 1500 (b)

1499 | May 20, *Alonso Ojeda*, sails from St Mary's in Spain, with *John Cosa* as Pilot, and *Americus Vespucius* a Florentine, as Merchant: Steers Westward: In 27 days Discovers Land 200 Leagues East of *Trinidad* (about 5 Deg. North Lat) sails along the Coast Westward to *Cape Vela*. Thence arrives at *Hispaniola* Sept. 5: Thence sails to *Porto Rico*: and thence to Spain. (b)

Nov

[2] *Smith* says, that *John* carries his Son *Sebastian* with him, who afterwards proceeds in these Discoveries. Whence *Stow*, *Purchase*, *Harris*, the *Atlas*, and others, erroneously ascribe them all to *Sebastian* only. *Purchase* says, *Sebastian* in *Ramusio*, Places his 1st Voyage in 1496: tho' the Map under his Picture in the Privy Gallery, with *Camden*, in 1497, and so *Smith*. But *Stow* in 1498; unless the Voyage he mentions be another.

[3] *Galvanus* seems to mistake in placing this 3d Voyage of Columbus in 1497.

C K of England Henry VII. K of Spain Ferdinand.

Nov. 13 (g) *Vincent Tannez Pinson* sails from *Palos* in Spain, for the Southern Part of the New World: and passes the Equinoctial. (g.b)

1500 Feb. 26, (b) He Discovers *Cape Augustin* (g.b) in 8 Deg. South Lat. (g) Thence sailing along Northwesterly, Discovers the *River Amazons*, and the Coast and Rivers of *Brazile* to *Trinidad*: (g.b) Thence at the end of Sept (b) or Sept. 28 (g) arrives in Spain. (g.b)

Munday, March 9 (b) *Pedro Alvarez Cabral* sails from *Lisbon*, for the East Indies: (g.b) Steers so far Westward, as on Apr. 24 (b) he happens to Descry *Brazile* and enters a River there which he calls *Porto Seguro* (g.b) in 17 Deg. South Latitude: whence he crosses over to the *Cape of Good Hope* and pursues his Voyage (g)

Gaspar Corterial, by License of the K of Portugal, sails from *Tercera*, (g) Discovers the North Eastern Coast of the New World, in 50 Deg. North Latitude (g.b) from him call'd *Corterialis*, and returns home to *Lisbon*. (g)

1501 Jan. 6, *Roderic Bastidas* sails from *Cadiz* to *Cape Vela*: Discovers 100 (b) or 200 Leagues (g) Westward, all along the Coast at *St Martha*, *Cartagena*, the Gulf of *Darien*, and as far as the Port afterward call'd *Nombre de Dios*: then Sails to *Hispaniola*: (b) [4]

Soon after, *Alonso Ojeda* sets out on his 2d Voyage, and *Americus Vesputius* with him: Sail to the same Place after *Bastidas*, and so to *Hispaniola* (b) [5]

Lordsday, Nov. 14, Prince *Arthur* of England, Æt 15 (ft) or 16 (bl) marries at *London* to *Katharine*, Æt 18, Daughter to *Ferdinand* K of Spain (bl.ft) One great Occasion of the Reformation in England, as we shall see hereafter.

March

[4] *Galvants* places *Bastidas's* Voyage after *Ojeda's*, & both in 1502.

[5] Neither, *Hackluyt*, *Purchase*, *Harris* nor *Perrier* mention any Voyages of *Americus*. The *Atlas Geographus* gives us 2 from *Cryzeus*; the 1st in 1497, and the 2d in 1500: But *Herera* says, they were prov'd to be mere Impositions of *Americus*, and he only went twice with *Ojeda*.

Y.C. | K of England Henry VII | K of Spain Ferdinand

- 1502 | March 12 (gm) Apr. beginning (ft) Apr. 2 (sp) Prince Arthur Dies (bl.ft)
 May 9 (h.pr) Columbus sails from Cadiz to Hispaniola Thence to the Continent : Discovers the Bay of Honduras Lordsday, Aug. 14, Lands. (b) Thence sails along the main Shore Easterly 200 Leagues (g) to Cape Gracias Dios, Veragua, Porto Bello and the Gulf of Darien (g.b)
 This Y, *Sebastian Cabot* brings to K. Henry VII, 3 Men taken in the *Newfound Islands* (ft)
- 1503 | Jan. 6, Columbus enters the River Tebra in Veragua where he 1st begins a Settlement ; but soon breaks up, sails to Cuba, Jamaica, and Hispaniola. (b)
 Aug. 8 (ft) Margaret, eldest Daughter of Henry VII, marries at Edinburgh, to James IV, K of Scotland (bl.ft)
- 1504 | Sept. 12, Columbus sails from Hispaniola, arrives at San Lucar, and going to Sevil, finds Q Isabella Dead (b) She Dies Nov. 26, this Year, (c)
- 1506 | May 20 (h.at) [6] Columbus Dies (g.b) at Validolid in Spain : his Body carried over and buried in the Cathedral of St Domingo in Hispaniola : (b) and his Son James succeeds as Heir. (g.b.pr)
 K Ferdinand orders 2 Bishops for Hispaniola, and establishes the Tythes there for Support of the Clergy (b)
- 1507 | Americus Vesputius goes from Lisbon to Sevil, and K Ferdinand appoints him to draw Sea Charts, with the Title of Chief Pilot : Whence the NEW WORLD afterward unjustly takes the name of AMERICA (b)
- 1508 | John Diaz Solis and Vincent Tannez Pinson sail from Sevil to Cape Augustin, Discover the Coast of Brazil Southward (b) to 35 Deg. South Lat. where they find the Great River Paranaquazu, which they call Rio de Plata, or River of Silver (g) go on to 40 Deg. South Latitude, and return to Spain (b) [7]
- 1509 | Apr. 21 (pl) or rather 22, King Henry VII, Dies (bl.ft sp) Liv'd 52 Y (pl.ft) and his only surviving Son
 HENRY

[6] Galvanus says in Mar. 1506 : and Herrera, on Ascension day, May 20, this Year ; But May 20 this Year, is Ascension day Eve.

[7] Galvanus lets this Voyage in 1512.

C K of England Henry VIII. K of Spain Ferdinand.

HENRY VIII, Æt 18 (pl.bl.st) R 37 Y, 9 m, 6 d.

June 3, (bl.st) he marries his Brother Arthur's Widow,
by Pope Julius's Dispensation (pl.bl.st)

July 10, CALVIN Born at Noyon in France (bz)

Nov. 10, Alonso Ojeda sails from Hispaniola, and James
Nicuessá follows him, to settle the Continent: they Land
and meet at Cartagena; but are beaten off: & Ojeda begins
a Settlement at St Sebastian, on the East side of the Gulf
of Darien. (b) Nicuessá begins another at Nombre de Dios,
on the West side, (g.b) But are both soon broken up thro'
the Oppolition of the Natives (b) [8]

1510 John de Esquibel Sails from Hispaniola, and begins a
Settlement at Jamaica (b)

John Ponce begins to settle Porto Rico (h.at)

Fernandez de Enciso and Basco Nunnez, begin to
settle St Mary's at Darien (b)

1511 James Velasquez begins to settle Cuba (b)

1512 Thursday, March 3, (i.e. 1512, 13) John Ponce sails
from Porto Rico Northwards: April 2, Discovers the
CONTINENT in 30 Deg. 8 min. North Latitude, calls
it Florida, goes ashore, takes Possession: sails along the
Coast Southerly: Lordsday, May 8, Doubles the Cape
Thence sailing Southerly, Discovers the Babamaes, and re-
turns to Porto Rico (b)

1513 Basco (b) or Vasco (g) Nunnez, hearing a Rumour of
the SOUTH SEA; Sept. 1, sets out from Darien; (g.pr)
Sept. 25 (g.b) from the Top of a High Mountain (b) 1st
Discovers that Mighty Ocean: (g.b) Sept. 29, comes to it
(g) Embarks upon it, and Returns. (g.b)

1515 Gaspar Morales marches from Darien across the Land
to the South Sea, Discovers the Pearl Islands in the Bay
of St Michael's, in 5 Deg North Lat (g)

John Arias begins to People Panama on the South Sea,
and

bz. Beza in Vit Calv. at. Atlas Geographus.

[8] Galvanus place; these Attempts under 1508: and 'tis likely, this
was the Year when they set sail from Spain: and so Herrera seems to
make it.

Y C | K of *England* Henry VIII. K of *Spain* Charles

and Discovers 250 Leagues on the Coast to S Deg. 30 min. North Lat. (g)

Gonsales Ferdinandus Oviedus Discovers the Island of Bermudas. (ps)

The Complutensian Bible Published (c) at Antwerp (cr) which proves a Principal Instrument of the Reformation.

1516 Jan. 23, Ferdinand, K of Spain, Dies, & his Daughters Son Charles of Austria Reigns. (c.b)

Feb. 11. (ft) or 18 (hl) K Henry's Daughter Mary B[9]

Sir Sebastian Cabot and Sir Thomas Pert sail from England to the New World, and Coast the Continent the 2d Time to Brazile. (ps)

Feb. 8 (b) Francis Fernandes Cordova sails from Cuba and Discovers the Province of Tucatan (g.b) in 20 Deg North Lat. (g) and the Bay of Campechy. (b)

The Beginning of the REFORMATION.

1517 Oct. 31, (c) LUTHER, an Augustin Fryar (fl) sets up 95 Theses against the Pope's Indulgences, on the Church Door (c) at Wirtemberg in Saxony (fl) and begins the Reformation in Germany.

1518 Apr. 8, (b) John de Grisalva sails from Cuba to Tucatan, and Discovers the Southern Coast of the Bay of Mexico (g.b) with the Head of the Bay to St John de ulua, and 1st calls the Country NEW SPAIN. (b)

Francis Garay sails from Jamaica to Cape Florida, in 25 Deg. North Lat. [10] Discovers 500 Leagues Westward, on the Northern Coast of the Great Bay of Mexico to the River Panuco in 23 Deg. North Lat. (g) at the Bottom of the Bay.

1519 Jan. 12, MAXIMILIAN Emperor of Germany Dies; and June 28, CHARLES K of Spain chosen Emperor. (fl)

Be-

ps. Purchast. c. Calvisius. cr. Crowei Elenchus. fl. Sleidan.

[9] Both ft and hl Place it in the 7th Year of Henry VIII, which must be Feb. 1515, 16; but 1518 in the margin of hl is wrongly Printed.

[10] Herrera say, he only sends James de Comarga.

C1 K of England Henry VIII. K of Spain Charles.

Beginning of this Y, *Zuinglius* comes to *Zurich*; soon Preaches against the *Pope's Indulgences*, and begins the Reformation in *Switzerland*. (fl)

In Feb. (g) *Fernando Cortes* sails from *Cuba* to *Yucatan*, and then to *St John de ulua*: Whence *Francis de Martejo* and *Roderic Alvarez* sail Northward, and Discover the Coast to the River *Panuco*: Fryday, Apr 22. *Cortes* Lands and begins a Town, which he calls *Vera Cruz*: (b) at the end of Aug. sets out for *Mexico*; (g) Nov. 8, enters that Great City, then containing 60 thousand Houses. (b)

Aug. 10, *Ferdinand de Magellanes*, (g.b) a *Portugese* (h.ps) sails from *Sevil* to find out a South West Passage to the *East Indies*, and go round the Earth, (g.b) Dec. 13, Descries *Brazile* and enters the River *Janeiro*, in 23 Deg. 45 min. South Lat: sails along' the Coast Southward: and Oct. 21, 1520, Discovers the Cape at the Northern Entrance of the famous Straits which bare his name: [11] Nov. 7, enters them; and Nov. 27, opens the great Southern Ocean (b) which he calls the *Pacifick*: (ps) sails Northwesterly 3000 Leagues: March 31, 1521, Discovers the *Philipine Islands*; In one of which, viz. *Zebu*, he is slain in a Fight with the Natives, Apr. 27. Upon which his Ship sails to *Borneo*; where the Men chuse *John Sebastian del Cano* their Captain: Nov. 8, he arrives at the *Moluccaes*: In the beginning of 1522, sails thence to the *Cape of Good Hope*; and Sept. 6, arrives at *San Lucar* (b) with but a Dozen Men (ps) Being the 1st that ever encompassed the Earth. (g.b)

1520 Dec. 20, *Luther* burns the *Canon Law*, publicly, at *Wirtemberg*. (fl)

1521 The *Augustin Fryars* at *Wirtemberg* leave off the Mass, and are the 1st who do so. (fl)

Tuesday, Aug. 13, *Cortes* takes the City of *Mexico*, and puts an end to that Great Indian Empire. (b.&Gane)

K Henry

[11] He calls this Cape, *The Virgins*, because Discov:ed on *St Ursula's* day, (b) and *Mall* mistakes in calling it the *Virgin Mary's*.

Y C | K of England Henry VIII. K of Spain Charles

1521 K Henry VIII, writes against *Luther*, (f) for which (i.e. 1521, 2) Feb. 2, the King receives a Bull from the Pope wherein he and his Successors for ever, are Declar'd, Defenders of the Christian Faith (bl)

1523 Jan. 29, the Senate of Zurich reject the Traditions of Men, and declare the Gospel shall be taught according to the Old and New Testament. (fl)

July 1, *John* and *Henry*, 2 Augustin Fryars, Burn'd at *Brussels* for professing the Holy Scriptures to be the only Rule of Faith, &c. (fl)

[N. B. The REFORMATION coming on and crossing us with more important Matters; I shall only Recite the Voyages to the NORTH EASTERN Parts of the NEW WORLD.]

1524 *John Verrazano*, a Florentine, sent from France by *K Francis I*, coasts along the North Eastern Part of the New World, from 28 to 50 Deg North Lat. (ps) He is the 1st that sails from France thither.

1525 *Stephen Gomez* sails from the *Groyne* to *Cuba* and *Florida*, and thence Northward to *Cape Razo* in 46 Deg. North Lat, (g) in search of a North West Passage to the East Indies, and returns to the *Groyne* in 10 Months: (g. b) The 1st Spaniard who sails on these Coasts, [12]

Apr. 13, The Magistrates of *Zurich* abolish Mass and all the Popish Ceremonies, in their Dominions. (fl)

Albert, 33d Master of the Teutonic Order, made Duke of *Prussia*, and embraces the Reform'd Religion. (fl)

By *K Henry's* leave & the Pope's confirmation (bl) Cardinal *Woolsey* suppresses 40 Monasteries in England, for the building of his Colleges in *Oxford* and *Ipswich* (fl)

1526 About Aug. *Patrick Hamilton*, Abbot of *Ferne* in Scotland, returning from *Germany*, where he had been a Scholar

[12] *Herera* represents this Voyage as beginning Northward and ending at *Florida*, and so to *Cuba*, &c.

K of England Henry VIII. **K of Spain Charles.**

lar to *Luther*, is Burnt for the Reform'd Religion (*bl*) at *St Andrews* on *Feb. 28*, following, (*Fox*) [13] He is the first Martyr for it in *Scotland*.

1527 March 18, *Gustavus Erickson* King of *Sweden*, calls the States together, & begins the Reformation there. (*c*)

Cardinal *Woolsey* infuses Scruples into *K Henry's* mind, about his Marriage with his Brother's Widow. (*bl. ft*)

Francis Colb and *Berthold Holler* having Preach'd the Gospel at *Be' n*; Dec. 17, the City appoints a Publick Assembly and Disputation there, and the *Scriptures* to be the only Rule, and to have the sole Authority in all the Debates. (*fl*)

1528 Jan. 7, the Great Assembly and Disputation, begins at *Bern* and holds to *Jan. 26*; wherein *Zuinglius*, *Oecolampadius*, *Capito*, *Bucer*, &c. Defend the Reform'd Religion; and thereupon Popery is abolish'd in *Bern* and *Constance*, and in their Dominions. (*fl*)

In March, *Pamfelo de Narvaez* sails from *Cuba* with 400 men, for the Conquest of *Florida*: April 12, arrives there (*b*) marches to *Apelachen*: Thence coming down to the Sea, and Coasting Westward, is lost with many more in a Storm about *Mid-November*, which defeats the Enterprize. (*ps*) [14]

1529 Feb 9, Piles of Images burnt before the Cathedral at *Basil*: and Feb. 12, Popery abolish'd there. (*fl*)

Feb. 20, Mass abolish'd at *Strasburg*. (*fl*)

The Dyet of the Empire at *Spire* making a Decree against the Reformation; *Apr. 19*, the *Elector* of *Saxony*, *George* Marquess of *Brandenburg*, *Ernest* and *Francis* Dukes of *Lunenburgh*, the Landgrave of *Hess*, and Count of *Anhalt*, publickly read their PROTEST against it, several Cities joining with them: whence they take the famous Name of PROTESTANTS. (*fl*)

Oct.

[13] *Buchanan* therefore places this in 1527.

[14] He seems to be lost about the Mouth of the Great River *Mississippi*. (see *Purchase*.)

Y.C. | K of England Henry VIII. | K of Spain Charles

Oct. 19, King Henry takes the Great Seal from Cardinal Woolsey. (f) [15]

Nov. 3, The Parliament of England meets, (bl. f) complains of the Clergy's Non-Residence, Pluralities, and Exactions on the People: But the Bishops oppose, and hinder many of the Regulations. (bl)

1530 At the beginning of this Y, (bl) William Tindal publishes his Translation of the New Testament in English beyond Sea; which King Henry Prohibits, and orders the Bishops to make a new one. (bl. f)

June 20, The famous Dyet of the Empire at Augsburg begins: and June 25, the Protestant Confession of Faith drawn up by Melancthon, since call'd the AUSBURG CONFESSION, Read in the Dyet. (f)

Sept. 19, K Henry, by Proclamation, forbids his Subjects to purchase any thing from Rome. (bl. f)

Tuesday, Nov. 29, Cardinal Woolsey Dies: and the Clergy of England being Guilty of a Præmunire, for maintaining the Cardinal's Legantine Power; they in Convocation, agree to Pay the King 100 thousand Pounds for Pardon, make their Submission to Him, and own him Supreme Head of the Church of England, (bl. f) which they never confess'd before. (bl) And

Here Polydore Vergil ends his History. (pl)

Dec. 22, Diverse Protestant Princes and Deputies of Cities in Germany, meet at Smalcald, and enter into a League Defensive (f)

1531 Aug. 19, Thomas Bilney Burnt at Norwich (bl) for Preaching the Reform'd Religion. (Fox) [16]

Oct. 11, Zuinglius slain, Æt. 44, in a Battle between the Zurichers and their neighbouring Enemies. (f. c)

1532 Jan. 15, (Keeble) The Parliament of England meets, complain of the Cruelties of the Bishops, & Enact, They shall

[15] Holinshed mistakes in placing this on Nov. 17.

[16] N. B. There were many others Burnt for the same Religion; in other Parts of the Kingdom, both before and after: For which we must refer to Fox's Martyrology.

C1 K of England Henry VIII. K of Spain Charles

shall Pay no more Money to the Pope, (*bl. ft*) they having Paid the last 42 Y, Sixty (*ft*) or 160 thousand Pounds. (*bl*) July, K Henry Suppresses the Priory of Christ-Church, London. (*ft*)

Aug. 23, William Warham, Archbishop of Canterbury D; and Thomas Cranmer Succeeds. (*ft*)

Sept. Farel and Saunier, from Preaching in Piedmont, come to Geneva and begin to Preach the Reform'd Religion in Private Houses. (*Spon*)

Nov. 14, King Henry privately marries Ann Bulleign (*bl. gm*) but Stow says, Jan. 25, 1532, 3. (*ft*)

Nov. Calvin oblig'd to fly from Paris to Basle, for the Reform'd Religion. (*bx*)

1533 Feb. 4, (*k*) The Parliament of England meets; Enacts that none shall appeal to Rome; that Katharine shall be no more called Queen, but Princess Dowager of Prince Arthur, (*bl. ft*) and that neither the Clergy nor Convocation shall exact any Canons contrary to Law, or without the King's Consent. (*k*)

March 28, Liberty of Private Opinion; and June 26, Liberty of Private Worship allow'd at Geneva. (*fn*)

Lordsday, Sept. 7, The Princess Elizabeth Born to King Henry. (*bl. ft*)

1534 March 1, Farel, the 1st Protestant who Preaches Publicly at Geneva. (*fn*)

Apr. James Cartier sails from St Malo's in France: In May, arrives at Newfoundland, (*ps*) Falls with Lat. 48 & 30, Discovers the Great Bay of St Lawrence; sails to 51 Deg. North, in hopes to pass to China, but is disappointed and returns (*g*)

July 22, John Frith, and Andrew Hewet a Young Man, Burnt in Smithfield, London, for not owning the Bodily Presence of Christ in the Sacrament. (*bl. ft*)

Aug. 15, Ignatius Loyola (B in Spain in 1491) now, with 9 others at Paris, begins the Society of Jesuits. (*vi. d*)

Nov.

Y.C. | K of England Henry VIII.

K of Spain Charles

Nov. 3, [17] The Parliament of England meets, Enacts the King's Supremacy, and abolishes the Pope's Authority thro' the Realm. (bl. st.)

Nov. A Persecution of the Protestants, Rages in France and many Burnt. (st)

1535 James Cartier sails again from France, Discovers the River Canada, sails up 30 Leagues (g) to the Great and Swift Fall, Builds a Fort, (ps) calls the Land NEW FRANCE, Wins there, & next Y goes home. (g)

Aug. -7, The Roman Catholick Religion abolish'd in Geneva. (sn)

Oct. (bl. st) K Henry sends Thomas Cromwell, (st) Dr. Lee and others, to visit the Priors, Abbies and Nunneries; who set all at Liberty under 24 Years of Age, with those who are willing to go out, and shut up the rest. (bl. st)

The Senate of Ausburg receives the Reformation. (st)

1536 Feb. 4, The Parliament of England meets and gives the King all Religious Houses of the value of 200 Pounds and under, with all their Lands & Goods. (bl. st) [18]

May 1, The Parliament of Ireland meets at Dublin, and Pass Laws for the King and his Successors to be Supreme Head of the Church of Ireland; abolishing the Pope's Authority; Suppressing of Abbies; and make it a *Premunire*, to pursue any Process from the See of Rome (bli) [19]

May 19, Q Ann Beheaded, with a Sword, (bl. st) and the next Day (st) K Henry marries Jane Seymour. (bl. st)

June, K Henry abrogates a number of Holydays, especially in Harvest Time. (bl)

July 10, Cromwell made a Lord; and July 18, made Knight and Vicar General, under the K, over the Spiritually;

[17] Keble says Feb. 3, 1534, 5.

[18] N. B. The Number of Houses, are 376; value of their Lands Yearly, above 32 thousand Pounds; moveable Goods, above 100 thousand Pounds; Persons put out of them, above 10 Thousand. (bl. st) bli. Holinshed's History of Ireland.

[19] Holinshed is right, in placing this in the 28th Y of K Henry; but wrong in setting 1539 in the Margin.

C K of England Henry VIII. K. of Spain Charles.

Malty; || and sets diverse times as *Head over the Bishops* in Convocation. (bl.ft).

July 11, (c) or rather 12 (bx) *Erasmus Dies at Basil.*

Aug. 1, *Calvin Publishes his Institutions at Basil* * then goes to *Farel and Viret at Geneva*, and carries on the Reformation there. (bx)

Sept. *Cromwell orders the Parsons & Curates, to Teach the Lord's Prayer, Ave, Creed, and 10 Commandments, in English.* (bl.e)

William Tindal Burn'd at Villesfort near Brussels, for the Reformation. (bl) †

137 Aug. 12, *Christian K. of Denmark Crown'd, calls the States together, deposes the Bishops, & Reforms the Km.* (c)

Oct. 12, *Prince Edward Born to K Henry.* (bl.ft)

138 Lordsday, Feb. 24, *The famous Rood or Image of Borley in Kent, made with diverse Wires to move the Lips and Eyes, shew'd at Paul's by the Preacher, and Broken to Pieces.* (ft)

May 23, *a Rood in London, with his Tabernacle, pull'd down and broken to Pieces.* (ft)

Diverse Abbies Suppressed to the King's use. (ft)

Sept. *Cromwell takes away all the noted Images, to which Pilgrimages and Offerings had been made, with the Shrines of counterfeit Saints, as Thomas a Becket, &c.* [20] *Suppresses all the Orders of Fryars and Nuns, with their Cloisters and Houses* (bl.ft) & orders all the Bishops and Curates thro' the Realm to see, that in every Church, the BIBLE of the largest Volumn Printed in English, be so placed that all may Read it. (ft)

Nov. *John Lambert Burnt in Smithfield, for not owning the bodily Presence of Christ in the Sacrament.* (bl.ft)

Apr.

|| i. e. over all Ecclesiastical and Religious Affairs and Persons.

bx: Boxhornites. bz. Beza in Vit Calv.

* So the Date of the Dedication.

† *Bale & Fox call him The Apostle of the English* (ft. Fox)

[20] *Stow says, Those Images were bro't up from diverse Parts of England and Wales to London, and Burnt at Chelsey: That he Suppress'd the Abbey at Canterbury, with Becket's Shrine, and commanded his Bones to be Burnt.* (ft)

Y C | K of England Henry VIII. K of Spain Charles

- 1539 Apr. 28, The Parliament of England meets, (bl ff) Grants all Religious Houses to the K for ever, (ff) & Enacts the 6 Articles, which sets up an Inquisition in the Km, and brings many honest People to Death. (bl)
- May 12, (b) or 18 (ps) Ferdinand de Soto, 'with' 900 Men besides Sea-men, sails from Cuba, to conquer Florida
- May 30 (ps) or 31 (b) arrives at the Bay of Spiritus Santo: Travels Northwards 450 Leagues from the Sea There meets with a Great River a quarter of a Mile broad and 19 fathom Deep, (b) on whose Bank he Dies, and is Buried in it, May 21, 1542, (ps) Æt 42, (b) upon which his Successor Alverado, Builds 7 Brigantines; (b, ps) June 29, 1543, embarks, and sails down the River, in 17 days, 400 Leagues, [21] and in 2 days more, (b) viz July 18 goes out to Sea; (ps) sails Westerly along the Coast, (b, ps) and Sept. 10, arrives at Panuco (ps)
- 1540 Apr. 18; [22] Parliament of England meets, Dissolves the order of the Knights of Rhodes or St. John's, in England, (bl ff) and Ireland, (ff) and gives their Houses and Estate to the King. (ff)
- July 19, Cromwell attainted in Parliament for Heresy and Treason, without being heard; and July 28, Beheaded. (bl ff)
- July 30, Robert Barnes, D. D. Thomas Garrard, B. D. and William Ferom, B. D. Burnt at Smithfield, for the Reform'd Religion. (bl ff)
- Sept. 27, The Pope Establishes the Order of Jesuits, (p. d) and May 14, 1543, makes Ignatius Loyola their General. (d)
- 1541 June 13, The Parliament of Ireland meets at Dublin; Enacts the K and his Successors to be Entituled Kings of Ireland.

[21] Here they Guess'd the River to be 15 Leagues wide, found it opening with 2 Mouths into the Sea, and judg'd it 800 Leagues to the Head. (b) By which, I think, 'tis plain, This is the Great Mississippi River. (see Fontel)

[22] Keble says, the Parliament meets Apr. 12, (k)

C] K of England Henry VIII.

K of Spain Charles.

Ireland, (*bli. ft*) whereas they had been only call'd Lords of Ireland before. (*bli*) [23]

1541 Jan. 23, King Henry first Proclaim'd at London, King of Ireland. (*bl*)

Feb. 15, The Parliament of Ireland meets at Limerick, and makes an Act for the Suppression of *Kilmainam* and other Religious Houses. (*bli*)

The French K sends *Francis la Robbe*, Lord of *Robewell*, his Lieutenant, with 3 Ships and 200 Men, Women and Children, to *Canada*: where he Builds a Fort, Winters and Returns. (*ps*)

Dec 7, *Mary B* to K *James V*, of *Scotland*: Dec: 14, he D, (*Æt*; 1) [24] & the Succeeds: But the Earl of *Arran* made *Regent*, (*bls. bc*) who professes the *Reform'd Religion*, causes *Fryar Guillian* to Preach against Images and other fruitless Ceremonies, and gives Liberty for the Bible to be had in *English*, & publish'd universally thro' *Scotland*. (*bls*)

1544 June, The *Letany* set forth in *English*, and order'd to be Read in every Parish Church in *England*. (*ft*)

1545 Nov. 23, (*bl*) or 24, (*ft*) the Parliament of *England* meets, and commits to the King, all *Colleges*, *Chantries* and *Hospitals*, to Order as he thinks Expedient. (*bl. ft*)

Dec. 13, The Council of *Trent* begins (*c. r. d*)

1546 Jan. 6, The *Electo Palatine* embraces the *Reformation*; and Jan. 10, instead of *Mass*, has *Divine Service* said at *Heidelberg*, in the *Vulgar Tongue* (*ft*)

Feb. 18, *Luther* Dies at *Eysleben*, *Æt* 63. (*ft*)

March 1, (*Fox*) *George Wisehart* Burnt at *St Andrews* in *Scotland*, for Preaching the *Reform'd Religion* (*bls. Fox*) which he had Learnt in the Schools of *Germany*. (*bls* [25])

1547 Jan. 28, K *Henry* Dies (*bl. ft*) *Æt* 56, & his only Son

EDWARD

[23] *Holinshed*, in his History of *Ireland*, mistakes in placing this Session of Parliament in 1542; But *vizet* in saying the 33d Y of *Henry VIII*.

[24] He was the Son of K *James IV*, of *Scotland*, by *Margaret* Eldest Daughter to K *Henry VII*, of *England*; and *bl* mistakes in saying he Dies, *Æt* 33; & yet tells us he was Born *Apr. 11. 1512*.

bls. Holinshed's, History of *Scotland* *bc. Buchanan*.

[25] *Buchanan*, turning the Name to *Greek*, calls him *Sophocardiis*.

Y C | K of England Edward VI. K of Spain Charles.

EDWARD VI, Æt 10, Reigns 6 Y, 5 m, 8 d. (bl)

Feb. 1, Sir Edward *Seymour* Earl of *Hertford*, Chosen (bl.ß) and Proclaimed (bl) Lord *Protector*; and Feb. 11, made Duke of *Somerset*. (bl.ß)

March, (ß) The *Protector* forbids *Processions*; Orders the *Gospel* and *Epistle* to be Read in *English*, (ß) & send *Commissioners* thro' the Realm to remove *Images* out of Churches, and with them, *Preachers*: (bl.ß) to dissuade the People from their *Beads* & such like *Ceremonies* (ß)

Sept. The K's *Council* causes the *Book* of *Homilies* & *Paraphrase* of *Erasmus* to be set forth & had in Churches. (bl)

Nov. 4, The Parliament of *England* meets at *Westminster*; Repeals the Statute of the 6 *Articles*, (bl.ß) Enacts the *Sacrament* to be given in both kinds; (ß.k) & grants the K, all *Chantries*, *Free Chappels*, & *Brotherhoods*. (bl.ß)

Nov. 16 (bl) or 17 (ß) The *Rood* and other *Images* pull'd down in *Paul's*, *London*: and soon after in all other Churches in *England* (bl.ß)

Nov. end, *Peter Martyr*, a *Florentine*, who had for 5 Y with great applause, taught at *Strasbourg*, goes into *England*, at the Invitation of *Cranmer* in the K's Name, and made Professor of *Divinity* in *Oxford*. (ß)

1548 March, The K, sends forth a *Proclamation* for administering the *Sacraments* in both kinds, to all who should be willing from *Easter* forward: whereupon at *Easter* begins the *Communion* and *Confession* in *English*. (ß) [26]

Nov. 4, The Parliament of *England* meets: wherein the *Mass* is wholly abolished, and a *Book* for uniformity of *Divine Service* is established. (bl.k)

1549 Apr 6, A *Proclamation* to put down *Mass*, thro' the *Realin*. (ß)

Apr. 10, The *Cloister*, *Chappel* & *Charnel House* at *Paul's* *London*, begin to be pulled down. (ß)

1550 June 11, The *Higb Altar* in *Paul's* Church, *London*, pulled

[26] *Easter* this Year is *Lordsday*, Apr. 1, and *Holinshead* places this a Year before: But from the *Act* of Parliament in Nov, 1548; *Stow* seems to be *Right*.

Q of England Mary I.

K of Spain Charles

pulled down, and a Table set in the Room; and soon after, the like in all the Churches in London. (ft)

1551 Feb. 27, Bucer Dies at Cambridge. (ft)

Sept. 1, The French K's Embassador enters the Council of Trent, & delivers a Protestation; that his Master owns them not for a General or Publick Council, & that neither He nor his People would be oblig'd to submit thereto. (ft)

1552 Jan. 22, The Duke of Somerset Beheaded. (bl. ft)

Jan 23, The Parliament of England meets; wherein the Book of Common Prayer, newly Corrected & Amended, is Established. (bl)

July 31, The famous Pacification at Passaw concluded, between the Emperor & the Protestant Princes of Germany; wherein 'tis agreed, that none shall be molested for Religion, and that Protestants be admitted into the Imperial Chamber. (ft)

Nov. 1, The New Service Book begins to be used at Paul's, and through the whole City of London: and all Copes, Vestments, Hoods and Crosses, therein forbidden are laid aside, as by Act of Parliament Order'd. After which, the upper Quire of Paul's Church is broken down, and the Communion Table set in the lower Quire. (ft)

1553 Apr. & May, Commissioners sent for all the Parishes Copes and Vestments, Gold and Silver Candlesticks, Censers, &c. in all the Churches thro' the Kingdom. (ft)

July 6, K Edward Dies, (bl. ft) Æt 16: having by Will appointed for his Successor,

JANE Grey, Granddaughter to Mary, Youngest Daughter of Henry VII, (bl. ft) who on July 9, (bl) or 10 (ft) is Proclaim'd Queen at London But July 19,

MARY I, Eldest Daughter of Henry VIII, is there Proclaimed Queen, Prevails; Aug. 3, enters the City, (bl ft) and Reigns 5 Y, 4 m, 11 days. (bl) [27]

Aug. 27, The Latin Service begins to be sung at Pauls. (ft)

Oct. 5, The Parliament of England meets at Westminster, which Enacts the Church Service to be said in Latin: as in the last Year of Henry VIII. (ft)

Dec.

Y.C. | Q of England Mary.

K of Spain Philip II.

Dec. 20, The Church Service begins to be said in Latine thro' the Km, according to the Act of Parliament. (β)

1554 Feb. 12, Q Jane Beheaded (bl. ff) within the Tower. (W)

July 20, Philip, Son to the Emperor, Lands at Southampton to Marry the Queen, (fl. bl. ff) July 25, he marries her at Winchester, (fl. bl. ff) the Emperor's Embassador presenting him a Renunciation of the Kingdoms of Naples and Jerusalem (fl. bl)

Wednesday, Nov. 21, Cardinal Pool from Rome, Lands at Dover: Nov. 28, (bl) comes into Parliament and exhorts them to return to the Church, and re-submit to the Pope's Authority: Next day, the whole Parliament draw up a Supplication to the K & Q, to interceed with the Cardinal to restore them to the Bosom of the Church, and Obedience of the See of Rome: Next d, Present it, (bl. ff) upon which, the Parliament being on their Knees (bl) be by a Power from the Pope, Absolves them; and they all go to Chappel and Sing with great Joy for this Reconciliation. (bl ff)

1555 Feb. 4, John Rogers Burnt in Smithfield. (bl. ff) Feb. 8, Lawrence Saunders at Coventry: Feb. 9, Bp Hooper at Gloucester; and Dr. Taylor at Hadley; (Fox) and July 1, John Bradford in Smithfield, (bl. ff) all, for the Reform'd Religion. (Fox) [28]

Sept. 25, The Dyet of Ausburg Decree, That both, Those of the Augustin Confession and the Roman Catholicks, shall enjoy their Religion freely. (fl)

Oct. 16, Bp Ridley and Bp Latimer, Burnt at Oxford, for the Reformation. (bl ff)

Oct. 25, The Emperor religns the Kingdom of Spain to his Son Philip II. (c)

Cardinal Pool appoints Dr. Story and others, to visit every Church in London and Middlesex, and repair the Flood Lofts and Images (fl)

Dec. 18, John Philpot Burnt in Smithfield, for the Reform'd Religion. (Fox) Ex 44 (bl)

Saturday,

[28] Bishop Hooper and Mr. Rogers, were the Heads of the Nonconformists in England. (β)

Q of England Elizabeth. K of Spain Philip II.

1536 Saturday, March 21, Archbishop Cranmer Burnt at Oxford, for the same, (bl. ft) & the next day, Cardinal Pool is Consecrated Archbishop of Canterbury. (ft)

Charles, Marquess of Baden, Embraces the Augustan Confession, & begins to Reform his Churches. (ft)

July 31, Ignatius Loyola, Founder of the Jesuits, Dies (p.ri.d) at Rome, Æt 65; having spread his Order thro' the World, and set up 100 Colleges in diverse parts of Christendom. (—)

Nov. 21. John Fecknam install'd Abbot of Westminster, and 14 Monks receive the Habits with him. (ft)

Dec 3, The Protestant Nobility in Scotland, begin to sign an Association to Promote the Reform'd Religion. (cl)

1558 Feb. 24, Charles V, Relinquishes the Imperial Dignity: (ri) March 18, His Brother Ferdinand chosen Emperor: and Sept. 21, Charles V, Dies. (c.ri)

April, (bc) 20 (Fox) Walter Mille condemn'd at St Andrews in Scotland for the Reform'd Religion, and Burnt (bc.Fox) 2 days after, Aged 82 Years. (pt) [29]

Apr. 24, The Queen of Scots Married in Paris to Francis the Dauphin of France. (bls)

Nov. 17, Queen Mary of England, D in the Morning, Æt 43: Cardinal Pool in the Evening. (bl. ft) And her Younger Sister

Q ELIZABETH, Reigns 44 Y, 4 m, 7 days.

Dec. 3, Sets forth a Proclamation in London, that the Gospels and Epistles for the day, shall begin to be Read in Mass-time, in English, in the Churches, on Lordsday, Jan. 1, which is accordingly observed in most Parish Churches in the City. (ft bl)

1559 Jan 25, The Parliament of England meets, restores to the Crown, the Supream Government of the State Ecclesiastical, & orders the Book of Common Prayer to be used in English, and as in the time of K Edward VI (ft bl)

March

ri. Ricciolius. d. Dupin. cl. Calderwood. pt. Petrie.

[19] He is the Last Martyr for the Protestant Religion in Scotland, (Fox) and his Death the Death of Popery there: (pt) For upon this the Protestants thro' the Km wise in their Defence again't their Enemies. (bc.pt)

Y. C. | Q of England Elizabeth. | K of Spain Philip II.

March 2, A Council of the Prelates and Clergy of Scotland meet at Edinburg; when the Temporality Demand have Divine Service in the Scoish Tongue, with other Reformation; which the Bishops Refuse, and occasion great Troubles in the Kingdom. (bl)

May 2, John Knox, arrives at Leith, from Geneva, and goes to a Convention of Protestants at Perth: (cl) May 10 They pull down the Images and Altars there, and in the neighbouring places: (bls) June 4, Earl of Argyle, and Lord James Stuart, the Q's Natural Brother, do the like at St Andrews: June 26, at Sterling, and then at Edinburg, (ft) & other Lords at Glasgow: upon which a Civil War arises, and Q Elizabeth helps the Protestants. (bl)

Lordsday, May 14, Divine Service begins in English in the Churches of England, according to the Common Prayer Book in K Edward's Time. (bl ft)

June 28, The Protestant Ministers of France hold their 1st Synod at St German's (bo) when they agree on their Confession of Faith, drawn up by Calvin. (q)

July 10, Henry II, K of France. D: & his Son Francis II, who had married the Q of Scots, succeeds. (bls.p)

In July, There are 13 or 14 Bishops, with many other Clergy, depriv'd in England, for refusing the Oath to the Queen's Supremacy. (bl. ft) [30].

Saturday, Aug 12, By Order of Dr Grindal, newly Elect Bp of London, the high Altar of Paul's Church, with the Rood and Images of Mary and John taken down; (bl) and Aug. 23, 24, 25, Roods & other Images in Churches, with Copes, Vestments, Altar Cloaths, Books, Rood Lofis, &c. Burnt in London. (bl. ft)

Dec. 17, Dr. Parker Consecrated Archbishop of Canterbury, by 3 depriv'd Bishops; and then they Consecrate the rest (ft)

1560. Apr. 19, Melancthon D (c) at Wirtemberg (ft) Æt 64. ||

bo. Bohun's Continuation of Sleidan. q. Quick's Synadicon.

[30] Fuller says, There was but 1 of all the Bishop, viz. of London, who Conso m'd to the Queen's Commands.

|| Fuller mistakes in saying Ætatis 63.

Q of England Elizabeth, K of Spain Philip II.

The English begin the Trade of Fishing at Newfoundland. (j)

July 7, (j) or 8, (bc.cl) Peace Concluded in Scotland: & Aug. 13, a Parliament meets at Edinburg: Aug. 17, agrees on a Protestant Confession of Faith; (cl.pt) and Aug. 24, (cl) make 2 Acts for Abolishing the Mass, and the Pope's Authority in the Kingdom. (cl.pt) [31]

Dec. 5, Francis II, K of France Dies, (bc) Æt 17; and his Brother Charles IX, succeeds, (c) Æt 10 (d)

Dec. 20, The first National Assembly of the Reform'd Church of Scotland meets at Edinburg. (cl.pt)

1561 Jan. 17, The first Book of Discipline allowed by the Council of Scotland, (pt) Subscrib'd by a great part of the Nobility. (cl)

May 21, The Parliament of Scotland meets, and makes an Act for Demolishing all the Monasteries. (bc)

Aug. 20, (hls.cl) or 21, (bc) The Queen of Scots arrives at Leith from France. (hls.cl, bc)

1562 Jan. 17, An Assembly of Delegates from all the Parliaments of France, meet at St German's; wherein is Pass'd the famous Edict, allowing Liberty of Conscience to Protestants, and of Worship without the Cities, and of Synods in Presence of a Magistrate. (bo)

Chatillon, Admiral of France, sends John Ribalt to Florida: arrives at Cape Francis in 30 Deg. North Lat: May 1, enters a River, which he therefore calls the River May: Discovers 8 others; one of which he calls Port Royal, sails up the same many Leagues, Builds a Fort, calls it CHARLES, and leaves there a Colony; which soon Mutnies, kills their Cap. Albert for his Severity, and brakes up. (ps)

There are this Year accounted 2150 Assemblies of Protestants in France. (ho)

1563 Jan. 12, The Convocation of the English Clergy meets; Jan. 31, they finish the 39 Articles. Of the Lower House,

j. King James's Patent of Newfoundland in Purchas.

[31] hls mistakes in 1st placing these Acts in the Parliament of Dec. 15, 1567; when they were only Renew'd & further Ratified. (See cl & pt.)

Y.C| Q of England Elizabeth. K of Spain Philip II.

- 43 Present are for *Throwing out* the Ceremonies; but for keeping them: However, *These*, with the help of *Proxies*, carry it by 1 Vote above the other. (*str*)
- The *Bishops* now beginning to urge the *Clergy* to Subscribe to the *Liturgy* and *Ceremonies*, as well as the *Articles*; *Coverdale*, *Fox*, *Humsfrey*, *Sampson*, *Whittingham*, and others, Refuse to Subscribe: And this Begins the Era of **NONCONFORMITY** in England (*fr. str*) [32]
- Dec. 4 The Council of *Trent* dissolves. (*c*)
- 1564 *Chatillon* sends *Rene Laudonier* to *Florida*: In *Apr.* sails with 3 Ships: *June* 22, Arrives 10 Leagues above *Cape Francis*, and then in the River *May*; Builds a Fort thereon; and in Honour of his King, *Charles IX*, calls it **CAROLINA**. (*ps*)
- May 27, *Calvin D* at *Geneva*: Aged 54 Y, 10 m, 17 d (*lz*)
- 1565 July, *Henry Stuart*, Lord *Darnly*, made by the Q of *Scots*, Duke of *Albany*: (*bls*) July 29, she marries him; & the next day, they are Proclaimed K and Q. (*bc*) [33]
- Aug. c, Capt. *Ribalt* arrives from *France* at *Florida*, again, with 7 Sail: But *Sept.* 4, *Pedro Melendes*, with great *Spanish* Ships, comes into the River, Massacres *Ribalt* and all his Company, Possesses the Country, Builds 3 Forts, and puts 1200 Soldiers in 'em: *Laudonier* escaping to *France*. (*ps*)
- 1566 Capt. *Savalet*, of *Gascony* in *France*, begins to Fish at *Lacady*; & goes every Y, making 42 Voyages, to 1607 (*ps*)
- June 19, *James B* to the Q of *Scotland*. (*bc. bls. fr*)
- 1567 Feb 10, His Father Kill'd (*bls. fr*) by Earl *Bothwell*: whom the Queen soon after marries. (*bc bls*)
- July 24, The Queen of *Scots* Resigns the Crown to her Son,

fr. Strype's Annals.

[32] *Coverdale* had been Bishop in the R of *Edward VI*, and help'd to Consecrate Archbishop *Parker*: *Fox* was the Famous *Martyrologist*; *Dr. Humsfrey* was *Regius Professor* of *Divinity*, and President of *Magdalen College, Oxford*: *Dr. Simpson* was Dean of *Christ's Church, Oxford*: and *Mr. Whittingham* Dean of *Durham*

[33] *bls* says, She Proclaim'd him King on *Saturday*, July 28, at *Even*; and the next *Morning*, Marries him: But this seems unlikely.

- 1568 Q of England Elizabeth. K of Spain Philip II
 Son, & makes the Earl of Murray Regent, (bls) & July 29
 her said Son, JAMES VI, is Crown'd. (ba st. cl) [34]
 Capt. *Dominique de Gourves*, with 3 Ships, sails from
 France to Florida: Apr. 1568, arrives in the River *May*,
 slays most of the Spaniards, takes their Forts, Razes
 them; and in June, arrives at *Rochel*. (ps) And thus
 the French Attempts on Florida End. [35]
 1568 May 16 (st) or 17 (cm) The Queen of Scots comes into
 England; and is soon secur'd. (st. cm)
 1570 Cartwright, M. Margarets Professor of Divinity at Cam-
 bridge, begins to oppose the Hierarchy, & is depriv'd. (st. fr) [36]
 1571 The Parliament of England begin; and make an Act, to
 Deprive all Clergymen who subscribe not to the 39 Articles,
 (k) upon which many Clergymen are Depriv'd. (st. fr)
 1572 Aug. 24, & few days after, Seventy thousand Protestants
 Massacred in Paris; and other parts of France. (c)
 Nov. 20 (n) The 1st Presbyterian Church in England set up
 at *Wandsworth* near London; when they chuse XI Elders. (st)
 1574 May 30, Charles IX, of France Dies: and his Brother
 Henry III, Reigns. (st. p)
 1575 May 17, Archbishop Parker Dies, (st. bl) and Feb. 15,
 Edmond Grindal Elected Archbishop of Canterbury. (st)
 1576 June 15, Capt. *Frobisher* sails from *Blackwall*, (st) June
 18, from *Harwich* (cm) to find a N W Passage to the East
 Indies: July 20, Discovers a Cape he calls *Q Elizabeth's*
Foreland; and then the Straits which bare his name, (st)
 Aug. 9, Enters a Bay in Lat. 63, (cm) sails 60 Leagues,
 Lands, takes a Savage. (st) But the Ice obliges him to re-
 turn; and arrives in England, Sept. 24. (cm) [37]
 1577 Dec. 13, Capt. *Francis Drake* sails from *Plimouth* round
 the World, & Returns to *Plimouth*, Nov 3, 1580. (st. cm. ps)
 Sit

[34] bls mistakes in placing the Coronation on July 19.

[35] N. B. The Attempt of *Soto* and *Vinuz*, were on the West side
 of *Cape Florida*, in the Country since call'd *Mississipi*: But the French
 Attempt, on the East side, in the Country since call'd *Carolina*.
cm. Cambden. n. Neal's History of the Puritans.

[36] The Hierarchy is the Lordly Government of the Church by Arch-
 bishops, Diocesan Bishops, Deans, Arch Deacons, &c.

[37] *Stow* seems to mistake in placing his Arrival in England, in Aug.

Y C	Q of England Elizabeth.	K of Spain Philip II
1579	Jan. 23, The 7 Dutch Provinces Unite at Utrecht. (u) Sir Humphry Gilbert obtains a Patent of Q Elizabeth for Places nor possess'd by any Christian Prince, provided he takes Possession within 6 Years. (bar)	
1581	Jan. 16, The Parliament of England meet, and Enact a Fine of 20 Pounds a Month, on every one that comes not to Common Prayer, (k) and in July, sundry are Fin'd. (f)	
1582	Oct. 5, The New Style begins, which calls it the 15th (r. f.) Roberts Brown Publishes a Book upon Reformation (r) wherein he writes against the Common Prayer, (f) and condemns the Church of England, as no Church. (cm)	
1583	June 4, Elias Thacker; and June 6, John Coping put to Death at Bury in Suffolk, for spreading Brown's Books against the Common Prayer. (f) June 11, Sir Humphry Gilbert sails from Plymouth for Newfoundland: Aug. 1, arrives at the Bay of Conception: Aug. 3, at the Harbour of St Johns: [38] Aug 5, takes Possession: Aug. 20, Sails for the Southern Parts: Aug. 29, loses a Ship on the Shoals of Sablon: Aug. 31, Turns homeward: At midnight: after Sept. 6, he sinks in a great Storm; & Sept. 22, the other Ship arrives at Falmouth (bar) July 6, Archbishop Grindal Dies: and Sept. 23, John Whitgift made Archbishop of Canterbury, (f) who zealously presses Subscription to the Articles & Common Prayer: which occasions incredible Distractions in the Church. (cm)	
1584	Mar 25, Sir Walter Raleigh obtains a Patent of Q Elizabeth for foreign Parts not possess'd by any Christian Prince (ps) Apr. 27, He sends Philip Amidas & Arthur Barlow in 2 Burks, (ps) from the Thames: July 2, Descry the Coast of Florida: Sail 40 Leagues for a Harbour; enter one, 7 Leagues West of Roanok: (s) July 12, take Possession for Queen Elizabeth; and from her call the Country VIRGINIA: (ps) [39] July e, They come to Roanok; and Mid September, arrive in England. (s) Apr.	

11. Petiz. hir. Harris. sc. Seruebins.

[38] He finds here 20 Portuguese and Spanish Fishing Vessels, and 15 of other Nations. (bar)

ps. Purchas. s. Smith.

[39] This Country is since call'd North Carolina; and the Tail Northward succeeds in the Name Virginia.

1551 Q. of England Elizabeth. K. of Spain Philip II

1553 Apr. 9, Sir Walter sends Sir Richard Greenville (ps) from Plymouth: June 20, falls with Florida: June 26, Anchors at Wococon, (ps) leaves the first Colony of above 100 People under Mr. Ralph Lane, at Roanoak: (ps.) July 25, Sir Richard sails, discovering the Coast North Eastward, to the Chesepians, (ps) and Sept. 18, arrives at Plymouth. (s)

Capt John Davis sails from England, to find a N W Passage to the East Indies: sails up 66 Deg. North, in the Straits that bare his Name; the next Year to 80 Degr. and afterwards to 83 Degrees. (cm) [40]

1586 Jan 1, Sir Francis Drake arrives at Hispaniola, (ct.cm) takes St Domingo: Sails to the Continent and takes Cartagena: Sails to Florida; (ct.st cm) May 29, takes St John's Fort at St Augustine; [41] June 9, arrives within 6 Leagues of the English at Roanoak; and June 18, sails, with this 1st Colony for England. (ct)

A Fortnight after, arrives Sir Richard Greenville; & not finding the first, leaves there a second Colony of 15 Men, (ps) or 50. (s) and Returns to England. (ps.)

1587 Feb. 8, The Q. of Scots Beheaded in England. (st.cm)

Sir Walter sends another Company to Virginia under Mr. John White, Governour, with a Charter & 12 Assistants: July 22, arrives at Hatirask, finds the 2nd Colony at Roanoak Destroy'd, (ps) & lands 115 for a 3d Plantation. (s)

Aug. 13, Manteo, the 1st Savage Baptiz'd: Aug. 18, the 1st English Child Born of Mrs. Dare, & nam'd Virginia, (s) & Aug 27, The Governour sails Home for Supplies. (ps)

1588 July, The Spanish Armada Destroy'd in the Chanel of England. (st cm)

1589 July 22, K. Henry III, of France, stab'd (c) by a Jacobin Pryar, (d) D the next d, (c) & Henry IV, succeeds. (c.p)

1590 March 20, Governour White sails from Plymouth; (s) Aug.

[40] These Straits running up near due North and so near the Pole, and having different colour'd People on the several sides; seem to be the Dividing Sea between Greenland and America.

ct. Cates's Account of this Voyage, Printed in 1589.

[41] Both cm and ps mistake St Anthony's for St John's; & also in saying, that he took St Helena. (See Cates's Account, who was in the Voyage.)

Y.C.I. Q of England Elizabeth. K of Spain Philip III.

- Aug. 15, arrives at *Hatarask*, but finding not a Man of the third Colony, returns. (ps.) [42]
- 1593 Apr. 6, *Henry Barrow*, Genl. & *John Greenwood*, Clerk put to Death at *Tburn*, for Publishing certain Books (bs) against the Hierarchy (n)
- May 29, (n) Mr. *John Penry* put to Death at *St. Thomas Watering's* (bs) for a Manuscript found in his Study against the Hierarchy and Persecution. (n)
- 1598 The French K Grants the *Marquess De la Roche* a Commission to conquer *Canada* & other Countries not possess'd by any Christian Prince; (pr) and in April; gives the famous *Edict of Nantz*, to the Protestants. (q)
- Sept. 3, *Philip II*, K of Spain Dies, (p.bs) Æt 72, (bs) and his Son *Philip III*, Succeeds. (p.bs)
- 1602 March 26, Capt. *Bartolomeaw Gosnold* sails from *Falmouth*, for the North Part of *Virginia*, with 32 Persons; 12 of whom are to begin a Plantation: May 10, Discovers Land in 43 Deg: sails along the shore to May 15; when he sees a Head-Land in 42 Degr; Anchors; & catching great stores of Cod-Fish, names it *CAPE COD*, & goes a shore: May 16, sails round the Cape; May 21, Discovers an Island in 41 & 15; May 22, Lands; and calls it *Martha's Vineyard*: May 24, comes to another next it, which he names *Dover Cliff*; & then to another; which he calls *Elizabeth Island*: May 31, Lands on the Main, and returns to *Eliz. Island*: June 1, Determines on a Settlement here, & begins a Fort: June 13, the Men who were to stay, recant and resolve for England; June 17, They all set Sail; and Friday July 23, Arrive at *Exmouth*. (ps)
- 1603 March 24, Q Elizabeth Dies, Æt 70. (cm.bs) And *JAMES VI* of Scotland, Proclaim'd K of England, (bs) and Begins the *BRITISH MONARCHY*.

[42] Thus the 3^d Colony of Old *Virginia* is broken up; and tho' Sir *Walter* sends 5 times to seek them, (ps) yet never one of them found to this day, 1622. (s) bs. *Hoves*. pr. *Perier*.

T H E
New-England
C H R O N O L O G Y

P A R T I.

F R O M

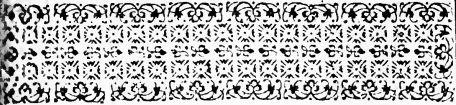
The *Beginning* of the BRITISH MONARCHY, in the
Accession of King J A M E S, the *First* Monarch of
G R E A T B R I T A I N. *March* 24, 1602, 3.

T O.


The *Beginning* of the NEW ENGLISH COLONIES, in the
Settlement of the *First* at P L I M O U T H. *Dec.* 31. 1620.

Being a *Brief Account* of Matters relating to
those *new discovered Countries* while settled
only by the *Aboriginal Natives* : Reciting
the several V O I A G E S from *England* Thi-
ther ; with the most material A F F A I R S, es-
pecially of *Great Britain*, that led the Way
to their Settlement by *English* Inhabitants







THE
New England Chronology.



PART I.




HAVING passed thro' the *Seven Great*
Periods of Time, from the CREATION,
 to the Beginning of the BRITISH EM-
 PIRE, with the Discovery of that INDIAN
 SHORE which is soon to be the Theater
 of our Chronology; a New Face of
 Things appears both to the *Western*
 Parts of EUROPE and the *Eastern* of
 AMERICA. For tho' 110 Years are
 elapsed, since the *New World* became known to the
Old; yet neither the *French, Dutch, nor English,* nor any
 but *Spaniards,* have made any effectual Settlement in
 these *New-found Regions.* And as the Gold and Silver
 Mines had drawn the *Spaniards* to the *Southern and Western*
 Quarters; I cannot find, at this Point of Time, so much as
 one *European Family* in all the vast Extent of Coast from
Florida to Greenland.

The Reason of which I take to be,

That the next Year after COLUMBUS's Discovery, the POPE was pleas'd to give the Crown of SPAIN the Sole Title to all the Lands lying above 100 Leagues West from the Meridian of the Azores: the Bull was Sign'd at Rome, May 4. 1493: * and such was then the Ignorance that reign'd in Europe, as scarce any tho't but he had a Right to Give them. Within 30 Years indeed, the Reformation coming on, began to open the Eyes of many; yet both England, Scotland, Ireland, France, and the Netherlands, were so fully engaged for near 4 score Years, with their own internal Broils about Religion, as well as mutual Wars on this and other Accounts, that they had neither Power nor Leisure to attend to Foreign Settlements.

But in 1598, FRANCE was quieted with the Edict of Nantz in April; and by a Peace in May, with Philip King of Spain and Portugal. Just before Queen Elizabeth Died, the Disturbances in IRELAND were quell'd; and she expired in Peace with all the Princes and States in Europe, except Philip King of Spain, and Arch-Duke Albert Sovereign of the Spanish Netherlands. And King James, as King of SCOTLAND, being then in Amity with all the World; upon his Accession to the English Throne, the 2 British Crowns become united on Him; and, as King of ENGLAND, He soon leaves the Dutch to defend themselves, and concludes a Peace with King Philip and Arch-Duke Albert. So that all the Western Powers of Europe are in Tranquility; except the War continued between the Dutch on one side, and the King of Spain with the Arch-Duke on the other.

The French and English being thus at Liberty, begin to look more seriously now than ever, to the New-found World. First they send to Fish and Trade, and then to Settle: the FRENCH to Canada and Acadia; the ENGLISH to South and North Virginia, Newfoundland & Bermudas. For the English at this Time extend VIRGINIA, from Florida to the Bay of Fundy, divide it into South and North: and the NORTH is that we are now to attend; tho' it seems not to take the Name of NEW ENGLAND till 1614.

Divers

* See the Bull in Purchas and Harris.

Diverse Attempts are made to Settle this rough and Northern Country; First by the FRENCH, who would fair account it Part of *Canada*; and then by the ENGLISH and Both from mere *secular Views*. But such a Train of Crosses accompany these Designs of both the Nations, that they seem to give it over as not worth the Planting: till a *Pious People of England*, not There allowed to *Worship* their MAKER according to His Institutions ONLY, without the Mixture of *Humane Ceremonies*, are spirited to attempt the Settlement; that Here they might enjoy a *Worship purely Scriptural* and leave the same to their Posterity. And they succeeding, open the way for the following Colonies.

In this FIRST PART, I shall therefore Recour, as well the most *material Events* in *Great Britain*, wherewith they were chiefly affected before their leaving it; as the several *Voyages* and *Attempts to Settle* these long neglected Shoars, till their *Arrival* in 1620: Keeping a particular Eye on those remarkable *Steps of Providence* that led to this happy Enterprize; and not omitting the *Primary Settlements* of the *Neighbouring Countries*.

In the *English History*, besides a number of *ancient Pamphlets* Printed within this Period, and which I found in an old broken up Library in *England*; I chiefly follow *Howes* † and *Fuller*. In the *Voyages* and *Attempts of Settlement*; I chiefly make use of *Purchas*, *Smith* and *Gorges*, who liv'd in the Times they wrote of, and the *Two last* personally interested in those Affairs. *Harris* omitting many valuable Accounts of these Parts of the World preserv'd in *Purchas*, and *Purchas* being more of an Original, I prefer the latter. In the Passages relating to the PLIMOUTH-PLANTERS; I chiefly use their Governour *Bradford's Manuscript History* of that *Church* and *Colony*, in *Folio*, who was with them from their Beginning to the End of his *Narrative*; which is now before me, and was never Published.

And

† i. e. both *Howes's Continuation of Stow* in *Folio*, Printed, 1631; as also *Howes's Abridgment*, in *Octavo*, Printed 1618, wherein are several Remarkables not mention'd in the *Folio*.

And in reciting from them, for the greater Satisfaction, keep so closely to the *Words* of my *Authors*, as I have in the *last great Section* of the *Introduction*, that the Reader may conceive them as speaking in their several *Articles*.

As for the *RISE* of these *Plymouth-Planters*; Governour *Bradford* informs us in the following *Terms*, 'That several *Religious People* near the joining *Borders* of *Nottinghamshire*, *Lincolnshire* & *Yorkshire*, finding their *Pious MINISTERS* urged with *SUBSCRIPTION*, ‡ or *Silenced*, and the People greatly vex'd with the *Commisary Courts*, *Apparitors*, and *Pursevants*, which they bare *sundry Years* with much *Patience*, till they were occasioned by the *Continuance* and *Increase* of these *Troubles*, and other *Means*, to see further into these Things by the *Light* of the *Word* of *GOD*: How that not only the *Ceremonies* were *unlawful*; but also the *Lordly* and *Tyrannous Power* of the *Prelates*, who would, *contrary* to the *Freedom* of the *Gospel*, load the *Consciences* of *Men*, and by their *compulsive Power* make a *profane Mixture* of *Things* and *Persons* in *Divine Worship*: that their *Offices*, *Courts* and *Canons* were *unlawful*; being such as have no *Warrant* in the *Word* of *GOD*, but the same that were used in *Popery*, and still retained. Upon which, This People shake off this *Yoke of Antichristian Bondage* *; and as the *LORD'S* *Free People*, join themselves by *Covenant* into a *Church-State*, to walk in all his *Ways*, made known, or to be made known to them, according to their best *Endeavours*, whatever it cost them.

Governour *Bradford's* *History* takes no notice of the *Year* of this *Federal Incorporation*: But *Mr. Secretary Marton*, in his *Memorial*, places it in 1602. And I suppose he had the account, either from some other *Writings* of Governour
Bradford.

‡ i. e. *Subscription* to the *Books* of *Common Prayer*, *Ceremonies*, and all the *Articles*. (*Fuller*)

* They are *Gov. Bradford's* *Words*, as are all the rest in this *Citation*, and He seems to call this, *Antichristian Bondage*; as He judged the *Inventions* of *Men* in *Worship* imposed on the *Conscience*, to be a *Bondage* bro't into the *Church* by the *Papal Policy* and *Power*, against the *Superior Law* of *CHRIST*, the *Genius* of his plain *Religion*, and *Christian Liberty*.

Radford, or the Journals of Governour Winslow, or from
 Oral Conference with *them* or *other* of the 1st Planters; with
 some of whom he was contemporary, and from whence, he
 tells us, he received his Intelligence.

And these are the *Christian People* who were the Founders
 of *Plimouth Church and Colony*: who seem to be some of
 the 1st in *England*, that were brave enough to improve the
 Liberty wherewith the DIVINE AUTHOR of our Religion
 has made us Free, and observe *his Institutions* as their ONLY
 RULE in Church-Order, Discipline & Worship: for which
 they dearly suffered & left their Native Country, and who
 laid the 1st *Foundation* of the *New England Settlements*. But
 we shall hear no more of them till 1606, when under all
 their Sufferings they grow into *Two Congregations*. And
 that the Reader may have some Idea of the PURITANS so
 often mentioned in the Histories of those Times, and from
 whom *this People* derive, I shall only relate the *Definition*
 which Dr. *Fulke*, a famous *Church of England* Writer, has
 given us of them; *They are called PURITANS*, says he, *who*
would have the Church thorowly Reformed. i. e. Purged from all
 those *Inventions*, which have been bro't into it since the
 Age of the *Apostles*, and reduced intirely to the *Scripture-*
Purity.

But I Begin with the *Voyages of Others*. And tho' the
First I mention seems to commence a few Days before
 Queen *Elizabeth* Died; yet the Reader will quickly see
 the *Ship* leaves not the Shoar of *Britain*, till above a
 Fortnight after.

N. B. (1) *I still keep to the JULIAN YEAR*; and where
 Foreign Authors use the *New Style*, I reduce it to
 the *Old*.

(2) E stands for *East*, W for *West*, N for *North*, S for
South, N E for *North-East*, &c.

(3) *b* & *e* added to the *Months*, signify, their *Beginning*
 or *Ending*.

(4) That the Reader may more distinctly see the *Chro-*
nological Articles of the *PLIMOUTH PLANTERS*, their
 Lines begin with *Commas*.

K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1603 James I.	Henry IV.	Philip III.

Mar. 20. THE Bristol Men, by Leave of Sir Walter Raleigh, send Capt. Martin Pring, with a small Ship of 100 Tuns, 30 Men & Boys, and William Brown with a Bark of 26 Tuns, 13 Men and a Boy; who then sail from King-Road [1] for the further Discovery of NORTH VIRGINIA. April 10, They sail from Milford Haven. In June, They sail with the MainCoast and a Multitude of Islands in 43 Deg. and 30 Min. N. land upon them, coast along the Shoar, bare into Cape Cod Bay, sail round the Cape, anchor on the South Side in 41 Deg. and 25. Min. where they land in another Bay and excellent Harbour, make a Barricado, stay Weeks. July, e. the Bark goes homeward, laden with Sassafras, and arrives safe. Aug. 8 or 9, the Ship sets sail, and arrives at King Road again Oct. 2. (ps)

Mar. 31. K. JAMES Proclaimed at *Edinburgh*, King of Scotland, England, France, and Ireland. (cl)

Apr. 3. Lords-Day, He declares in the Great Church at *Edinburgh*; that as God has promoted Him to a greater Power, He must endeavour to establish Religion & take away Corruption in both the Countries; and that he had so settled both the Church & Kingdom in that State which he intended not to alter any ways (cl. pt)

Apr. 5. K. JAMES sets out from *Edinburgh* (cl. bs) Saturday May, 7 Enters London (sp. bs) In his way

[1] I suppose King-Road is near Bristol in England.

ps. Purchas. cl. Calderwood. pt. Petrie. bs. Howes. sp. Speed.

K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1601 James I.	Henry IV.	Philip III.

way to London (vc) 746 Ministers of the Church of England; out of 25 Counties of the 40 in England & the 12 in Wales, Present him a *Petition*, desiring *Reformation* of certain Ceremonies and Abuses of the Church (ab) call'd the *millenary Petition*. (fi)

May 10. Bartholomew Gilbert, in a Bark of 50 Tuns, sails from *Plimouth*, to seek for the 3d Colony left in *South Virginia*. June, 16, arrives at *St. Lucia*: 17, at *Dominica*: 19, at *Nevis*: Thence sails for *South Virginia*: But Friday July, 29, Landing near *CWESPIOC BAY*, the Capt. and 4 more are slain by the *Indians*: the Rest set sail and arrive at *Ratcliff* near *London* in the End of *September*. (ps)

June 4. A *Grace* passes in the University of *Cambridge*: that whoever shall Publickly oppose either in Word or Writing, or any other Way, in the said University, either the *Doctrine* or *Discipline* of the Church of *England*, or any Part thereof; shall, *ipso Facto*, be excluded from having any *Degree*, and Depriv'd of every one they have taken. (vc)

July

(vc) Vice Chancellor &c; of *Oxford*, in their *Answer*, Printed There in *Quarto*, 1603. who say, the *Petition* was exhibited in *April*.

(ab) *Abridgment* of the Book which the Ministers of *Lincoln Diocess* Presented to the King on *Dec. 1. 1604*, and Printed in *Quarto*, 1635, wherein there is a *List* of the Number of the said *Petitioners* in each of the said 25 Counties: viz. 30 in *London*, 57 in *Essex*, 71 in *Suffolk* &c.

f. Fuller.

	K. of Great Brittain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1603	James I.	Henry IV.	Philip III.
June 1 ---- 8.	Arrive Ambassadors from Holland, France, Spain, Arch-Duke Albert &c. (hs. bk)		
July.	Sir Walter Raleigh & others apprehended and committed to the Tower. (hs. bk)		
July 25 Monday	K. James, with his Queen, Crown'd at Westminster. (sp. hs)		
Sept. 21.	Sir Walter Raleigh and others Indited of High Treason, (hs)		
Nov. 10. Thursday,	Sir Walter Raleigh, and 5 others Remov'd from the Tower towards Winchester. [2] Nov 12, Committed to Winchester Castle (hs)		
Nov. 17,	arraign'd and declar'd Guilty, (sp. hs) and Decemb. 15, Return'd to the Tower of London. (hs)		
Dec. 22	From Dec. 23, last Year, to this day, Died of the Plague in London 50,578; and of all Diseases 38, 244: (hs bk) But the Year following, London is clear of the Infection, and all the Shires in England grievously visited (hs)		
Dec. 27.	The famous Mr. Cartwright, Dies in England, at the Age of 60 (fs) and Fuller says, He was most Pious, an excellent Scholar, pure Latinist, accurate Grecian, exact Hebrician. (fs)		

1604.

Jan. 14. Saturday, the CONFERENCE in the Privy Chamber at HAMPTON COURT, Begins, between K. James and the Bishops Party only: wherein He tells them, that However He had liv'd among Puritans, yet since He was

Ten

bk: Sir Richard Baker.

[2] Sir Richard Baker inaccurately places this on Nov. 4 when only the Lord Grey and Gibbam were removed.

K. of Great Brittain.

K. of France.

K. of Spain.

James I.

Henry IV.

Philip III.

Ten Years old, He ever disliked their Opinions; and as CHRIST said, Tho' He liv'd among them, He was not of them. (db) [3]

- 16 Monday, the 2d Conference between the King, and both the Bishops and Puritan Parties together; wherein the Agents for the military 'Plaintiffs' are Dr. Reynolds, Dr. Sparkes, Mr. Knewstubs and Mr. Chaderton; And tho' They are willing to conform and subscribe according to Law, [4] the King declares, *I will have One Doctrine, and One Discipline. One Religion in Substance and in Ceremony*: Tells the Lords and Bishops again, He had liv'd among such sort of Men as the Puritans, ever since he was 10 Years old; but might say of Himself as CHRIST, *Tho' I liv'd among them, I was never of them; nor did anything make me more to detest their Curses, than that they disallow'd of all things which had been us'd in Popery*;

[5]

db. Dr. Bawthw, Dean of Chester, his sum of the Conference, Printed in Quarto, London, 1604.

- [3] and yet he had twice Sworn and subscrib'd their Confession of Faith, viz in 1581 & 1590; and in their General Assembly of Aug. 1590, solemnly Praised God that He was Born to be King of such a Church, the Purest in the World, & that the Service of the Church of England was an ill said *Mass* in English. (cl pt.)

- [4] I should have observ'd, under 1570, that the Act of Parliament required subscription To all the Articles of Religion, which ONLY concern the Confession of the true Christian Faith, and the Doctrine of the Sacraments (Keeble) and under 1583, that Arch-Bishop Whitgit. extending subscription to all the Articles without Exception, occasioned all the Troubles the Puritans endured

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1604	James I.	Henry IV.	Philip III.

[5] Iwares by his *Soub*, He believ'd a *Ecclesiastic* was a Bishop: says, that a *Scottish Presbytery* well agrees with Monarchy, as God and the Devil: at his Going away, says to some, *If this be all they have to say, I shall make them Conform, or I will herry them out of the Land, or do worse*: and One of the Lords said, He was fully perswaded His Majesty spake by the Instinct of the SPIRIT OF GOD. (db)

Jan. 18. Wednesday, the 3^d and last Day's Conference (1st) between the King and Bishops Party only: wherein the King Defends the High Commission, with Subscription to all the Articles and Common Prayer Book, as also the Oath *ex Officio*: and tho' One of the Lord's [6] pleaded, that the Proceedings of the High Commission Courts were like the Spanish Inquisition, wherein Men are urg'd to subscribe more than the Law requir'd, and that by the Oath *Ex Officio*, they were forc'd to accuse Themselves, that they were examin'd upon 20 or 24 Articles upon the sudden, without Deliberation, and for the most part against themselves; yet the King approves and vindicates them all, and says; *If any, after things are well order'd with not be Quiet and shew his Obedience, the Church were better without Him, and He were worthy to be HANG'D*: the Lords and the Rest stood amaz'd at his Majesty's wife
Dis-

[5] By this it appears, He mistook or misrepresented the Puritans: For their main Dispute was only against *Humane Inventions*; and their being us'd in Popery, was an additional Reason to put them away.

[6] Most of the Lords of his Majesty's Council were Present in all these Conferences (db)

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
604	James I.	Henry IV	Philip III.

Dilcourie: Arch-Bishop *Whitgift* said, Undoubtedly His Majesty spake by the special Assistance of GOD'S SPIRIT: Dr. *Bancroft* Bp. of London, upon his Knee protested, His Heart melted with Joy, and made haste to acknowledge to Almighty GOD the singular mercy receiv'd at his Hands in giving such a King, as since CHRIST his Time, the like He tho't hath not been; whereto the *Lords* with one Voice did yield a very affectionate Acclamation. (2ly) Then Dr. *Reynolds* and his Associates were call'd in: and tho' they intreated that the *Cross in Baptism* and *Surplice* might not be urg'd upon some honest, Godly and painful Ministers; yet his Majesty willed that the *Bishop* should set a Time, and if they wou'd not yield, whatsoever they were, to remove 'em: *Either let them Conform, and that shortly, or they shall hear of it.* (db) *

Jan. 31. K. *James* issues a Writ for a Convocation of the Province of *Canterbury* to meet before Arch-Bishop *Whitgift* as President at *St. Paul's London*, on *March, 20* (cn)

Feb. 29. Wednesday, Arch Bishop *Whitgift* Dies, Æt. 73. (hs. H.) and Dr. *Barlow* says, that not many Days before He was stricken, He most earnestly desired that He might not live to see the *Parliament* which is to meet on *March 19*.

Mar. 5. K. *James* issues a Proclamation; that the same Religion with *Common Prayer*, and *Episcopacy*

* I recite these Passages to show the King's and Bishops Disposition towards the *Puritans*, and what little Favour These could now expect from the *Other*.

(cn.) *Book of Canons* Printed in Quarto, London, 1616.

H. *Hollandi* Herologia Anglica.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1604	James I.	Henry IV.	Philip III.

copal Jurisdiction, shall fully and only to Publickly exercis'd, in all Respects, as in the Reign of Queen *Elizabeth*, without Hope of Toleration of any other. (hj) [7]

Mar. 9. The *Arch Bishop* being Dead, K. *James* issues a 2d Writ, for the Convocation to appear before Dr. *Bancroft*, Bishop of *London*, as President. (cn)

Mar. 19. K. *James's* 1st Parliament meets. at *Westminster* (bf. kb) when He declares the *Puritans* to be a sect unable to be suffer'd in any well Govern'd Common Wealth; acknowledges the *Roman Church*, to be our *Mother Church*, altho' defil'd with some Infirmities and Corruptions; professes He wou'd be content to meet Her in the *mid way*; and that since his coming, He has been so far from Increasing the Burthens of the *Papists* that He had as much as either Time, Occasion or Law cou'd permit, lightened them &c. (kj)

Mar. 20. Convocation meets at *St Paul's London* before Bishop *Bancroft* President. (cn)

Apr. 12. And *June*, 25, K. *James* issues his Letters *Patents*, to impower the Convocation to agree on such *Ecclesiastical Canons* as they shou'd think fit: they accordingly draw up a *Book* of 141 *Canons*, and desire the King's assent to them which he Grants, confirming the said *Canons*, and commanding the same to be observed both in the Province of *Conterbury* and *Turk*. (cn)

July

[7] Both *Houes* Abridgment and Sir *Richard Baker* wrongly Place This in the following Year.

kb. Keble.

hj. K. *James's* Speech, Printed in Quarto, *London* 1604.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1604	James I.	Henry IV.	Philip III.

- July 6. K. *James* issues a Proclamation: wherein He orders the *Puritan Ministers*, either to Conform, (*bn*) before the last of *November* (*ed*) or Dispose of themselves and Families some other way, as being Men unfit for their Obstinacy and Contempt, to occupy such Places. (*bn*)
- Aug. 18. Articles of *Peace* and *Commerce* Concluded at *London*, with the King of *Spain* and Arch-Duke *Albert*. (*ar*) August 19, Lordsday, King *James* swears to the said Articles; and Afternoon, the *Peace* Proclaim'd. (*hs*)
- Sept. 20. *Ostend* surrendered by the *Dutch* to the *Spaniards*, having been besieg'd from *June*, 25, 1601: and During the Siege, there Died in the City 72,900 Persons, and many more of the *Spanish* Besiegers without it. (*c*)
- Oct. 24. K. *James* Proclaimed King of *Great-Britain*. (*hs*)
- Dec 10. Dr. *Bancroft* Bishop of *London*, Translated to the Arch-Bishoprick of *Canterbury* (*hs*) who drives on Conformity very fiercely thro' all his Province. (*fl*)
- Dec. 18. Arch Bishop *Bancroft* writes a Letter to the Bishops of his Province: wherein He calls the *Puritan Ministers* Disobedient, Obstinate &c: Requires that none be admitted to Ecclesiastical Functions without *Subscription* to the *Canons*; and to Deprive those who are in the Church, unless they will both Conform and also *subscribe according to the Canons*. (*bn*)

1605

bn. Arch-Bishop *Bancroft*, in his Letter to the Bishops of his Province, Dated, *Dec.* 18. 1604.

ed. A Tract entituled *Certain Demands, &c*, Printed in Quarto 1605. *c. Calvinus.*

ar. Articles of Peace &c, Printed in Quar. *London* 1605.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain
1605	James I.	Henry IV.	Philip III.

Mar. 31. **L**ord's-day, Capt. George Weymouth, with 29 Persons, sails from the *Downes* (p) being employ'd by the Lord Arundel of *Wardour* for the Discovery of a N. W. Passage to the *East Indies*. But falling short of his Count: (gr) *Tuesday*, May, 14, descries Land in 41 *Deg* and 30 *Min* N, in the midst of dangerous Rocks and Shoals: upon which He puts off to Sea: the Wind blowing Hard at S S W and W S W many Days *Fryday* May 17, descries Land again, the next Day, finds it an *Island*, anchors on the North side, lands and calls it *GEORGE'S Island* whence He sees the Main Land and many other Islands. *Lord's-day*, May, 19, weighs and sails to another Island, 3 Leagues nearer the Main: goes into an excellent Harbour, which He calls *Pentecost Harbour*; and the next day, goes ashoar in the Shallop. *Thursday*, May, 30, sails in a Shallop up a *Great River*, and the next day Returned. [8] *Tuesday*, June, 11, goes up the River in his Ship, 26 miles; says tis Half a mile wide, for 40 miles into the Country. *Thursday*, June, 13, sails in his Shallop or Pinace, 20 miles into the western Branch of the River, and sets up a Cross. *Friday*, June, 14, the Ship goes down the River: upon a *Rock* in the midst of the Harbour, He finds the *Lat.* 43 *Deg* 20 *min.* and the *Variation* 11 *Deg.*

gr. Sir *Ferdinando Gorges*, Governor of the *Island & Fort of Plimouth* in *England*, in his *Narration*, &c.

[3] This seems to be *Sagadelock*; and Sir *F. Gorges* doubtless mistakes in calling it *Pemaquid River*.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France:	K. of Spain.
1605	James I.	Henry IV.	Philip III.

15 min W. Lord's-day, June, 16, sets sail: and Thursday, July, 18, arrives at Dartmouth (ps) [8]

Apr. 8. Mr. John Stow, being 80 Years Old, a laborious Writer of the *English Annals*, for 47 Y. is Buried, and *Howes* continues them. (bs)

July 2. Tuesday, the General Assembly of the Church of Scotland meeting at Aberdeen; the King's Commissioner presents them a Letter from the Lords of the Council requiring them to dissolve without appointing another Assembly: However, according to Custom, they appoint another to meet on Sept, 24, and then dissolve: For which the Council sends Mr. John Forbes the Moderator and 13 other Ministers to several Prisons. (cl pt)

Oct. 13. Lord's-day, Beza Dies at Geneva (cc, ml) Aged 86 Years, 3 Months, & 19 Days. (ml) [9]

Nov. 1. The Names being taken of the Puritan Ministers Depriv'd, under Admonition and deny'd Admittance, for not Subscribing, amount to above 270: and yet of 8 Bishopricks no account is Given. Some had Preach'd in the Church 10, some 20, some 30 Years, some more: and till now, in some Churches, the Ceremonies had

[8] Sir F. Gorges, says, Capt. Weymouth bro't Thence 5 Natives; and happening to put into Plimouth, Sir Ferdinand then Governour There, receiv'd 3 of them, viz. Manida, Sletwarrees and Tisquantum, and kept them full 3 Years.

cc. Continuatio Calvisii. ml. Melch Adamus.

[9] Petavius mistakes in saying Oct. 25; and Alsted, in placing his Death in 1600.

K. of Great Britain, K. of France, K. of Spain.
1605 James I. Henry IV. Philip III.

It has been disus'd for 10 Years, in others 20,
others 30, in others more. (cr)

Nov. 5, Tuesday, at 3 this morning, the GUNPOWDER TREASON Plot discover'd to have been Executed this Day, by the Papists; by Blowing up the Parliament, who were to meet this Day with 36 Barrels of Gunpowder laid under the House; (dssp. bf), and when the Blast was made it was to be charg'd on the Puritans. (bb)

Nov. 9 Saturday, K. James comes to Parliament and makes a Speech; (bf) wherein He Cautioned them against Judging rashly of the Roman Catholics in General; says that many among them may remain Good and faithful Subjects but detesting and thinking the Cruelty of Puritans worthy of Fire, that will admit no Salvation to any Papist. (kj)

1606 Jan. 10. THOUGH 'twas commonly tho't the Deliberance from the Popish Powder Plot would have mov'd the King to desist from troubling Ministers in England for Nonconforming to the Ceremonies, and Ministers in Scotland for standing to their confirmed Liberty; yet this Day, by the King's Command, the Moderator and 5 other of the imprisoned Ministers

A Quarto Tract, Entitul'd, Certain Reasons why the Preachers who Refuse to Subscribe, should not be Remov'd or inhibited to Preach. Printed in those Times.

df. Discourse of the Treason; Quar. Printed by the Kings Printer, at London, 1605. Calvisius wrongly plac'd the Gunpowder Treason in 1606.

bb. Benj. Hubbards Sermo. Secularis; Printed, in Quarto at London, 1648.

bj. K. James's Speech Printed in Quarto at Lencoe. 1605.

K. of Great Britain. K. of France. K. of Spain.
James I. Henry IV. Philip III.

Ministers in Scotland are arraign'd of Treason at
Lisbgor, for Declining the Jurisdiction of the
Council in Ecclesiastical matters: and after a
deal of tampering, flattering, threatening &
the major Part of the Court brings them in
Guilty: upon which they are ordered into
closter Ward, and none allow'd Access to them
(cl. pr) and Feb. 3, a Proclamation at *Edinburgh*,
that none speak against the Proceedings of the
King, Council, or Court in Trying and Pun-
ishing them, or against any other Proceedings
of the King, Council, or State, past, present, or
to come, upon Pain of Death. (cl)

Sir *John Popham* Lord Chief Justice of the
King's Bench, prevails on many Lords and o-
thers, to Petition King *James* for the settling
two Plantations on the main Coasts of *America*:
upon which, (gr)

10. K. *James*, by Patent Divides *VIRGINIA*
into 2 Colonies: the SOUTHERN call'd the *First*
Colony, between 34 and 41 Deg. North, He
Grants to the *London Company*: the NORTHERN,
call'd the *Second Colony*, between 38 and 45
Deg. North, He Grants to the *Plymouth Com-
pany*; Forbidding both to Plant within a 100
Miles of each other; and Giving each Colony,
a Council of 13, to Rule, Coin &c. (ps)

27. K. *James* writes to Mr. *James* and *Andrew*
Melvin and 6 other principal Presbyterian Mi-
nisters in *Scotland*, to come to him before *Sept.*
13, to treat with them for the Peace of the
Church There: This being the Pretence; but
the Event proves that the Policy is to detain
and confine them, that by their Absence, *Epis-
topacy* may be advanc'd in *Scotland*. (cl)

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1606	James I.	Henry IV.	Philip III.

July 6 Parliament of *Scotland* meets at *Perth* which against the Protestation of the Commissioners of the *Presbyteries* thro' the Kingdom Restores the state of *Bishops* to their ancient Dignities, Prerogatives, Tithes, Rents, Third &c; contrary to the Constitution and Doctrine of the Church of *Scotland* Preached these 40 Years, and contrary to the Confession of Faith Sworn and Subscribed in 1581 and 1590 by the King and his Household &c: (cl)

July Sir *Edward Coke* made Lord Chief Justice of the *Common Pleas* in *England*. (hs)

Aug. 12. *Tuesday*, Lord Chief Justice *Popham*, Sir *F. Gorges*, and some others of the *Plimouth Company*, send Capt. *Henry Challons* (ps) a brave Gentleman (pc) from *Plimouth*, in a *Ship* of 50 Tuns, 29 *English*, with *Mannido* and *Affecomit* 2 of the 5 *Savages* bro't last Year from a goodly *River* thrice discover'd by Him in *NORTH VIRGINIA*, in 43 Deg. 20 N; to make a further Discovery of these Coasts, and if occasion offers, to leave as many Men as He cou'd spare, in the Country: But failing to *Medeira*, *St. Iulia*, *Porto Rico*, and thence toward *North Virginia*; on *Nov. 10*, He is taken (ss) by the *Spanish Fleet* (gr) of 8 *Ships* (ps) coming from the *Havana* (gr) who carry Him into *Spain* (ps gr)

Shortly after Capt *Challons's* Departure from *Plimouth*, the Lord Chief Justice sends another *Ship*

K. of Great Britam	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
James I.	Henry IV.	Philip III.

depart from Bristol (gr) under Thomas Hanam
Commander and Martin Prinn Master, with
more supplies to second Capt. Challons: But
not finding Capt. Challons There, they Return
to England. (pc) [10]

Aug e. The 8 Scots Ministers which the King had
wrote to, being arriv'd at London, are there
Detained, without any Reason but the King's
Pleasure: and Sept. 30, are by His Majesty oblig'd
to hear Dr. King Preach a most virulent In-
vective against Presbyteries; Crying to the
King Down, Down with them (cl)

Oct b The King orders the 6 condemned Ministers
in Scotland to be Banish'd his Dominions all
their Days, and the other 8 imprisoned There,
to be confin'd in several Places remote from
their former Dwellings. (cl)

' The Purely Reformed Church in the North
' of England, by reason of the Distance of their
' Habitations, are obliged to Assemble in two
' several Places & become two distinct Churches
' In One, besides several of Note, is Mr. John
' Smith, a Man of able Gifts and a good
' Preacher, who is chosen their Pastor: But
' these afterwards Going over into the Low
' Countries, and falling into errors; There, for
' the most part Bury themselves and their
' Names. But in the OTHER CHURCH, (the
' Subject of our Chronology) besides several
' worthy

[10] Sir F Gorges says, the said Prinn makes a perfect
Discovery of all those Rivers and Harbours, & brings
the most exact Account of that Coast that ever came to
my Hand since. (gr)

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain
1606	James I.	Henry IV.	Philip III

‘ worthy Men, is Mr. *Richard Cuyton*, a great
 ‘ and Rev. Preacher, and the Famous Mr. *Joh*
 ‘ *Robinson*, who is afterwards their Pastor for
 ‘ many Years, till God takes Him away by
 ‘ Death: as also Mr. *William Brewster*, a Re-
 ‘ verend Man, who afterwards is chosen Elder
 ‘ and lives with them till Old Age. (B)

Dec. 20. Saturday, The London Company send forth
 Capt. *Christopher Newport*, with a Ship of 100
 Tuns, another of 40, and a Pinace of 20, for
 SOUTH VIRGINIA: who then sail from Lon-
 don, but first to the West India Islands. (ps)

1607.

Mar. 3. ONE of the Scots Ministers at London al-
 low'd to Return, on account of his Wife's
 dangerous Illness, provided He wou'd neither go
 to Synods nor Presbyteries: April 26, Lord's day,
 the King's Council send Mr. *A. Melvin* to the Tow-
 er; where they keep Him above 4 Years, for
 writing a Latin Epigram upon the Altar in the
 King's Chappel: and May, 6, the other 6 Scots
 Ministers at London order'd to be confin'd in
 several Places in the 2 Kingdoms, for no other
 Pretence than that they had not given the King
 Satisfaction in the Questions He propos'd to
 them about his own arbitrary Power in Church
 Matters. (cl)

Apr. 26. Capt. *Newport* Descries South Virginia,
 Enters CHESAPEAKE BAY, and lands. April,
 29, He Names the Southern Point, *Cape Henry*
 May, 13, they Chuse Mr. *Edward Wingfield*
 President for 1 Year. May, 14, Land all their
 Men

K. of Great Britain. K. of France. K. of Spain.
607 James I. Henry IV. Philip III.

Men and begin a Colony, at a Place they call JAMES TOWN. Monday, June, 22, Capt. Newport sails for England, leaving the Præsident with 104 Persons. Aug 22, Dies in this Southern Colony, Capt Barth Gosnold, the 1st Mover of this Plantation, and one of the Council. Sept. 11, Præsident Wingfield displaced by his Council, and John Rolfe chosen Præsident (ps)

May 21. Thursday, Dr. John Reynolds, King's Professor of Divinity in Oxford, Dies There (bl. fl) Ætatis 58. He had been Dean of Lincoln, but exchange'd it for the Præsidentship of C. C. Col. Oxon (fl) and Fuller says, He was acquainted with all Arts and Sciences; most excellent in all useful Tongues; had read over all Writers, Profane, Ecclesiastical, Divine; Councils, Fathers, Histories of the Church: His memory miraculous, his Judgment mature; his Piety most eminent; modest, courteous, affable (fl) and the Chief of the Puritans at the Hampton Court Conference. (db)

May 21. The Plymouth Adventures send forth Capt George Popham, as Præsident, and Capt. Rawley Gilbert, as Admiral (sm) with 2 Ships and 100 Landmen (pc) who then set sail from Plymouth, for NORTH VIRGINIA. Aug 11, they fall with Monahigan: [11] and settle at the Mouth of Sagadahock, 9 or 10 Leagues to the Southward. (sm)

Aug 24

sm. Capt. John Smith.

[11] Sir F. Gorges says, three Ships, and that they arrive at their Place of Rendevouz on August 8. (gr)

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain
1607	James I.	Henry IV.	Philip III.

Aug. 24 Mr *Thomas Brigeman*, Rector of *Hauke* in *Bedfordshire*, Dies, about the 51st Year of his Age, (ft) and *Fuller* says, He wrote a learned *Comment* in most pure *Latin* on the *Canticles* and *Revelations*; He always carry'd a *Greek Testament* with Him, Read it out every *Fortnight*. His Life was most *Angelical*; a great Opposer of the *Ceremonies*; his daily *Discourse* against *Episcopal Government*; and was never known to be mov'd with *Anger*. (ft)

THOMAS LAD, a Merchant of *Yarmouth*, having been long imprison'd by the *High Commission*, cou'd not be Bail'd; because having formerly answer'd on *Oath* twice, before the *Bishop's Chancellor* of *Norwich*, to certain *Articles* about a *Conventicle*, He refus'd to answer on a *New Oath*, without sight of his former *Answers*; and *RICHARD MANSEL*, a *Preacher*, being charg'd to have been Partaker in a *Petition* exhibited to the *House of Commons*, and refusing the *Oath Ex Officio*, to answer to certain *Articles* propounded to Him, was long imprison'd by the *Commissioners* at *Lambeth*; and cou'd not be Bail'd: Both Prisoners are now bro't to the *Bar*, upon the *Writ of Habeas Corpus*; where Mr. *NICHOLAS FULLER*, an honest Man and an eminent *Lawyer* Pleaded, that they ought to be discharg'd; by an *Argument* to prove, that the *Ecclesiastical Commissioners* have no *Legal Power* to put the *Oath Ex Officio*, nor *Imprison*, nor *Fine* any of his Majesty's Subjects For which Arch-Bishop *Bancroft* Gets this
Learned

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
45	James I.	Henry IV.	Philip III.

Learned Councillor into Prison, and Prosecutes Him there to Death. (ff) [12]

' *This Fall*, Mr. ROBINSON's Church in the North of England, being extreamly Harras'd ; some cast into Prison, some beset in their Houses, some forc'd to leave their Farms and Families ; they begin to fly over to HOLLAND, for Purity of Worship and Liberty of Conscience. (B)

Near Winter, Capt. Newport arrives at SOUTH-VIRGINIA, with fresh Supplies, and stays 14 Weeks : And *this Winter*, James-Town catching Fire is Burnt ; but soon repaired. (ps)

Dec. 15. The 2 English Ships sail from SAGADEHOCK (gr) with all their Company, except 45, for England. (sm)

1608.

This Winter, Extream Cold, both in Europe and North America, (ps gr) and in the midst thereof (pc) the Store-House, most of the Provisions (gr) and Lodgings at SAGADEHOCK are Burnt ; which exceedingly distresses the People : And *this Winter* old Capt. Popham, their Præsident Dies, in this North Plantation, the only one of the Company that Dies There ; and Capt. Rawley Gilbert succeeds as Præsident. (pc)

Upon the Ships Arrival in England from SAGADEHOCK, L.Ch Justice Popham orders the Council

[12] Though Dr. Fuller mentions not the Year of this Prosecution ; yet by the Preface to the Lawyer's Argument, Printed in Quar. t'is Year, in Holland, it appears, He was now in Prison.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain
1603	James I.	Henry IV.	Philip III.

Council of Plimouth to lend them back with Supplies (gr)

The *Spring* approaching, Capt. *Newport* sails from SOUTH VIRGINIA for *England*; and Capt. *Nelson* arrives at *James-Town*: These Ships bring near 100 Men, and 120 Persons. (ff)

Feb. 25 Mr. *Murray* Minister of *Leith* in *Scotl.* having been committed to the Castle of *Edinburgh* for opposing the Rise of Bishops; is this day bro't before the King's Council There, and dismiss'd: For which the King sends them a sharp Rebuke, and a Warrant to the Captain of the Guard to commit Him again: so without any new Citation, nor convicted of any offence, upon the King's private Direction only, He is committed to the Castle again, and there detain'd a Year: And then the King orders the Council to send Him to a remote Part of the Kingdom, and there confine and forbid Him to Preach. (ck)

' *This Spring*, more of Mr. *ROBINSON's* Church, thro' great Difficulties from their Pursuers, get over to HOLLAND: And afterwards, the Rest, with Mr. *Robinson* and Mr. *Breester*; who are of the last, having Tarry'd to help the weakest over before them. They first settle at *Amsterdam*; and stay There a Year: where Mr. *Smith* and his Church had gotten before them. (B)

This Spring, By the Lord Chief Justice's Order (gr) Two Ships are furnish'd with fresh Supplies for NORTH VIRGINIA (fm) and as they are waiting for a Wind, they hear of his Death: [13]

Howeve

[13] Sir *F. Gorges* says, the Lord Chief Justice's Death suddenly follow'd the Death of the President. (gr)

68	K. of Great Britain. James I	K. of France. Henry IV.	K. of Spain. Philip III.
----	---------------------------------	----------------------------	-----------------------------

However they sail, & arrive at SAGAREHOCK (gr) not long after the Death of Præfident Popham (sm)

Soon after these Ships sail'd from England Sir John Gilbert Dies, and leaves his younger Brother Rauley † Gilbert his Heir; (gr) & Sir Francis Popham, Son to the Lord Chief Justice, with some of the Adventurers, send a new Supply (pc) and this Ship also arrives at SAGAREHOCK in some small time after the other: (sm) By these Ships the Plantation being inform'd of the Death of Lord Chief Justice Popham and then of Sir John Gilbert; (sm) and Capt. Gilbert the Præfident being oblig'd to go home and take care of the Estate his Brother left Him; the whole Colony brakes up and Returns with Him (gr) this Year to England: And thus this Plantation Begins and Ends in one Year; (sm) brand the Country as over Cold and not Habitable by our Nation; and the Adventurers Give over their Design. (gr)

After this, Sir Francis Popham sends Capt. Williams (sm) divers Times to this Coast, for Trade and Fishing only; (pc) and Sir F. Gorges also sends Vines with a Ship to Fish, Trade and Discover, for some Years together, and hires Men to stay the Winter, wherein the Plague rag'd among the Indians (gr) [which I suppose is the Winter 1616, 17]

But upon the Colony's Braking up, the French settle themselves within our Limits. (pc)

July

† Sir F. Gorges's Printer mistakes in naming Him Ralpl Gilbert.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain
1608	James I.	Henry IV.	Phillip III

July 25. *Tuesday*, a *General Assembly* meets at *Lithgow* in *Scotland*, intreats the King, as several *Presbyteries* and *Synods* had before, to grant the *Banish'd* and *Confined Ministers* their *Liberty*; But it cou'd not be obtained (cl)

This Year, Capt. *John Smith* sails up the *Rivers* and *Discovers* the *Inland Parts* of *SOUTH VIRGINIA*: *Sept. 10*, He receives from *England* *Letters Patent*, to be *President*: And now, it seems that Capt. *Newport* arrives, with 70 *Persons* more; and sailing for *England*, leaves 200 in all the *Colony*. (ps)

1609.

MR. *Robinson's* CHURCH having stay'd at *Amsterdam* about a Year; seeing Mr. *Smith* and his Company was fallen into *Contention* with the Church that was there before Him, and that the *Flames* thereof were like to break out in that *Ancient Church* itself (as afterwards lamentably came to pass) which Mr. *Robinson* and *Church* prudently foreseeing; they think it best to Remove in Time, before they were any way engaged with the same: tho' they knew it wou'd be very much to the Prejudice of their outward Interest, as it prov'd to be; yet valuing *Peace* and *Spiritual Comfort* above other *Riches*, they therefore Remove to *LEYDEN* about the *Beginning* of the 12 Years *Truce* between the *Dutch* & *Spaniards* Chuse Mr. *BREWSTER* assistant to Him in the Place of an *Elder*; and there live in great *Love* & *Harmony* both among themselves and their

K. of Great Britain.	K. of France	K. of Spain.
James I	Henry IV.	Philip III.

their neighbour Citizens for above *Eleven*
 Years, till they Remove to NEW-ENGLAND
 (B) [14]

Apr. 9. The *Dutch* agree to the *Twelve* Years
 Truce with the King of *Spain* and Arch-Duke
Albert. (c)

May. King *James* Establishes the *East-India* Com-
 pany for ever. (bs)

The Council for *SOUTH VIRGINIA* having
 mov'd the King to call in their Commission, and
 Receiv'd a new One; they make Sir *Thomas*
West Ld de la *War*, General of the Colony; Sir
Thomas *Gates*, his Lieutenant; Sir *George* *Som-*
ers Admiral; Sir *Thomas* *Dale* High Marshal;
 Sir *Ferdinand* *Wainman* General of the Horse;
 and Capt *Newport* Vice-Admiral. (sm)

May 15. Sir *Thomas* *Gates* and Vice-Admiral *New-*
port, sail with 7 *Ships* from *Woolwich* for *SOUTH*
VIRGINIA: May 20, arrive at *Plimouth*,
 where Sir *George* *Somers* joins them with a
Ketch and a *Pinnace*: Friday, *June* 2, they all
 sail, with 500 People, (ps) Men, Women and
 Children (bs) from *Plimouth*: and *June* 8,
 from *Falmouth* (ps)

June. Sir *John* *Bourcher* brings the making of *Alome*,
 to Perfection in *England* (bs)

July 10.

[14] By this it appears that both *Baylie* and *Hornius* are
 Mistaken, in representing that Mr *Smith* set up his
 Church at *Leyden*; when it was to avoid Him & his
 Company, that Mr *Robinson* and his Church Removed
 from *Amsterdam* to *Leyden*. And by several Passages
 in Governor *Bradford's* Manuscript, it seems, as if they
 Began to Remove to *Leyden* at the end of 1608.

c. *Calvisius*.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1609.	James I.	Henry IV.	Philip III.

July 10. Or thereabout, Capt. *Samuel Argal* arrives in SOUTH-VIRGINIA, to Fish for *Star-geon* (ps) who now 1st discovers the direct Passage from *England* Thither, and not to *Goby* the *West Indies*, as before. (ks)

July 24. Monday, the *South Virginia Fleet* crossing the Gulf of *Bahamas*, a most vehement Storm separates them July, 28, Friday, Sir *George Somers* descryes *BERMUDAS*; from Him therefore call'd the *Somer-Islands*; is forc'd to Run the Ship ahoar; and in their Boats, all get safe to Land; being 150 Men, Women and Children; and there they Live till *May* following; Sir *Thomas Gates* and Vice Admiral *Newport* being in the same Ship with them. (ps) [15]

Aug. 11. Four other Ships of the *Fleet* arrive at SOUTH-VIRGINIA: a few days after, 2 more; and after this the *Pinnace*. And Capt. *Smith*, the *Præsident*, being exceedingly Burnt with Powder, and the new Comers setting up against Him (pr) about *Sept.* 29, He sails for *England* (sm) and they Chuse Mr. *Francis West* *Præsident*, who soon follows Him: And then they Chuse Mr. *George Piercy* *Præsident*. (ps)

This Summer, Mr. *Henry Hudson* an *English* man, but employ'd by the *Dutch*, searching for a N W. Passage to the *East Indies*, sails to *Newfoundland*, and all along the Coast, to *Cape Cod*.

[15] This *Shipwrack* bringing the *Bermudas* to the special Knowledge and Esteem of the *English*, proves the Occasion of their Settling and Possessing them.

K. of Great Britain.	K. of France	K. of Spain.
James I.	Henry IV.	Philip. III.

Cod and Virginia, as far as 33 Degrees. (bar) and now I suppose it is that He discovers HUDSONS RIVER.

9 James Arminius Professor of Divinity at Leyden Dies (pa) there, Ætatis 49, (cc) and Conradus Vorstius call'd to supply his Place. (pa)

ov. b. At the King's Direction, the Council of Scotland confine Mr. Fairfull, Minister of Dumferling, during the King's Pleasure; only for Praying for the distressed Ministers, both within and without the Country. (cb)

Mr. NICHOLAS FULLER, who was cast into Prison by Arch Bishop Bancroft in 1607, for Pleading in Defence of his Clients, against the Power of the Ecclesiastical Commissioners, is still by the Arch-Bishop kept in Prison: many were his Petitions to the King for Enlargement, But the Arch-Bishop preacquainted the King and represented to Him, that this Lawyer was the Champion of the Nonconformists: So that He lay in Prison till He Died this Year. (ft)

Dec. 21. Mr. William Ames, Fellow of Christ's College in Cambridge, Preaches in St. Mary's against Playing Cards and Dice: at which many are so offended, that to avoid Expulsion, He goes beyond Sea: and the States of Friesland not long after Chuse Him Professor (ft) of Divinity in their University of Francker. [16]

Feb.

bar. Harris. p.2. Pref. ad Acta synod Dordrec.
cc. Continuatio Calvisii.

[16] Dr. Thomas Fuller places this about 1610, 11, and his Preaching on St. Thomas's day, which is Dec. 21; yet by Publishing his Puritanismus Anglicanus at Francfort in 1610, I chuse to place this Preaching on Dec. 21. 1609, rather than 1610.

K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
James I.	Henry IV.	Philip III.

1610.

- Feb. 15. **T**HE King erects 2 *High Commission Courts in Scotland*; under the Arch-Bishops of *St. Andrews* and *Glasgow*, and over their several Provinces: which Commission puts the King in Possession of absolute Power to use the Bodies and Goods of his Subjects at Pleasure without Form or Process of Common Law: and now the *Scots Bishops* are become Patrons of Benefices, Lords of Parliament, Council, Exchequer, Session High Commission &c (d)
- Feb. 28. The Lord *Delaware* has his Patent seal'd by the *South-Virginia Company*, to be Lord Governor and Capt. General of all the Colonies There, during his Life: and before *March* 24 He sails with 3 *Ships* and 150 Men, accompany'd with Knights and Gentlemen of Quality; Capt. *Argal* conducting Him Thither. (hs)
- Apr. 27. King *James* Grants to divers Persons a Patent of Incorporation, &c: to settle a Colony in *NEWFOUNDLAND*; [17] In *June*, they send Mr *JOHN GUY*, as Governor, with 39 Persons: who arrives There; Begins the Colony in *Conception Bay*; and There Winters. (ps)
- May 3. *Thursday*, the French *Queen* Crown'd at *Paris*, (hs p) the next day, King *Henry* the IV her Lord, stab'd to Death (c. p.) by a Popish Priest (pn) in his Coach: and his Son *Lewis* XIII, Reigns: (c) But the *Queen* made *Regent* during her Son's minority. (p hs)
- May 10. Sir *Thomas Gates*, Sir *George Somers* and Vice Admiral *Newport*, sail from *Bermudas* in their

[17] *Howes* sets the Date of the Patent on *May*, 2, this Year; But I adhere to *Purchas*, who recites the Patent, p. *Petavius*. pn. *Pointer*.

K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

10

their new-built Pinaces for SOUTH VIRGINIA, leaving 1200 Men, who refus'd to come aboard them: *Munday* May 21. they descry *South Virginia*, sail into *Chefepiak Bay*, and find Mr *George Piercy* Præfident: *Wednesday* May 23, they anchor and land at *James Town*, with about 150 Persons: But finding the Colony from 500, when Capt. *Smith* went away, reduc'd to 60, and in a wretched state; they all resolve for *England*: and on *June* 7, the whole Company gets aboard, leaves JAMES TOWN, and sails down the River. [*And thus the FIRST COLONY there Brakes up.*] But the next day the Lord *Delaware* from *England*, meets them: upon which they return and land at the *Town* again. (ps)

June 10. *Lords-day*, the Lord *Delaware* arrives with his three *Ships* and 150 Men, at *James Town*, lands, and takes upon Him the Government. *June* 19, Sir *G. Sommers* and Capt. *Argal* sail from *James Town* for *BERMUDAS* for Provisions. (ps)

June. Another *Ship*, with 20 Men and a years Provisions, sent after the Lord *Delaware* from *England*, for *South Virginia*. (hs)

July 15. Sir *T. Gates* sails for *England*: and *July* 16, Sir *G. Sommers* and Capt. *Argal*, meeting with violent Storms and contrary Winds, bare away for *CAPE COD*; and *July* 26, for *SAGADEHOCK*: the Night after, being very foggy, they lose sight of each other: *July* 29, Capt. *Argal* comes to a *Rocky Island*, in 43 Deg & 40 N. lands upon it, finds great store of Seels, and calls it *Seel-Rock*: *Aug.* 14, shapes his Course for *Cape-Cod*; to the back side of which He

R

comes

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1610	James I.	Lewis XII	Philip III

comes on Aug. 19, in 41 Deg. 50 min. finds the Variation N. 13 deg. W : || The next day sails for SOUTH VIRGINIA ; Aug. 27, anchors in 9 Fathom, in a very great Bay ; the Southern Cape of which, is in 38 & 20 N : [18] August 27, arrives at Cape Charles, the N. Cape of Chesapeake Bay. Sir G. Sommers also sails, first to Sagadebock, then to Bermudas ; where he Dines and his Pinace returns to England, leaving three Men behind them, (ps.)

Octob. 21. By the King's Commission, the Bishops of London, Ely, Worcester and Rochester, constitute the Scottish Bishops in the Bp of London's Chappel ; viz Mr John Spotswood -- A Bp. of Glasgow, Mr Garven Hamilton, -- Bp of Galloway, and Mr. Andrew Lamb, -- Bp of Brechin (hs)

Nov. 2 Rich Bancroft, A. Bp of Canterbury, Dies (hs)

Dec. 31. The King, by Proclamation, Dissolves his first Parliament. (hsbk)

' This Year, comes out -- a Justification of Separation from the Church of England, by JOHN ROBINION ; Pages 476, in Quarto (rb), and about this Time, and the following Years, many come to his Church at Leyden, from diverse Parts of England ; so as they grow a Great Congregation." (B) and this Year, Dr. Ames Publishes his Puritanismus Anglicanus, in Latin Octavo, at Francfort in Germany (Lib. ipse)

1611.

THIS Winter four of the English Die at NEWFOUNDLAND. (ps)

March

|| In the Margin of Purchas, 'tis N. 15 Deg. W. [18] This seems to be the Bay since call'd Delaware-Bay (rb. See the Book it self ; which is doubtless Printed at Leyden)

K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

Mar. 15. Or thereabouts, Sir *Thomas Dale*, sails for SOUTH VIRGINIA, with 3 Ships, 300 People, 12 Kine, 20 Goats, and all things needful for the Colony (*hs*)

Mar. After 8 Months Illness there, L. *Delaware* sails in Capt. *Argal* for England; leaving upward of 200 Men, and Capt. *George Piercy* his Dep. Gov. 'till Sir *T. Dale* arrives; whose Power is also to end upon Sir *T. Gates's* arrival. (*fs*)

This Year, Mr *Edward Harlie* and *Nicholas Hobson* sail to North Virginia (*ps*) and of this Voyage I suppose it is that Capt. *Smith* writes, that the Earl of *South Hampton* and those of the *Ile of Wight*, employ Capt. *Edward Harlow* to discover an *Ile* suppos'd about *Cape Cod*: But falling with *Monahigan*, they detained three Savages, viz *Pechmo*, *Monopet* and *Pekenimne*; But *Pechmo* leap'd overboard and got away. Not far from thence, they had three Men sorely wounded with Arrows: and anchoring at the *Ile of Nobono*, the Savages in their Canows assault the Ship, 'till the *English* Guns make them retire; yet Here they take *Sakarweston*: and at *Caparve* they take *Coneconam* & *Epenow*. But at *Agarwam*, the *Natives* use them more kindly; and so with five Savages they return for England: But of Plantations, there are no more Speeches. (*sm*)

April 9. Tuesday, Dr. *George Abbot*, Bp of London transferr'd to the Archbishoprick of *Canterbury* (*hs*) and *Fuller* says, He was not much belov'd by the Inferior Clergy, as being over-austere and rigid. (*fl*)

May 10. Sir *T. Dale* arrives at S. VIRGINIA, with his 3 Ships and 300 People &c. in 8 Weeks

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1611.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III

Passage (*ps*) Toward the end of *May*, *Sir T. Gates* sails from *England* thither, with 3 *Ships* and 3 *Carvels*, 280 Men, 20 Women, 100 Kine, as many Swine &c. (*hs*) and *Aug. 1*, or 2, arrives There, with his 6 *Ships*, 300 People &c. (*fs*)

[*SOUTH VIRGINIA* being thus Settled, I shall leave their History.]

May 22. K. *James* begins the order of *Baronets*, and this Day, creates 18. (*fl*)

May 6. Mr *Stratoun*, Minister of *Forrefts* in *Scotland*, warded in the *Castle of Inverness*, for Preaching against the state of *Bishops*. (*cl*)

Nov. *Vorstius* order'd to retire from *Leyden*, to his House at *Tergou*. (*pa*)

This Year, the *New Version* of the *BIBLE* into *English*, finished by 47 *Translators*. (*fl*)

1612.

THE Curators of the *University* of *Leyden* call *Simon Episcopius* to be Professor of *Divinity* There, against the mind of *Polyander*, the other Professor, and to the great Grief of the Churches. (*pa*)

Mar. 3. *Bartholomew Legate* condemn'd to the *Fire* by the *Bps* in the *Consistory* of *Paul's London*, for *Arrianism*: *March 11*, the *Kissues* his *Writ* to Burn Him (*fl*) and *Wednesday March 18*, He is Burnt in *Smithfield* (*hs. fl.*) in a vast conflux of *Spectators*, about 40 years of age. (*fl*) [19]

Apr. 11

fl. Salmon.

[19] *Fuller* says, that *Bp King* of *London*, call'd so many *Bps*, *Divines* and *Lawyers*, to his *Trial*; that the *Consistory* seem'd not so much a large *Court*, as a little *Convocation* (*fl*)

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1612.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

Apr. 11. *Edward Wightman*, having been convicted by the *Bp* of *Litchfield* of the like or worse Heresies, is There, this day Burnt. Which Executions raising the Compassions of the People; the K. chuses that *Hereticks* should waste away their Lives in *Prison*. (f)

The *BERMUDAS ISLANDS* being within the Limits of *VIRGINIA*, and the Company finding Land enough on the Main, sell these *Islands* to 120 of the same Company; who name them the *SOMMER ISLANDS*, obtain a *Charter*, and so hold them of His Majesty, (bf) and

Apr. 28. They send the *first Colony* Thither, of 60 Persons, under Mr. *Richard Moor* Gov. There for 3 years, (pr. bf) who now embark in a Ship at *London*, and go down to *Gravesend*: *May*, 9 sail from the *Downs*: *July*, 11, descry & land at *Bermudas*: *Aug.* 2, subscribe to 6 religious articles of Government: and this Year, 30 Passengers more arrive Here. (ps)

June 7. Mr. *Guy* arrives at *NEWFOUNDLAND* again: and this Summer, Capt. *Peter Easton*, the famous Pirate, comes Thither, with 10 good *Ships* (w) takes 100 Men out of the *Fishing Vessels* in *Conception Bay*, besides what he takes in others, mans 6 *Ships* (ps) and sails to the *Streights* (w) [20] and this Year, the *Newfoundland Colony* increases to 60 Persons. (ps)

R 3

Aug

(w) *Wlithourn*, in his *Discourse of Newfoundland*, Printed in 40, *London* 1622.

[20] *Wlithourn*, by mistake, sets this in 1611: and it seems most likely that the 6 *Ships* are part of the 10 and that he came but with 4.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1612.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

Aug. 4. Mr. *Hugh Broughton* Dies at *Totnam High Cross*, *et. 63. (1)*

' In these Times are Great Troubles rais'd
' by the *Arminians* in *Holland*: In *Leyden* es-
' pecially there are daily and hot Disputes in
' the Schools about the *Arminian Doctrines*:
' the two *Divinity Professors* being divided
' *Episcopius* Teaching for 'em, *Polyander* a-
' gainst them: and the Contention grows to
' that pass, that few of the Disciples of the
' one will hear the other. But Mr. *ROBIN-*
' *SON*, tho' he Preaches thrice a Week and
' wrote sundry Books, besides his other mani-
' fold Labours; yet goes constantly to hear them
' both: whereby He is grounded so well in the
' Controversy, sees the Force of all their Ar-
' guments, knows the Shifts of the *Armi-*
' *nians*: and being himself otherwise very a-
' ble; none is fitter to engage them, as ap-
' pears by *sundry Disputes*: so as he begins to
' be Terrible to the *Arminian Party (B)*

Octob. 16. Parliament of *Scotland* meets; and still enlarges the King's & Bishops Powers. *(cl)*

The same Day *Frederick, P. Palatine* of the *Rhine*, arrives at *Gravesend (hsbk)* and *Lords day, 18, at White Hall*, to marry the Princess *Elizabeth, K. James's only Daughter (hs)*

Nov. 6. *Fryday*, The most hopeful, *Henry Prince of Wales*, Dies of a malignant Fever; aged 18 years. 8m. 17d *(hsbk)* and *Fuller* says, He was never known to have uttered a profane Oath *(fl)*

(1) *Lightfoot* in his Preface to Mr. *Broughton's Works*.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
612.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

613.

Feb. 14 **L**ords day, the Prince's *Eliz* married to the P. *Palatine*, (*hs. bk*) on which day, are Tilting and other Royal Entertainments of Time, (*hs*) at *Night*, a Mask of Lords & Ladies: Saturday, April, 10 the P. *Palatine* and *Lady* set out from *White-Hall* for *Heidelberg*. (*hs. bk*) and *Howes* says, that during the *Palatine's* abode in *England*, He behav'd himself so nobly, that He won the Hearts of the whole Nation. (*hs*)

Mar. 27. *Nicholas Guy's* Wife deliver'd of a *Son* at *NEWFOUNDLAND* (*fs*) which seems to be the first *English Child* Born There.

June Arrives, from *England*, at *BERMUDAS*, a Vessel with 60 Passengers: sometime after, another with 40: two Months after, a 3d, with 100: two Days after a 4th. with 180: and fourteen Days after 2 *Frigates*, with 160. (*sm*)

[*BERMUDAS* being thus Settled, I shall leave their History.]

The Government of *S. VIRGINIA*, hearing that the *French* had settled within our Limits, send *Capt. Argal* to dislodge them: who sails to *Sagadahock*, and seizes their Forts at *Mount Mansel*, *St Croix*, & *Port Royal*; & carries their Ship & Pinace, Ordnance, Cattle & Provision to *James-Town* (*sm fs*) [21]

Octob. 25. Monday, Lord Chief Justice *Cook* remov'd to the *Kings Bench*, and made Lord Chief Justice of *England*. (*hs*)

R 4

This

[21] Tho' neither the Month, nor Year of this Expedition, are certified, either by *Gorges*, *Smith* or *Purchas*; yet by comparing them together, it seems to be this Year, and some time between *May* and the following *Winter*.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1613.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

This Year, Mr. *Randal Bates*, a Rev. Preacher Dies in *Prison*, having lain in the *Gate-House* about 20 months, only for opposing the *Prelacy* and *Ceremonies* us'd in the Church (*bb*) and Mr *Cotton* says, He was an Heavenly Saint, suffer'd for the same cause, choak'd in Prison: nor cou'd be releas'd, tho' Dr. *Hering* a learned & beloved *Physician*, earnestly sollicit'd Bp *Neal* for his Enlargement, as He tender'd his Life: But the *Physician's* suit was repuls'd with Reproaches, and the Life of his Patient spilt by that Rigor (*cb*)

' And about this Year, it seems, that *EPISCOPI-*
' us sets forth sundry *Arminian Theses* at *Leysden*,
' which He wou'd defend an Publick against all
' opposers. Upon which *POLYANDER* and the
' chief Preachers of the *City*, desire Mr. *ROBIN-*
' son to dispute against Him. But being a
' Stranger, He was loth to engage. Yet the
' other telling Him, that such was the ability
' and expertness of the Adversary, that the Truth
' is in Danger to suffer, if he would not help
' them; are so importunate, as at length He yields:
' and when the Day comes, He so defends the
' Truth and foils the *Opposer*, as He puts Him
' to an apparent *non plus* in this Great & Publick
' Audience. The same he does a 2d or 3d time,
' upon the like occasions: which as it causes
' many to give Praise to God that the Truth
' had so famous a Victory; so it procures Mr.
' *Robinson* much Respect & Honour from those
' Learned Men & others: and 'tis said by some
' of no mean note, that were it not for giving
' offence to the *State of England*; they would
' Prefer him otherwise, if he pleas'd, and allow
' his People some Publick Favour. (B)

(cb) *Cotton's Bloody Tenet* wash'd.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
614.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

614.

Jan. 21. **MR** James Melvin, having suffer'd 7 years Exile at the King's Pleasure, not convict of any Offence, Dies at *Berwick* the Place of his Confinement: He was one of the wisest Directors of Ecclesiastical Affairs the Church of *Scotland* had in his Time: and the King being set upon advancing the State of *Bps*, call'd Him to Court, and never suffer'd Him to Return, least He should hinder their Designs. (cl)

Mar. 3. Capt. *John Smith*, with 2 *Ships*, and 45 Men and Boys, sails from the *Downes* for N. VIRGINIA, (ps) to make Trial of a Mine of Gold and Copper: and if these fail, then to Fish and Trade, carrying *Tantum* an *Indian* with him, (sm) April 30, arrives at the Isle *Monabigan*, (ps) in 43 & 30 N. (sm) where He is to stay with 10 Men, to keep Possession, if the Whaling answers Expectation: But being disappointed He builds 7 *Boats*, in which 37 Men make a great Fishing Voyage, while with 8 Men in a small *Boat* he ranges the Coasts, & Trades with the Natives (ps) from *Penobscut* to *Sagadehock*, *Acocisco*, *Passataquack*, *Tragabigzanda*, call'd *Cape Ann*; the *Massachusetts Isles*, on which they say, are 3000 People, fights with 40 or 50 of them, finds two *French Ships* (sm. 1.) who had been here six Weeks (sm) and made a great Voyage by Trade, (sm 1.) Thence He sails to *Accomack*, where He also fights & kills some *Indians*: Thence to *Cape Cod*, where he sets *Tantum*, ashoar. On the *Main*, against *Monabigan*, finds a Ship of Sir *Francis Popham's*, which had many

(sm. 1) *Smith's first Account of New England*, Printed in 4to. London. 1616

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1614.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III

many years used that Port only, (*sm* 1.) July 18. Capt. *Smith* sails for *England* (*ps*) in the *Bark*, and leaves the *Ship* under *Tho Hunt* Master, to fit for *Spain* (*sm*) Aug. 5. Capt *Smith* puts in at *Plimouth* (*sm* 1.) and in the end of the month, arrives at *London* (*ps*) draws a *Plat* of the *Country*, & first calls it *NEW-ENGLAND*. (*sm*) After *Smith* left *NEW ENGLAND* (*sm*) *Hunt* gets 20 *Indians* aboard Him at *Patuxit* (*re*) one of whom is called *Squanto* (*B.re*) or *Squantum* or *Tisquantum* (*B.re W.*) and 7 more at *Naustit* (*re*) and carries them to *Mulaga*, and sells them (*sm*) for *Slaves*, at 20 Pound a Man, (*re*) which raises such an *Enmity* in the *Savages* against our *Nation* as makes further attempts of *Commerce* with them very dangerous, (*pc*; *B.re fg*)

[From this time therefore, we shall distinguish *NEW VIRGINIA* by the Name of *NEW ENGLAND*, and confine the Name *VIRGINIA* to the *SOUTHERN COLONY*.]

Mar. 4. A Proclamation at *Edinburgh*, commanding *Ministers* & *People* to celebrate the *Lord's Supper* on *Easter* following, viz *Apr. 24*. the *Presence* being for *Trial* of *Popish Recusants*; but the wiser take it as a *Trial* how the *People* will bare *Innovations*; there being *Acts* of the *General Assembly* in *Force* against them. (*cl*)

Apr. 5

re. Relation of the Proceedings of the English Plantation at *Plimouth* in *New England*, Published by *G. Mount*, in 4to. *London*, 1622

W. Winslow's Good News from *New England*, Printed in 4to. *London* 1624.

fg. *F. Gorges*, Esq; his *America* Painted to the *Life*, Printed in 4to. *London*, 1659.

K. of Great Britain	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

or 5. The K's 2d PARLIAMENT of *England* Begins (*ec. fl*) complains of his admitting *Papists* into his Council, his silencing many watchful and diligent *Ministers*, and his several Treaties to marry the late P *Henry* and present P. *Charles* with the Daughters of *Popish* Princes; all which disheartens *Protestants* and encourage *Papists* (*ec.*) and the House of COMMONS beginning to Question Bp *Harsenet* & Bp *Neal*, for offensive Speeches; to save them from the Storm, is suppos'd the Reason of the King's abrupt dissolving them (*fl*) on *June 7*. Upon which the K. *imprisons* several *Members*, without Bail or Mainprize, for the Freedom they had taken; and raises *Money* on his Subjects by way of *Benevolence*. (*ec. fl*)

June Some of the *Plimouth Company*, (*pc*) viz Sir *F. Gorges* with the *Earl of Southampton* Com-mander of the *Ile of Wight*, send Capt. *Henry Harley* and Capt. *Hobson* * Commander of some Land-soldiers, in a *Ship* (*gr*) from *Plimouth* (*ps*) for the *Ile of CAPAWICK*, (*gr*) or *Capawack*, (*sm*) lying southward of *Cape Cod*, (*gr sm*) carrying two *Indians*, viz *Epenow* and *Manarwet* (*pc*) [22] in search of a *Gold Mine* which *Epenow* told them of, with a *Design* only to get Home (*sm*)

Riv

ec. Eckard. fl. Salmon.

* Whether this be the *Edward Harlie* and *Nicholas Hobson* which *Purchas* mentions in 1611, and whether Sir *F. Gorges* mistakes *Henry* for *Edward*, seems uncertain.

[22] Sir *F. Gorges* says, 3 *Indians*, viz. *Epenow*, *Affacomet* and *Wanape*: But seems to mistake in saying that *Epenow* was one of those whom *Hunt* had carryed away whereas *Epenow* seems to have been carried away by Capt. *Harlow* in 1611: and Capt. *Dermer* in *Purchas* seems to mistake in saying that *Epenow* was carried home in 1615.

1000

1000

1000

1000

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1614	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

But arriving at the Harbour where *Epenow* was to make good his Undertaking, a little after *Hunt* had carried the *Indians* away, *Manarret Dies*, (pc) and *Epenow* jumps over board & gets ashoar, while the *Inaians* in 20 Canows attack them (gr) and wound the Master of the Ship and many of his Company. (sm) Upon which the *English* Return without doing any thing further: (gr) and at this the *Western Men* are discourag'd, as they regard not the Country till they see four Ships sail from *London* and Capt *Smith* at *Plimouth* in *January* next. (sm)

This Summer, Sir *Henry Manwaring* is at **NEWFOUNDLAND** with five good *Ships*. (w.pf)

1615.

Jan. **T**He *Virginia Company* at *London*, send four *Ships* with *Michael Cooper*, (pf) who had been Master of the *Bark* under Capt *Smith* last *Y*, (sm) to Fish on the Coast of **NEW ENGLAND**: who arriving There in *March*, & making their Voyages; 1 sails to *Spain*, 1 to *Virginia* to relieve that Colony, & 2 Return to *England*. (pf)

Jan. Capt. *Smith* goes from *London* to *Plimouth*: In *March*, sails in a *Ship* of 200 Tuns, with another of 50 (pf) furnished by Sir *F. Gorges* and others, for **NEW ENGLAND**; being to leave 16 Men There to Begin a Settlement: But ere He sails 120 Leagues, a great Storm parts Him from the other Ship, breaks all his Masts, and forces Him to Return to *Plimouth*: where leaving his *Ship*, He gets into a *Bark* of 60 Tuns: and *June* 24, sails again with 30 Men, 16 of whom are to Begin the Settlement. At *Fyal*, meets with 2 *French Pirates*; 1 of 200 Tuns, the other of 30; engages, and beats them off:

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain
1615	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

off: But near the isle of Flores, 4 French Men of War take & carry Him to France. (sm) The other Ship parted from Him in the Storm a 1st, proceeded, arriv'd at New England in May, made her Voyage, & comes home in Aug (ps)

Mar. 25. A Proclamation at *Edinburgh*, to celebrate the *L's Supper* at *Easter* in all Times coming. (cl)

Apr. 23. Lord's day, *George Villars*, Esq; sworn Gentleman of the King's Bed Chamber; the next day Knighted (hs) & becomes the K's Favourite: (bk)

Aug. 27. 1616, made a Lord: Jan. 5 1616, 7. made Earl; Jan. 1. 1617, 8. Marquess; (hs. sg) and May 18. 1623, Duke of *Buckingham* (sg)

This Y. Capt. *Richard Whitbourn* goes to *NEW-FOUNDLAND*, with a Commission from the Admiralty to Empannel *Juries* &c. (w. ps) and this Y, at *Newfoundland*, are many Thousands of *English, French, Portugees & Others*: the *French* and *Biscayans* resorting chiefly to the N & W. Parts, where the *Indians* also chiefly keep. (ps)

[*NEWFOUNDLAND* being thus Settled, I shall leave their History.]

July. The *Londoners* send 2 more Ships, to Fish at *NEW ENGLAND*: But going by the *West Indies*, arrive not in *New England* till May 1616; One returning in 2 months after. (ps)

Oct. Sir *Richard Hakins* sails from *England*, with Commission from the Council of *Plimouth*, to try what Service He cou'd do them as *Præsident* for this Y, at *NEW ENGLAND*: But arriving and finding the *War* at the Height, and the principal *Natives* almost destroyed, He passes along the Coast to *Virginia*, stays There some time, and sails for *Spain*, (gr) This

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1615	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

This Year, the *A. Bishops, Bishops*, and the rest of the Clergy of *Ireland*, in the Convocation holden at *Dublin*, agree upon 104 *Articles of Religion*, for avoiding Diversities of Opinions and establishing Consent touching true Religion (ar)

1616.

Feb. & March, sail for NEW ENGLAND, 4 Ships from *Plimouth*, (*ps fm*) and 2 more from *London*, (*ps*) [23] but only for Voyages of Profit (*ps*) by Fish & Trade. (*ps*) One of the *Plimouth* Ships gets in 1 Month to *New England*, and thence goes to *Spain*; the other 3 return to *Plimouth* within 6 Months, (*sm*) One of the *Londoners* gets in 6 Weeks to *New England*, & within 6 Months returns to *England*: the other goes to the *Cannaries*: and all 6 full Laden. (*ps*)

Jun 20. K. James goes into the *Star Chamber*, and makes a Speech to the Judges & others There, (*kj hf*) wherein he says, *The STAR CHAMBER Court hath been shaken of late; and the last Year had received a sore Blow, if it had not been assisted and carried by a few Voices*: and charges the Judges -- *Let not PAPISTS nor PURITANS be countenanced*. In another Place He, says -- *As I have said in Parliament House, I can LOVE the Person of a PAPIST, being otherwise a Good Man and honestly bred, never having known any other Religion; tho' the Person of an Apostate Papiſt I hate, &c.* (*kj*) Jun.

ar. *Articles*, Printed in 4to, *London*, 1629.

[23] *Smith's* first Account & General History say, 4 from *London*: But it seems that these 4 include the 2 that sail'd Thence in *July* last, and return this Year from *New England*.

kj. *King James's Speech* it self, Printed at *London*, in 4to.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1615	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

- Jun. 18. Comes out, A Description of NEW ENGLAND. Or the Observations & Discoveries of Capt *John Smith*, (Admiral of that Country) in 1614, with the Success of 6 Ships that went the next Year 1615, and the Accidents befell him among the *French Men of War*; with the Proof of the present Benefit this Country affords, whither, this Y 1616 *Eight Voluntary Ships* are gone, to make further Trial: Printed in 4to. London, 1616.
- Aug. 13. A General Assembly meets by the K's Order at *Aberdeen* in *Scotland*: when the A. Bp of *St. Andrews* steps into the Moderator's Place with out Election, against the Act of the Church yet unrepealed, and a Number of Lords and others set without lawful Commission: who under the K's Guard, receive a *new Confession of Faith*, order the Communion to be celebrated every Year at *Easter*; and in power Committees to draw up a *new Catechism*, a *Common Prayer Book*, and a *Book of Canons*, for the King's allowance. (cl)
- Sep. 29. Lord's day, Dr. *Andrews*, Bp of *Ely*, sworn a Privy Councillor. (bs)
- Nov. 4. K. *James* crowns his Son *Charles* Prince of *Wales*: and Lord's day, Nov. 10. in Honour of his Creation, 25 *Knights of the Bath*, with all Magnificence, ride to *White-Hall*, and are there Knighted by His Majesty. (bs)
- Nov. 16. Saturday, Sir *Edward Cook*, I. Ch. Just. of the King's Bench discharg'd of his Office. (bs)
- Sometime this Fall a *French Ship* cast away at the N. E. part of *Cape Cod*: But the Men getting safe ashore, the *Indians* watch & dog 'em till they kill 'em all but 3 or 4, which they send from one *Sachin* to another to make sport and use 'em worse than Slaves, till 2 are redeem'd by Capt *Dermer* in 1619 (B. fj)

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1617	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

1617.

Jan. 6. **K.** James notifies the Council of Scotland of his Design of coming Thither; & Promises that what he does There shall be with the Approbation of all: yet in repairing his Chappel at *Halyrood House*, a Place is prepared for Organs, and the Images of the 12 Apostles & 4 Evangelists wro't in Wood and Gilt, are order'd to be set up: But the People murmuring, the Scots Bps dissuade the K. from setting them up; tho' with a sharp Rebuke & Check of Ignorance, both from the King & A Bp. Abbot; the King telling the Scots Bps, that his *English Doctor* would instruct 'em in these & other Points. (cl)

This Winter and the Spring ensuing, a Great PLAGUE befalls the Natives in NEW ENGLAND, which wasteth them exceedingly; and so many Thousands of them Die, that the Living are not able to Bury them, and their Skulls and Bones remain above Ground at the Places of their Habitations for several Years after. (gr. B. re) [24]

Mar. 7. Sir Francis Bacon, K's Attorney, made Lord Keeper; and Jan. 4. following, made Lord Chancellor. (hs)

Mar. 14. Friday, K. James sets out from White-Hall for Scotland. (hs) May 16, Enters Edinburgh: and next Day, has the *English Service*; where Playing on Organs, Quiristers and Surplices are first heard & seen in the King's Chappel. (cl)

Mar.

[24] By Capt. Deymer's Letter of Dec. 27. 1619. in Purchas, and of June 30. 1620. in Gov. Bradford, compar'd with Gov. Bradford's own Account, it seems that the Narragansets in the West & Penobscuts in the East, escap'd this Plague, and that it raged only in the Countries lying between them, and prepared the way for another People.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
617.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

Mar. 22. Mr. *Thomas Parker*, Æta. 22, only Son to the famous Mr. *Robert Parker*, made master of Arts at *Franker*. [25]

This Spring, Capt. *Smith* is provided with 3 good *Ships* at *Plimouth*, & 15 *Men* to stay and Settle in NEW ENGLAND: But being Wind bound 3 months, the Voyage is frustrate: For which & his other Losses & Disappointments about this Country, the Commissioners of the *Plimouth Company* contract with him to be *Admiral* of *New England* for Life (ps)

June 8. Being *Whitsunday*, by the King's command, the *Lord's Supper* is first observ'd after the *English Form*, with *Kneeling* at *Halyrood House*, contrary to the order of the *Church of Scotland*, and several *Lord's* forbare to Communicate. *Tuesday* following the King commands them to Communicate after this new manner the next *Lord's-day*: But tho' some *Noblemen* & *Bps* Communicate *Kneeling*, yet not half the *Noblemen* required. (cl)

June 17. *Tuesday*, the *Parliament of Scotland* meets: Wherein the *Lords* pass a *BILL*, that the King with the *Arch-Bishops*, *Bishops*, and such *Ministers* as He shou'd Chuse, shall have in all times coming, full Power to conclude matters decent for the external Policy of the *Kirk*, not repugnant to the word of *God*, and such *Conclusions* shall have the Power of *Laws*: But 56 *Ministers* Protest

[25] He afterwards goes to *New England* and become a *Minister* of the *Church* at *Newbury*: and tho' his *Diploma* is dated *April*, 1. I conclude it means the *New Style*, which is *March 22*, in ours.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1617	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

Protest against it, and the Bill falls, to the Kings great Displeasure. (cl)

July 11. The King goes to St. Andrews, to let in the High Commission Court, upon the *Protesting Ministers*: The next day sets therein & makes a Speech, declaring. *We took this order with the Puritans in England, who stood out as long as they were deprived only of their Benefices, Preaching still, and living on the Benevolence of the People that affected their Cause: But when we depriv'd them of their Office, many yielded to us, and are now become the best Men we have: Let us take the like Course with the Puritans here:* So they went to work and deprived 3 of the *Protesting Ministers.* (cl)

Aug K James, returning from Scotland, thro' Lancashire; says, He rebuked some PURITANS and precise People, for prohibiting & punishing People there for using their lawful Recreations and honest Exercises (as he calls them) upon SUNDAYS, and publishes his Pleasure under his own hand, that they should not be prevented for the future, (kj) and Sep. 15, He arrives at London. (hs, bk)

This Year, Mr. Robinson & his Church, begin to think of a Remove to AMERICA, for several weighty Reasons: As (1) The Difficulties in Holland discourag'd many from coming to them out of England, and obliged many

kj. King James's Declaration (call'd the *Book of Sports*. Printed in 4to London, 1618.

K. of Great Britain.

K. of France.

K. of Spain.

James I.

Lewis XIII.

Philip III.

to return [26] (2) By reason of these Difficulties, with the Licentiousness of the Youth and Temptations of the Place, many of their Children left their Parents, some becoming Soldiers, others taking to Foreign Voyages, & some to courses tending to Dissoluteness & the Danger of their Souls; to the great Grief of their Parents, and Fear least their Posterity, thro' these Temptations and Examples shou'd degenerate and Religion die among them. (3) From an inward Zeal and great Hope of laying some Foundation, or making way for Propagating the Kingdom of CHRIST to the remote Ends of the Earth; tho' they shou'd be but as stepping Stones to others &c. [27] Upon their talk of

[26] G. Bradford says on this Head; that *Many who came to them and desired to be with them, cou'd not endure the great Labour and hard Fare, with other Inconveniences which they endured: But tho' they loved their Persons, approved their Cause, and honoured their Suffering; yet they left them as it were Weeping, as Orpah did her Mother-in-law Naomi; or as those Romans did Cato in Utica, who desired to be excused and borne with, tho' they cou'd not all be Cato's: For many, tho' they desir'd to enjoy the Ordinances of God in their Purity, and the Liberty of the Gospel with them; yet, alas, they admitted of Bondage with danger of Conscience, rather than to endure these Hardships: yea some preferred the Prisons in England, rather than this Liberty in Holland with these Afflictions.* (B)

[27] Mr. Morton mentions another Reason, which He doubtless had from the Original Planters; viz. that the great Neglect of observing the Lord's-day, was very Grievous to them. (m)

m. MORTON'S New-England's Memorial.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1617.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

of Removing, sundry of note among the Dutch, wou'd have them go under them & make them large Offers: But chusing to go under the English Government, where they might enjoy their Religious Priviledges, without molestation; after humble Prayers to GOD, they first debate whether to go to *Guiana* or *Virginia*. And tho' some and none of the meanest are earnest for the former, they at length determine for the latter; so as to settle in a distinct Body, but under the general Government of *Virginia*. Upon which they send Mr. *Robert Cushman* and Mr. *John Carver*, to treat with the *Virginia* Company, & see if the King wou'd give them *Liberty of Conscience* There (1)

Nov. 4. Commissioners for a *General Assembly* in *Scotland* having been chosen in Presence of the *Bishops* there, and those nominated who mislik'd *Episcopal Government*, being not allow'd by the *Bishops*; a *General Assembly* is this day Proclaim'd at *Edinburgh* to meet at *St. Andrews* on the 25th current. And Nov. 7. the *General Assembly* meeting accordingly, the Commissioners of 7 *Diocies* are absent for want of time: The Arch *Bishop* of *St. Andrews* in his Sermon, bitterly inveighs against many worthy Men of the Ministry deceased, and said some of them deserv'd to be hang'd: The King in his Letter wills the *Assembly* to conform to his desires, or otherwise threatens that He wou'd use his own Authority: and to gratify Him, they agree (1) to minister the *Communion* to the dangerously Sick, (2) that the Ministers shall deal the Elements to every one with their own Hands: But deferring the Consideration of *Holy Days*, the K. is highly offended (1)

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Sp ^a .n.
117.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

Nov. 12. Sir *Edwin Sandys* writes from London to Mr. *Robinson* and Mr. *Brewster*; wherein He says, your AGENTS have carried themselves with that Discretion as is both to their own Credit and theirs from whom they came: And the 7 Articles subscribed with your Names, have given the Gentlemen of the COUNCIL for Virginia, that satisfaction which has carried them on to a Resolution to forward your desire in the best sort that may be for your own and the Publick Good, &c: (B)

Dec. 15. (I suppose Old Stile) Mr. *Robinson* and *Brewster* date their Letter of Thanks from *Leyden* to Sir *Edwin*: wherein they write--- We have set down our Requests, subscribed with the Hands of the greatest Part of our Congregation, and sent them to the Council by our Agent *John Carver*, to whom we have also requested a Gentleman of our Company to adjoin Himself--and for your Encouragement we will not forbare to mention these Inducements. (1) We verily believe and trust the LORD is with us; to whom and whose Service we have given ourselves in many Trials, and that He will Graciously prosper our endeavours according to the simplicity of our Hearts. (2) We are well weaned from the delicate Milk of our Mother-Country, and inured to the Difficulties of a strange Land (3) The People are, for the Body of them, industrious and frugal, we think we may safely say, as any Company of People in the World, (4) We are knit together as a Body, in a most strict and sacred Bond and Covenant of the LORD; of the violation whereof we make great Conscience, and by vertue

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1617	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

' whereof we hold ourselves straitly tied to all care
 ' of each others Good, and of the whole. (5) and
 ' lastly, It is not with us, as with other Men
 ' whom small things can discourage, or small
 ' Discontentments cause to wish our selves at
 ' Home again. &c. (B)

This Year, the Rev. Mr. Paul Baine Dies: who
 had succeeded the famous Mr. William Perkins,
 as Lecturer at St. Andrew's Cambridge: But after
 wards was Silenc'd by Arch-Bishop Bancroft's
 Visitor Mr. Harsener, for Nonsubscription and
 Nonconformity. (If)

From 1519, to this Year 1617, have been En-
 tred in the Register Books of *Sevil*, 1536 Mil-
 lions of Gold bro't to Spain from the *W. Indies*
 (Perier)

1618.

Jan. 8. SIR Robert Nanton sworn the King's Secre-
 tary. (If. II)

Jan. 26. Arch-Bishop Spotswood calls together the
 Bishops & Ministers at this time in *Edinburgb*
 and reads them the King's Letter: wherein He
 wills them to approve the 5 Articles under their
 Hands, or the Bishops to suspend them from
 their Ministry & Stipends: THE 5 ARTICLES
 are, (1) For *Kneeling* at the Lord's Table
 (2) Giving the *Communion Privately* to the Sick
 (3) For *Baptizing in Private*. (4) For *Confir-
 mation* by the Bishops. (5) For observing the
Holy Days of Christmas, Good-Friday, Easter-
 Sunday, Assention-Day & Whitsunday. And
 Jan

If. Life, before his valuable *Exposition* of the *Ephesians*
 II *Lloyd's State-Worthies*.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
18.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

Jan. 28, a Proclamation at *Edinburgh* for a universal Cessation on these *Holy Days*; and those who refuse, to be punished with Rigour, as disobedient and rebellious Persons, and contemners of the King's Authority: tho' the General Assembly had not consented, & Acts of Parliament against them are yet unrepealed (cl)

Jan. 27. ' Mr. *Robinson & Brewster* write from *Leyden* to Sir *John Worstenholme*; wherewith they send an account of their Principles, to be communicated to the King's *Privy Council*, who had received some ill Impressions against them. viz. *Touching the ECCLESIASTICAL MINISTRY, namely of Pastors for Teaching, Elders for Ruling, & Deacons for distributing the Church's Contributions, as also for the 2 Sacraments Baptism and the Lord's Supper; we wholly agree with the French Reformed Churches, according to their Publick Confession of Faith: tho' some small Differences are to be found in our Practice in some accidental Circumstances, as (1) Their Ministers Pray with their Heads covered; ours uncovered. (2) We chuse none for Governing Elders, but such as are able to Teach; which Ability they don't require. (3) Their Elders and Deacons are annual, or at most for 2 or 3 Years; ours perpetual. (4) Our Elders administer their Office in Almonitions & Excommunications for Publick Scandals, Publicly before the Congregation; theirs more Privately and in their Consistories. &c: (B)*

Feb. 14. ' *S B* who deliver'd this Letter writes that upon Sir *John's* reading it, I ask'd his Worthip what good News He had for me to write to

1618. K. of Great Britain. James I. K. of France. Lewis XIII. K. of Spain. Philip III

‘ to morrow? He told me; very good News
 ‘ for the King’s Majesty & the Bishops have con-
 ‘ sented: But for your Letters, He wou’d not show
 ‘ them at any Hand, least He shou’d spoil all (B)

Mar. 30. The Provost and Bailiffs of *Edinburgh* are
 commanded by a Letter from the King, to see
 that the People observe *Good Friday*: Apr. 1.
 The Charge for observing the *Holy Days*, Pub-
 lished again at *Edinburgh*: And Apr. 5. being
Easter Sunday, the *Bishops* in *Scotland* cele-
 brate the Communion Kneeling. (cl)

Apr. 6. (hs) L. *Delaware* sails in a *Ship* of 250 Tuns,
 with 200 People for *Virginia*: But dies at
 Sea; † the *Ship* baring for *New England*, there
 meets with a small *Frenchman* rich in Bevers
 and other Furr: and there refreshing
 with Fish, Fowl, Wood and Water; after 16
 Weeks arrives at *Virginia*. (ps. sm)

This Spring, 2 *Ships* sail from *Plimouth*, to
 Fish at *New England*: one of 80 Tuns, who
 carries her Fish to *Bilboa*; the other of 200,
 which returns Laden with Fish to *Plimouth* in
 5 months. (ps. sm) But in this larger *Ship*, Sir
F. Gorges [28] sends Capt. *Edward Rocroft*,
 alias *Stallings*, || with a *Company* hir’d on Pur-
 pose: who at his Arrival on the Coast meets
 with a small *French Bark* of *Diep* (gr) in a
 Creek

† Sir *Richard Baker* mistakes in representing as if the
L. Delaware arrived and died at *Virginia*.

[28] The *President* and *Council* of *New England* say We
 send &c (pc) By which it seems as if Sir *F. Gorges*
 acted in behalf of some at least of the *Plimouth Com-
 pany*.

|| So *Smith* and *Purchas* call Him.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1618.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

Creek a Fishing and Trading, and takes Her, [29] sends the Master with his Company in the greatest Ship for England : and with this Bark, Rocroft and his Company intend to keep the Coast this Winter : But some of his Men conspiring to kill Him and run away with the Prize. He is forc'd to put 'em ashore at Sawguatock, whence they soon get to the Isle of Monabigon 15 Leagues off, & 3 Leagues in the Sea : where they stay the Winter. (pc) But in Dec. Rocroft, with 10 or 12 Men (sm) sail in the Bark, with Fish to Virginia, there to Trade and stay the Winter. (pc sm)

May 4. The King Commands the Lords of the Privy Council in Scotland to celebrate the Communion in the Chappel, on Whitsunday, May 24, when the Ceremonies are observed, before the General Assembly had allowed them. (cl)

May 11. (cc) or 21 New Style (a) The Popish Arch Bishop of Prague destroying and shutting up the Churches of the Protestants in Bohemia, the States of the Kingdom meet this day at Prague to consult how to preserve their Privileges (cc)

May 13. (cc) or 23 N. S. (a) The Emperor Mathias's 3 Officers opposing & provoking them (cc) the States throw them out of their Chamber window, (cc.a) tho' they escape unhurt, (a) and the States send their Apology to the Emperor (cc.a) intreat for Pardon (cc) & the Removal of Evil Councillors : but in vain. (r)

May

[29] Sir F. Gorges says, that in such Cases, He had Liberty granted Him to seize Her : And Smith says, the Frenchman offered some affront.

a. Alsted. cc, Continuatio Calvisii. r. Risworth.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1618.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

May 23. (cc) or Jun. 2. N. S. The States publish a Decree that all the *Jesuits* shall depart the Kingdom in 8 days, and never Return. (cc)

May 24. *Lord's day*, K. James issues his Declaration; wherein, He Requires the Bishop of *Lancashire*, to Present all the *PURITANS* and *Precisians* within the same; either constraining them to conform, or to leave the Country: that those who attend on Church on *SUNDAYS*, be not disturbed or discourag'd from *Dancing, Archery, Leaping, Vaulting, having May-Games, Whitsun-Ales, Morrice Dances, setting up May-Poles* and other Sports therewith used, or any other such harmless Recreation, on *SUNDAYS* after *Divine Service*: that this Declaration be Publish'd by Order from the Bishop of the Diocess thro' all the *Parish Churches*: and Command these *Directiions* given last Year in *Lancashire*, with a few words added, most applicable to these *Parts of our Realms*, to be Publish'd to all our *Subjects* (hi) And as all *Ministers* were oblig'd to Read it in their Churches; those who Refus'd, were Summon'd into the *High Commission Court*, Imprisoned and Suspended. (cc)

' Tho' the *Agents* of Mr. *Robinson's* People find the *Virginia-Company* very desirous of their Going to their *W-India Territory* & willing to grant them a *Patent* with as ample *Privileges* as they cou'd grant to any, and some of the chief of the *Company* doubted not to obtain their suit of the *King* for *Liberty in Religion*.

hj. K. James's Declaration, call'd the *Book of Sports*, Printed in 4^{to} *London*, 1618.

cc. *Echard*.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1618.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

' Religion, and to have it under the *Broad*
 ' Seal, as was desired; yet they found it a harder
 ' piece of Work than they expected. For
 ' tho' many means were used, and diverse of
 ' Worth with Sir Robert Nanton, chief Secre-
 ' tary of State, laboured with the King to ob-
 ' tain it, & others wrought with the *A Bishop*
 ' to give way thereto; yet all in vain. They
 ' indeed prevail so far, as that the King wou'd
 ' connive at them and not molest them, pro-
 ' vided they carry peaceably: but to tolerate
 ' them by his Publick Authority under his Seal,
 ' wou'd not be Granted. Upon which the
 ' Agents return to *Leyden*, to the great Discour-
 ' agement of the People who sent them. (B)

July 10. (or 20 N. S. (a) The *Emperor* sends an Ar-
 my of 10 thousand Men towards *Bohemia*:
 Which begins the famous *Religious War*, be-
 tween the *Papists* and *Protestants* in *Bohemia*
 and *Germany*, that rages 30 Years, and destroys
 above 325 thousand People. (a)

Aug. b Sundry pious Citizens being at a private
 Meeting in *London*, many are seiz'd and com-
 mitted to the *Counter Prison*: but Mr. *Staresmore*
 and some others escaping, are betray'd by
 one of the Company, for which the *A Bishop*
 gives the Betrayer great applause and his so-
 lemn Blessing in open Court. And Sep 4. Mr.
Staresmore writes to Mr. *Carver*, that upon Re-
 presenting his extraordinary piteous Case to
 Lord *Cock* and the *Sherives*, He supposes He
 thou'd gain his Liberty, if they were not over-
 rul'd by others; but He cou'd get no answer
 till the Lords of the King's Council give
 Consent. (B)

	K. of Great Britain	K. of France.	K. of Spain,
1618.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

Aug 3. A Proclamation at *Edinburgh* for a General Assembly to meet at *Perth* the 25th Inst Where they meet accordingly; the Commissioners of 4 Diocies and of some Presbyteries absent for want of Time; Arch-Bishop *Spotswood* assumes the Moderators Chair without Election, allows Noblemen upon the King's missives only, Reads the King's Letter of July 10; who says, *He was once fully resolv'd never to call any more Assemblies, because of the Disgrace offer'd Him by the Assembly at St. Andrews in neglecting his Godly Desires; that He wou'd not have them think the 5 Articles He proposes might not without their Consent be joyn'd by his Authority, which wou'd be a disclaiming his innate Power from God, to dispose of Things external in the Church as He thinks fit; and that He will be content with nothing but the direct Acceptation of the Articles in the Form He sends them.* After which, the Arch-Bishop said, *The King wou'd be more Glad of their Consent to the 5 Articles than of all the Gold of India; but in Case of their Refusal, He assures them that the whole State of the Church wou'd be overthrown, some Ministers wou'd be Banished, others deprived of their Stipend & Office, and all bro't under the Wrath of Authority:* And tho' the majority of the Commissioned oppose; yet the *Arch-Bishop* neglecting many who cou'd get no Vote, and admitting others who had no Commission, He carries it for the 5 Articles. And Oct. 26. A Proclamation by the King at *Edinburgh*, commanding all strictly to observe them, and certifying that those who do to the contrary, shall be holden as seditious

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1618.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

ditious, factious, Disturbers of the Peace of the Kirk, contemners of his just Command, and shall be Punished in their Goods and Persons with all Rigour and Extremity at the Arbitrement of the *Privy Council* (cb)

Oct. 28. *Wednesday*, (bf) Sir *Walter Raleigh*, by *Gondamore* the Spanish Embassador's Instigation (ec) is this day bro't to the King's Bench, & ordered to suffer Death to morrow, upon his Sentence in 1603; and at 9 next Morning, Beheaded (bf bk) in Parliament yard (kf) *Æt.* 66. (ec) He was next to *Drake*, the scourge & hate of the Spaniard, (bk. ec) & *Lloyd* says, that Princes had interceded for Him, the whole Nation pitied Him, and K. *James* wou'd not execute Him without an Apology (H) But He fell a Sacrifice to the King's earnestly desired Match of Prince *Charles* with the Popish *Infanta* of Spain. (bo. ec)

Nov. 3. (or 13 N. S.) *Tuesday* (ac) the famous *Synod* of *Dort* begins (ac fl) when there Enter & set with them, Dr. *Carleton* Bishop of *Landaff* (ac) after of *Chichester*, (fl) Dr. *Hall* Dean of *Worcester* (ac) after Bishop of *Exeter* & *Norwich*, (fl) Dr. *Davenant*, Publick Professor of Divinity and Master of *Queens College*, *Cambridge* (ac) after Bishop of *Salisbury*. (fl) & Dr. *Ward* Master of *Sidney College*, *Cambridge*, & Arch-Deacon of *Taunton*; being sent by K. *James* in behalf of the Church of *England*, (ac fl) & the States allow them 10 Pounds Sterling a Day. (fl)

Nov 4. (or 14 N. S.) *Wednesday*, the *Synod* Chuse Mr *John Bogerman*, Pastor of the Church of *Lewarden* in *Friesland*, their *President*. (ac)

Nov.

|| *Lloyds* State-Worthies. To *Howel's* Letters.
ac. *Ala Synodi*. || *Margarets* Professor. (fl) *Fuller*.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1618.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

Nov. 18 *Wednesday*, a great *Comet* appears over *Europe*; first in the *Morning*, then in the *Evening* and continues visible to *Wednesday Dec. 16.* (bf)

Dec. 10. (or 20 N. S.) *Walter Balcanqual B. D.* and Fellow of *Pembroke Hall* in *Cambridge*, enters the *Synod of Dort*, being sent by *K. James*, on behalf of the *Church of Scotland.* (ac fl)

1619.

Feb. **K**ing *James* Publishes his *Meditation on the Lord's Prayer* in a small *8vo*: at the beginning of which, He spends 15 *pages* in *Reflecting* on the *Puritans*, with those of the *Separation*; and *Proving* the *Former* to be the *Fathers* of the *Latter.* (kj)

“ Notwithstanding the great *Discouragement* the *English* at *Leyden* met with from the *King* and *Bps* refusing to allow them *Liberty of Conscience* in *America*, under the *Royal Seal*; yet casting themselves on the *Care of Providence*, they *Resolve* to *Venture*, and send two *other Agents* [30] to agree with the *Virginia Company.* But the said *Virginia Company* falling into great *Disturbance* & *Factions*, these *Affairs* are long *delayed.* (B.

This *Spring*, *Sir F. Gorges* [31] sends *Capt Thomas Dermer* (gr) from *Plymouth* in a *Ship* of 200 *Tuns* (sm) for the *Fishing Business* at *New England*; assigning Him a *Company* to join with

kj. *K. James's* Book itself Printed in *London* 1619.

[30] By *Mr. Gushman's* Letter from *London*, of *May 8* this Year, they seem to be *Mr. Gushman* Himself and *Mr. Bradford*

[31] The *President* and *Council* of *New England* say, *Walsford* & c. as before in *Note 28*; & *Smith* says there goes but one *Ship* to *New England* this Year from *Plymouth*

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1619	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

- with *Rocroft* and his People ; & sending with Him *Squanto* or *Tasquantum*, one of the Natives which *Hunt* had bro't away : But Arriving, & not finding *Rocroft*, He is in doubt what to Do : yet hearing by the People at *Mena bigan*, that He was gone to *Virginia*, hopes for his Return, till He hears of his Disaster. (pc)
- Mar. 2. Tuesday, Q. Ann, Consort to K. James, Dies at Hampton Court (hs bk) Aged 45 Years (ec) [32]
- Mar. 10 (cc) or 20 N. S. (p. ri) *Matthias* Emperor of Germany Dies Æt. 62 (p) 63. (cc. ri)
- Mar. 12. The High Commission Court at *Edinburgh*, deprive and confine Mr. *Richard Dickson*, for giving the Communion to the People sitting and not with his own Hands. And about this time, the King sends a Command to the Officers of State at *Edinburgh*, Lords of the Privy Council & Sessions, and *Advocates*, to Communicate in the Great Kirk there Kneeling, on Easter Sunday the 28th current, on Pain of Losing their Offices ; and enjoins the *Magistrates* of *Edinburgh* to Communicate Kneeling. (cl)
- Apr. 18. Sir *George Yardly* arriving as Governor at *Virginia*, (sm) & finding *Rocroft* ready to sail for *New England*, commands Him aboard : who taking the Boat, with half his Men goes aboard the Governor's Ship, is forc'd to stay all Night ; & a Storm rising, the *Bark*, for want of Hands is driven ashore and sunk : However the next Day, the Governor & Captain, labour so, that at length they see Her : But while *Rocroft* is sitting for *New England* again, He happens

[32] *Rocroft* mistaken for a single word on Nov. 17. 13. 18 p. *Petacius*. v. *Richardus*.

	K. of <i>Great Britain.</i>	K. of <i>France.</i>	K. of <i>Spain</i>
1619.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III

- happens to to be kill'd in a Quarrel with one of *Virginia*, & the *Bark* is a 2d time sunk & lost (pc)
- Apr. 22. The *High Commission Court* at *Edinburg* suspend Mr. *Hog* from his Ministry; and order Him to be confined during the King's Pleasure, for Preaching against *Bishops* and the 5 *Articles*, and declining their Judicatory, and afterwards deprive Him of the Ministry: They also Depose and Confine the Rev. Mr. *Duncan* for declining their Judicature. (cl)
- Apr. 26. (or *May 6 N. S.*) *Munday*, the *Synod of Dort* at their 153d *Session*, Proceed to the *Great Church* of that City and Publish their Sentence on the 5 *Points*, in condemnation of the *Arminian* Doctrines: And Apr. 29. *Thursday*, at their 154th *Session*, they break up, with mutual Embraces and Tears. (cc)
- May 6. The States of *Hungary* meet and proscribe the *Jesuits*. (cc) May 23 (or *Jun 2 N. S.*) The States of *Moravia* proscribe the *Jesuits*. (a) Jun 14 (cc) (or 24 N.S (a)) The States of *Silesia*: agree to banish the *Jesuits*. (cc. a) And July 13. the States of *Bohemia*, *Moravia*, *Silesia*, and *Lusatia*, Confederate together for their Preservation. (cc)
- May 8. ' Mr. *Cushman*, one of the *Leyden Agents* at *London*, writes; that Sir *T. Smith* having desired to be eas'd of his Office of *Treasurer* & *Governor* of the *Virginia Company*, Sir *Edwin Sands* was chosen, [33] but Sir *Thomas* repenting, and opposing Sir *Edwin*, great Disturbances & Factions are raised in said Company, that no Business cou'd well go forward. (B)
- May

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1619	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

May 26. Capt. *Dermer* sails from *Monabigan* in an open *Pinnace* of 5 Tuns, along the Coast S. Westerly, finds some ancient Plantations, not long since populous, now utterly void; in other Places a Remnant, but not free of Sickness, viz. the Plague, perceiving the Sores of some that had escaped: Arrives at his Savage's native Country, finds all Dead, travels a day's Journey West to *Nummastaguit*, sends a Messenger a day's Journey West to *Pocanaokit*, bordering on the Sea, whence two *Kings* come to see Him (*dp*) At *Nummastaguit*, the *Indians* wou'd have kill'd Him had not *Squanto* intreated hard for Him (*db*) and here He redeems a *Frenchman*, and afterwards at *Mastachusit*, another cast away at the N. E. of Cape Cod, three Years before: Returning, arrives at *Monabigan*, June 23; where He finds the *Ship* ready to depart (*dp*) She had staid about six Weeks, and being laden by 38 Men and Boys with Fish and Furrs, Returns. (*sm*) By Capt. *Ward*, from *Virginia*, Capt. *Dermer* hears of *Rocroft's* Death (*pc. sm dp*) whereupon, putting most of his Provisions aboard said *Ward* ready bound thither, and leaving his *Indian* at *Sawabquatook*, He sails in his *Pinnace* for *Virginia* (*dp*) with 5 or 6 Men & the two *Frenchmen* (*sm*) [34] Having passed 40 Leagues along the Coast He is cast ashore in a *Broad Bay*, but gets off again:

[34] Sir *F. Gorges* seems to mistake in representing as if *Dermer* heard not of *Rocroft's* Death, till he arrived in *Virginia*. Capt. *Smith* says, He goes with 5 or 6 Men and the two *Frenchmen*: But neither *Dermer* nor *Gorges* have any such Passages.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1619.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

again : At *Manamock*, the Southern Part of *Cape Cod*, He is unawares taken Prisoner, but gets clear : Thence sails to *Capaock* & meets with *Epenew* : Thence steers along the Coast between *Long Island* and the *Main* ; being the first who passes thro' and finds it to be an *Island* 30 *Leagues* in *Length*, before accounted Part of the *Main* : Thence sails along the Coast, arrives at *Cape Charles*, *Sept. 7*, and next day, at the mouth of *James River*. (dp)

June 15. The King Renews the *High Commission Court of Scotland* in more ample Form : And July 2, upon the King's-Order, the *Arch Bp of Glasgow* cites before the *High Commission* the *Rev. Mr. Blyth* and *Forrester*, to depose them from the Ministry and confine them, for giving the Communion *without Kneeling* : Who Plead the Acts of Parliament for the manner of Celebration and the Practiee of the Church this *three score Years*, and no Act of Parliament, nor General Assembly, no nor of *Perth*, forbidding the former Practiee : yet they are suspended during the King's Pleasure and confined. (cl)

Aug. 18. (cc. cv) or 28 N. S. (a. vi) *Ferdinand* King of *Hungary* and *Bohemia*, Elected *Emperor of Germany* : Aug. 19. the States of *Bohemia*, Renounce King *Ferdinand* (cc. cv) & Aug. 26, chuse *Frederick*, *Electoꝛ Palatine* their King ; the Legates of *Moravia*, *Silesia*, and *Lusatia*, being present and concurring with them. (cc) Octob. 20 (or 30 N. S.) He is magnificently receiv'd at *Prague* : Oct. 25 (or Nov. 4. N. S.) is there



1619. K. of Great Britain. James I. K. of France. Lewis XIII. K. of Spain. Philip III.

there Crown'd King of *Bohemia*: And Oct 28 (or Nov. 7. N. S.) his *Royal Consort*, There Crown'd Queen. (a)

Sept. 17. The King by Letters to the *Provost, Bailiffs* and *Council* of *Edinburgh*, wills them to change their Magistrates the 29th currant, and allow of none but those who will conform to the 5 *Articles*: upon which, the *Provost, Bailiffs* and *Treasurer* are changed: Nov 23, In a Convention of Ministers call'd to *St. Andrews* by the *A. Bishop*, He communicates to them a Letter from the King; wherein He commands the *Bishops* to Depose all that refuse to conform, without Respect of Persons, & no ways regarding their multitude: And Dec. 6 a Charge Proclaim'd at *Edinburgh* for the Observation of *Christmas* (c)

' After long attendance, the *Leyden Agents*
' obtain a *Patent* granted and confirmed under
' the *Virginia Company's Seal*: But the *Pa-*
' *rent* being taken out in the name of Mr. *John*
' *Winco*b, a Religious Gentleman (belonging
' to the *Countess* of *Lincoln*) who intended to
' go with them; and Providence so ordering
' that He never went; they never made use
' of his *Patent*, which cost them so much
' Charge and Labour. However, the *Patent*
' being carried by one of their Messengers to
' *Leyden*, for the People to consider, with se-
' veral Proposals for their Transmigration, made
' by Mr. *Thomas Weston* of *London*, Merchant,
' and other Friends and Merchants as shou'd
' either go or adventure with them; they are re-
' quested to prepare with speed for the Voyage.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1620.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

1620.

UPON receiving These, they first keep a day of *Solemn Prayer*, Mr. *Robinson* preaching a very suitable Sermon from *1 Sam. xxiii. 3, 4.* strengthening them against their Fears, and encouraging them in their Resolutions, and then conclude how many and who shou'd Prepare to Go first: For all that were willing, cou'd not get ready quickly: *The greater Number being to stay, require their PASTOR to tarry with them: Their ELDER Mr BREWSTER to go with the other: Those who go first to be an absolute Church of themselves, as well as those that stay; with this Proviso, that as any go over or return, they shall be reputed as Members; without further Dismission or Testimonial: And those who tarry, to follow the rest as soon as they can. (B)*

Mr. *Weston* coming to *Leyden*, the People agree with Him on Articles, both for Shipping and Money to assist in their Transportation: Then send Mr. *Carver* & *Cushman* to *England*, to receive the Money, and provide for the Voyage; Mr. *Cushman* at *London*, Mr. *Carver* at *South Hampton*: Those who are to go first, Prepare with Speed, sell their Estates, put their Money into the common Stock, to be dispos'd by their Managers for making general Provisions. There was also one Mr. *Martin* chosen in *England*, to join with Mr. *Carver* & *Cushman*; He came from *Billerica* in *Essex*: From which County came several others, as also from *London* and other Places, to Go with

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1620.	James I	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

‘ with them : And a *Ship* of 60 Tuns is
 ‘ bought and fitted in *Holland*, both to help
 ‘ Transport them & to stay in the Country. (B)
 March 1. The High Commission Court at *Edin-
 burgh* suspend Mr. *Porteous* from his Ministry
 till the next Assembly for not observing Holy
 Days, and not giving the Communion accord-
 ing to the five Articles : And for the same Rea-
 sons Deprive Mr. *Scrimger* from the Ministry
 and confine Him. *March* 28. The High Com-
 mission at *Glasgow*, Depose and confine Mr.
Levingstone and *Ferguson*, for not observing the
 said Articles, and for declining the Judicature
 of the High Commission. *April* 21. The High
 Commission at *St. Andrew’s*, Deprive Dr. *Bar-
 clay* from Preaching, and confine Mr. *Men’s*
 and Mr. *Areskin*, for not regarding the Arti-
 cles. *April* 25. Five Citizens of *Edinburgh*
 confined by the King’s Order, without Citation.
 Trial or Conviction, only to satisfy his Majesty
 for their accompanying the Ministers before
 the High Commission, and assisting them in
 their Disobedience. And *May* 10. Mr. *Duncan*
 Depriv’d for not conforming to the Articles (cl)

This Year, there goes 6 or 7 sail from the
 West of *England* to NEW ENGLAND, to Fish
 only (sm) But from *England* to *Virginia* 8 Ships
 with a thousand & 96 Passengers to Settle. (ps)

This Spring, Capt. *Dermer* Returns to NEW
 ENGLAND (sm) In his way, He meets with
 certain *Hollanders*, who had a Trade in *Hud-
 son’s River*, some Years ; Discovers many
 Goodly Rivers and exceeding pleasant Coasts
 and Islands, for 80 Leagues East from *Hulson’s*
River to *Cape Cod* : But arriving at *New Eng-
 land* again (pc) whence he writes a Letter on

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1620.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III

June 30 (B) 1st. He comes to *Nautican*, then to *Capawick*; where (gr) with *Squanto* H. goes ashoar (B) and is suddenly set upon (pc) by *Lipenow* (gr) and other Savages; who give Him 14 Wounds (pc gr) and slay all his Men but one that kept the Boat: with whose Help the *Captain* (B) being a brave, stout Gentleman, and drawing his Sword (gr) by his Valour and Dexterity (pc) frees Himself. But is forc'd to Return to *Virginia* for Cure: where He falls ill and Dies of the Sicknes of the Country (pc. gr) [35]

May 25 (or June 4. N. S.) [36] Mr. *Robinson* writes to Mr. *Carver*, and complains of Mr. *Weston's* neglect in getting Shipping in *England*; for want of which they are in a pitteous case at *Leyden*. And May 31. (or June 10 N S) *SF, EW, WB* and *JA*, write from *Leyden* to Mr. *Carver* and *Cushman*, that the coming of Mr. *Nash* and their *Pilot* is a great Encouragement to them. (B)

June 10. Mr. *Cushman* in a Letter from *London*, to Mr. *Carver* at *South Hampton*, says, that Mr. *Crabe* a Minister had promis'd to Go, but

[35] Governour *Bradford* says, the *Captain* gets aboard very fore wounded, and the *Indians* wou'd have cut off his Head upon the Cuddy of his Boat, had not the Man rescued Him with a Sword, and so they got away, and made shift to get into *Virginia*, where he died (B) and Capt *Smith* writes as if he Died of his Wounds (su) But Gov. *Bradford* says, whether of his Wounds or Disease of the Country, or both, is uncertain. (B)

[36] The Date in the *Manuscript* is June 14. N.S. But the Figure 1, being somewhat blur'd, & June 14 N. S. being *Lord's-day*, & this Letter placed before the following of June 10. N.S. I conclude it shou'd be June 4. N.S.

1620.	K. of Great Britain. James I.	K. of France. Lewis XIII.	K. of Spain Philip III.
-------	----------------------------------	------------------------------	----------------------------

but is much opposed, and like to fail: And in a Letter to the People at *Leyden*, that He had hired another Pilot, one Mr. *Clark* who went last Year to *Virginia*; that He is getting a Ship, hopes He shall make all ready at *London* in 14 days; and wou'd have Mr *Reynolds* tarry in *Holland*, and bring the Ship there to *South Hampton*. Upon this a Ship of 9 score Tuns is immediately hired at *London*: And the Ship in *Holland* being ready, they spend a day in solemn Prayer: Mr *Robinson* Preaching from *Ezra*. viii. 21. (B

June 19. A Proclamation at *Edinburgh*, of the King's Will, that all in *Scotland* observe the Holy Days, with Kneeling at the Lord's Table and other of the 5 Articles; that the Ministers who don't, be Punished with Deprivation, Suspension and Confinement, at the Discretion of the *High Commission*; that every one who observes not the Holy Days at Church, shall for every Omission pay 13 s. 4d; that those who don't communicate Kneeling shall Pay, an *Earl* a 100 l. a *Lord* a 100 marks, a *Laird* 50 l. others 20 l. or less, at the Discretion of the Judges; & whoever impugnes the 5 Articles, shall be punish'd at the Discretion of the Privy Council. (cl)

But Removing to NORTH AMERICA we must now leave the History of SCOTLAND, as well as other Parts of *Europe*, and only hint at those Events in ENGLAND which more immediately affect the BRITISH COLONIES.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1620.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III

The Voyage of the English People at
Leyden for VIRGINIA.

‘ **A** Bout July 21. (I suppose N.S.) The Eng-
 ‘ lish Voyagers at *Leyden* leave that City
 ‘ where they had liv’d near 12 Years; being
 ‘ accompanied by most of their Brethren to
 ‘ *Delph-Haven*, where their Ship lay ready
 ‘ and sundry come from *Amsterdam*, to see them
 ‘ ship’d and take their leave; they spend that
 ‘ Night in friendly, entertaining and christia-
 ‘ Converse. And July 22 (I suppose N. S.)
 ‘ [37] The Wind being fair, they go aboard
 ‘ their Friends attending them: at their Parting
 ‘ Mr. *Robinson* falling down on his Knees
 ‘ and they all with Him, He with watery
 ‘ Cheeks commends them with most fervent
 ‘ Prayer to God; and then with mutual Em-
 ‘ braces and many Tears, they take their
 ‘ Leave, and with a prosperous Gale, come to
 ‘ *South Hampton*; where they find the biggest
 ‘ Ship from London, Mr. *Jones* Master, with
 ‘ the rest of the Company, who had been
 ‘ waiting there with Mr. *Cushman* 7 days. 700
 ‘ Pounds Sterling are laid out at *South-Hamp-*
 ‘ *ton*, and they carry about 1700 Pounds Ven-
 ‘ ture with them: And Mr. *Weston* comes thi-
 ‘ ther from *London*, to see ’em dispatched. (B)

July 23. K. *James* gives a Warrant to his Solicitor
 Sir *Thomas Coventry*, to prepare a new Patent for
 the Incorporation of the Adventurers to the
 Northern-Colony of *Virginia*, between 40 and
 July

[37] Both Mr. *Morton*, and Dr. *C. Mather*, seem to
 mistake in saying, July 2.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1620.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

48 Deg. N. which *Patent* the King signs on Nov. 3, styling them *the Council for the Affairs* of NEW ENGLAND & their Successors (*gr*)

July 27. ' Mr. *Robinson* writes to Mr. *Carver* and
 ' People, *Letters*, which they receive at *South-*
 ' *Hampton*: And the Company being called
 ' together, *their's* is read among them, to the
 ' Acceptance of all, and after Fruit of many.
 ' [38] Then they distribute their Company in-
 ' to the Ships, and with the Approbation of the
 ' Masters, chuse a *Governor* and 2 or 3 *Assistants*
 ' for each, to order the People & Provisions (*B*)

Aug 5. ' They sail from *South-Hampton*; but reach
 ' not far before Mr. *Reinolds* Master of the
 ' *lesser Ship* complain'd She was so leaky that
 ' He dare proceed no farther: Upon which
 ' they both put in to *Dartmouth*, about Aug.
 ' 13. where they search and mend Her to their
 ' great Charge and Loss of Time and a fair
 ' Wind: Tho' had they staid at Sea but 3 or
 ' 4 *Hours* more, She had Sunk right down
 ' About Aug. 21. They set sail again; but
 ' having gone above a 100 *Leagues* beyond
 ' the Land's-End of *England*, Mr. *Reinolds* com-
 ' plain'd of her leaking again, that they must
 ' either Return or Sink; for they cou'd scarce
 ' free her by Pumping: Upon which they
 ' Both put back to *Plimouth*; where finding
 ' no Defect, they judge her Leakiness owing
 ' to her general weakness: They therefore
 ' agree to dismiss her, and those who are wil-
 ' ling, to Return to *London*, tho' this was very
 ' grievous and discouraging; Mr. *Cushman* and
 Family

[38] This Letter is Publish'd in *Mourt's Relation*, *Mor-*
ton's Memorial, and *Neal's History of New England*.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1620	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

- ' Family returning with them; the rest taking
 ' what Provision they cou'd well stow in the
 ' larger Ship, resolve to proceed on the Voyag
 ' alone. (B)
- Sept. 6. ' They make another sad Parting, and the
 ' greater Ship sets sail again: But about Hal
 ' Seas over meets with cross Winds and many
 ' fierce Storms, which often force 'em to hull
 ' for diverse Days together, not being able to
 ' bare a Knot of Sail; make her upper Works
 ' very leaky, & bow & wrack a main Beam
 ' in the Mid ship; which puts them in such
 ' Fear, as the chief of the Company enters in
 ' to a serious Consultation with the Ship Of
 ' ficers about {returning: But a Passenger
 ' having bro't a great Iron Screw from *Holland*,
 ' they with it raise the Beam into its Place;
 ' and then committing themselves to the Di
 ' vine Will, Proceed. (B)
- Nov. 6. ' Dies at Sea, *Wm Butten*, a Youth an dSer
 ' vant to *Samu l Fuller* (bp) being the only Pas
 ' senger who Dies on the Voyage. (B)
- Nov. 9. ' At Break of Day (re) after long beating
 ' the Sea, they make the Land of *Cape Cod*
 ' Whereupon, they tack and stand to the
 ' Southward, the Wind and Weather being
 ' fair, to find some Place about *Hudson's River*
 ' for Settlement. But sailing this Course a
 ' bout half the day, they fall among roaring
 ' Shoals and Breakers, and are so entangled
 ' with

bp. Governor *Bradford's* Pocker Book, which contains a
 Register of Deaths &c. from Nov. 6. 1620. to the
 End of *March* 1621.

re. *Relation* of their Proceedings Published by *Mourt*.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
625.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

‘ with them as they find themselves in great
 ‘ Hazard, [39] and the Wind shrinking upon
 ‘ them at the same Time, they bare up for the
 ‘ Cape, get out of those Dangers before Night;
 ‘ and the next Day, into the Cape Harbour,
 ‘ where they ride in safety. (B)

Nov. 11. *Saturday*, being thus arriv'd, they first fall on their Knees and Bless the God of Heaven, &c But their *Design* and *Patent* being for VIRGINIA, and not *New England*, which belongs to another Jurisdiction, wherewith the *Virginia Company* have no Concern; before they land, they this day combine into a BODY POLITICK by a SOLEMN CONTRACT, to which they set their Hands, as the Basis of their Government in this new found Country; chuse Mr. JOHN CARVER a Pious and well approved Gentleman, their *Governor* for the first Year: (B) And then set ahoar 15 or 16 Men well arm'd to fetch Wood and discover the Land; who at Night return, but found neither House nor Person. (re)

Nov. 13. *Monday*, The People go ashore to refresh themselves, & every day the *Whales* Play round about them, & the greatest store of *Fowls* they ever saw: But the *Earth* here a company of Sand-hills; and the *Water* so shallow near the Shoar, they are forc'd to wade a Bow Shot or two to get to Land; which being freezing weather, affecteth them with grievous Colds and Coughs, which after proves the Death of many,

[39] They are the same which Capt. Gosnold, in 1602 call'd *Point Care* and *Tucker's Terror*; but the *French* and *Dutch* call *Malabar*, by reason of Perillous Shoals and the Losses there sustained. (B)

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1620.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

many, and renders the Place unfit for Settlement. (re)

Nov. 15. While the Shallop is fitting, Capt. *Standish*, with 16 Men well arm'd, set out on the *Cape*, to search for a convenient Place to Settle. (B) *William Bradford*, *Stephen Hopkins* and *Edward Tilley* are of the Number, and join'd to the Captain for Council. (re) When they had marched a mile *Sou:ward* they see 5 or 6 *Savages* (B) whom they follow 10 miles (re) till Night, but cou'd not overtake them, and lodge in the Woods. The next Day, they head a great Creek (B) and travel on to a Valley, wherein is a fine, clear Pond of Fresh water, a Musket Shot wide and two long. Then they come to a Place of Graves; then to the Remainder of an *Old Fort* or *Pallisad* which they conceive had been made by *Christians*; (re) and then to a Harbour opening into two Creeks with an high Cliff of Sand at the Entrance (B) the *Western* Creek being twice as large as the *Eastern* (re) [40] Near which they meet with Heaps of Sand, dig into them, find several Baskets full of Indian Corn, and taking some for which they purpose to give the *Natives* full satisfaction, as soon as they cou'd meet with any of 'em, Return (B) to the Pond; where they make a Barricado and lodge this Night, being very Rainy: And the next Day, wading in some Places up to the Knees, get back to the Ship (re) to the great Joy of their Brethren. (B)

Nov

[40] This seems to be what is since call'd *Barnstable Harbour*.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1620.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

Nov. 27. The *Shallop* being fitted, 24 of their Men, with Mr. Jones and 9 Sailors, 34 in all set forth on a more full Discovery of the *asore said Harbour*: But the weather growin; rough and the winds cross, they are soon oblig'd to row for the nearest Shoar, and then wade above their Knees to Land. It blows snows and freezes all this Day and Night, and here some receiv'd the Seeds of those fatal Illnesses that quickly seiz'd them. The *next Day*, they sail to their *designed Port*; but find it unfit for shipping, land between the 2 *Creeks*; & marching 4 or 5 miles by the *Greater* are tired with travelling up and down the steep Hills and Vallies, cover'd half a foot with Snow, and lodge under Pine Trees. The *next Morning*, return to the *other Creek*, and thence to the Place of their former Digging, where they dig again, tho' the Ground be frozen a Foot deep, and find more Corn and Beans, make up their Corn to 10 Bushels, which they send with Mr. Jones and 15 of their Sick and weaker People to the Ship; 18 staying and lodging there this Night, *next Day*, they dig in several such like Places, but find no more Corn nor any thing else but *Graves*; discover 2 *Indian Wigwams*, but see no *Natives*: And the *Shallop* returning, they get aboard at Night; and the next Day, Dec. 1. Return to the Ship. (*re*) The Corn they found, happily serves for their Planting on the Spring ensuing, or they wou'd have been in great Danger of Perishing: (*B. re*) For which they gave the Owners intire content about 6 months after. (*B*)

K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1620. James I.	Lewis XIII	Philip III.

Before the *End* of November (*re*) *Susanna* Wife of *William White* (*B.bn*) was delivered of a *Son*, who is called *Peregrine* (*re*) being the first Born since their arrival, (*bn*) and I conclude the first of the *European* Extract in *New England*. [41]

Dec 4 Dies *Edward Thompson*, Servant of Mr *White* (*bp*) the first that Dies since their arrival. Dec. 6. Dies *Jasper*, a Boy of Mr. *Carver's* : Dec. 7. *Dorothy*, Wife to Mr. *William Bradford* : Dec. 8. *James Chilton*. (*bp*)

Dec. 6. They again send out their *Shallop*, with 10 of their principal Men, (*B*) viz Mr *Carver*, *Bradford*, *Winslow*, *Cap. Standish*, &c with 8 or 10 Seamen (*re*) to circulate the Bay and find a better Place ; tho' the weather is very cold & the spray of the Sea freezes on them that their Cloaths look as if they were glaz'd (*B*) and feel like Coats of Iron. (*re*) *This Night* they get to the Bottom of the Bay, see 10 or 12 *Indians* ashoar, (*B*) buisy a cutting up a *Grampus*. (*re*) By reason of the Flats they land with great Difficulty, make a *Barricado* lodge therein, & see the Smoak of the *Indian Fires* that Night (*B*) about 4 or 5 miles from them. (*re*)

Dec. 7. *This Morning*, they divide their Company some travelling on shoar, (*B*) eight (*re*) others coasting in the *Shallop* by great Flats of Sand (*B*) About 10 o'Clock, the shoar People find a great *Burying Place* : Part thereof incom-
passed

bn. *Boston* News Letter.

[41] He Lives to July 22. 1704 when He Dies at *Mansfield*. (*bn*)

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain
620.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip II

passed with a large *Pallizado*, full of *Graves*. some Paled about, others having small Poles turn'd and twisted over them: Without the *Pallizado*, were *Graves* also, but not so costly. Then they come to 4 or 5 deserted *Wigwams*, but see no People. (re) Towards Night, they hasten out of the Woods to meet the *Shallop*, and making a Signal for her to bare into a *Creek*, she comes in at high water to their mutual Joy, having not seen each other since Morning: But found no People nor any Place they lik'd: And at Night, make another *Barricado*, and lodge therein (B)

Dec. 8. At 5. *this Morning* they rise; and after Prayer, the Day dawning, and the Tide high enough to call them down to the *Shallop*; they suddenly hear a great and strange Cry, one of their Company running towards them calling out INDIANS! INDIANS! And therewith Arrows come flying about them. (B) Upon discharging their Pieces, the *Indians* soon get away, the *English* following a quarter of a mile shouting, return to their *Shallop* (B) having left 6 Men to keep her (re) and not one of the Company wounded, tho' the Arrows flew close on every side. Upon which they give God solemn Thanks: Then sail along the Coast (B) about 15 *Leagues* (re) find no convenient Harbour, and hasten on to a *Port*, which Mr. *Coppin* their Pilot assures them is a good one, which He had been in, and they might reach before Night. But after some Hours sailing, it begins to snow & rain: At *Mid afternoon*, the wind rising, the Sea grows very rough, they brake their Rudder.

K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1670 James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III

'tis as much as 2 Men can steer Her with a couple of Oars : And the Storm increasing the Night approaching, and baring what Sail they can to get in ; they brake their Mast in ; Pieces, their Sail falls over board in a very grown Sea, and they are like to Founder suddenly : Yet by the mercy of Heaven, they recover themselves, & the Flood being with them strike into the imagined Harbour : But the Pilot being deceiv'd Cries out, *Lord be merciful, my Eyes never saw this Place before!* And He and the Mate wou'd have run Her ashore in a Cove full of Breakers before the Wind. [42] But a Steersman calling to the Rowers ; *about with Her, or we are Cast away ;* they get her about immediately : And Providence shewing a fair Sound before them, tho' it be very dark and rains hard, they get under the Lee of a *small Rise of Land* ; but are divided about going ashore, least they fall into the midst of *Savages* ; some therefore keep the Boat, but others being so wet, cold and feeble, can not bear it, but venture ashore, with great Difficulty kindle a Fire : and *after Mid-night*, the Wind shifting to the N. W. and freezing hard, the Rest are glad to get to 'em, and here stay *the Night.* (B)

Dec 9. In the Morning they find the Place to be : *small Island*, secure from *Indians.* [43] And ver

[42] Mr. Morton says, This is between the Place since called the *Gurnet's Nose* and *Sagaquab.*

[43] Mr. Morton says, This is since called *Clark's Island* because Mr. Clark the Mate of the Ship first stepped ashore thereon.

K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

1620.

this being the *last Day of the Week*, they here dry their Stuff, fix their Pieces, rest themselves, return God Thanks for their many Deliverances: & here the next Day keep their *Christian Sabbath*. (B)

Dec. 11. *Monday*, they sound the Harbour, find it fit for Shipping, march into the Land, see diverse Cornfields, & running Brooks, with a Place they judge fit for Habitation, & return to the *Ship* with the Discovery, to their great Comfort. (B)

Dec. 15. The *Ship* sails for this newfound Port, comes within 2 Leagues of it, when a N. W. † Wind springs up & forces her back: But the *next Day*, the Wind comes fair, & she arrives in the *desired Harbour* (B) quickly after, the Wind chops about; so that had they been hinder'd but Half an Hour, they wou'd have been forced back to *the Cape* again. (re)

Dec. 18. *Monday*, they land, with the Master of the Ship and 3 or 4 Sailors; march along the Coast, 7 or 8 Miles, but see neither *Wigwam*, *Indian*, nor *Navigable River*, but only 4 or 5 Brooks of sweet fresh Water running into the Sea, with choice Ground formerly possessed and planted: and *at Night* return to the Ship: *Next Day*, they go again to discover; some on Land, others in the Shallop, find a Creek into which they pass 3 Miles, and Return. (re)

Dec 20. *This Morning*, after calling to Heaven for Guidance, they go ashore again, to Pitch on some Place for immediate Settlement. After viewing the Country they conclude to settle on the Main, on a *high Ground*, facing the Bay where Corn had been Planted 3 or 4 Years before; a sweet Brook running under the Hill with many delicate Springs

V

K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1620. James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

- Springs. On a *great Hill* they intend to fortify: which will command all round, whence they may see across the Bay to *the Cape*. And here being in Number 20, they ran devout *this Evening*: but a Storm rising, it blows and rains hard all Night, continues so tempestuous for 2 Days, that they can't get aboard, & have nothing to shelter them (*re*).
- Dec. 21. Dies *Richard Britterige* (*bp*) the first who Dies *in this Harbour*.
- Dec. 23. *Saturday*, as many as can, go ashore, cut & carry Timber for a common Building (*re*).
- Dec. 24. *Lord's day*, our People ashore are a larm'd with the Cry of *Savages*, expect an Assault, but continue Quiet. (*re*) And *this Day* Dies *Solomon Martin* (*bp*) the sixth and last who Dies this Month.
- Dec. 25. *Monday*, they go ashore again, felling Timber, sawing, riving, carrying (*re*) Begin to erect the *first House* (*B*) about 20 Foot square (*re*) for their common Use, to receive them and their Goods: (*B*) and leaving 20 to keep a Court of Guard, the Rest return aboard at *Evening*: But in the *Night* and *next Day*, another sore Storm of Wind and Rain. (*re*)
- Dec. 28. *Thursday*, they go to Work on *the Hill*, Reduce themselves to 19 Families, measure out their Lots, and draw for them. Many grow ill of grievous Colds, from the great and many Hardships they had endured. Dec. 29 & 30, very cold and stormy again: and they see great *Smokes of Fires* made by the *Indians* about 6 or 7 Miles off. (*re*)
- Dec. 31. *Lord's Day*, Tho' the Generality remain aboard the *Ship* almost a *Mile & Half* off; yet this seems to be the *first Day* that any keep the *Sabbath* in the Place of their Building; at this Time we therefore fix the *Æra* of their Settlement *Here*; to which they give the Name of PLIMOUTH, the *first English Town* in all this Country, in a grateful Memory of the Christian Friends they found at *Plimouth* in *England*, as of the last Town they left in that their Native Land. Here Governor *Bradford* ends his *first Book*, containing, 10 Chapters in 53 Page-Folio: And Here we end the *first Part* of our NEW ENGLAND Chronology.

T H E

New-England

C H R O N O L O G Y .

P A R T II.

Being a short Account of the Affairs of
*this Country, as Settled by the several
Colonies of the English Nation :*

F R O M

Their Beginning, in the *Settlement* of the *first* at
PLIMOUTH, by the Name of PLIMOUTH-COLONY,
Dec. 31. 1620.

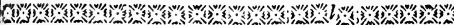
T O

The *Settlement* of the *seventh* and *last*, by the Com-
bination of *Forty one* Persons into a Form of Go-
vernment on *Piscataqua River*, Oct 22. 1640; after-
wards called the PROVINCE of NEW-HAMPSHIRE.





 THE
New England Chronology.


 PART II.


 S E C T. I.

From the Beginning of the Settlement of the first
 of PLIMOUTH COLONY at *Plimouth*, under Gover-
 nor *Carver*, Dec. 31. 1620; To the Beginning of the
 Settlement of the MASSACHUSETTS or second Co-
 LONY by the Arrival of Governor *Winthrop* and
 Company at *Salem*, June 12. 1630.


 THROUGH a great variety of Obstacles and
 Hardships, this small and pious People are
 at length arriv'd and seated on this strange
 and distant Shore : but yet a Shore they
 are by an over-ruling Providence conducted
 to, beside their own Design, though not
 without the secret Plots of others For
 is some unknown Country further *Southward* about *Hud-*
son's RIVER was in their View when they engaged in this
 adventurous Voyage ; Mr. *Morton* who publish'd his *Memo-*
rial in 1670, tells us, He had then lately sure Intelligence,
 that the *Dutch* intending to settle a Colony There of their
 own, privately hired the Master of the Ship to contrive

Delays in *England*, then to steer them to these Northern Coasts, and there under Pleas of Shoals and Winter, to discourage them from venturing farther. [1]

However, by their being guided *Hither*, they then unknowingly escaped the much greater Danger of falling among the Multitudes of Savages at that Time filling the Countries about *Hudson's River*, and are landed in a Place of greater Safety; where a general Pestilence had 2 or 3 Years before, exceedingly thin'd the Natives and prepar'd the Way for this feeble Company.

Being thus beside their Intention bro't to the *New England* Coast, where their Patent gave them no Right or Power they were in a sort reduced to a State of Nature: and some of the Strangers receiv'd at *London*, dropping some mutinous Speeches as if there were now no Authority over them, this People therefore before they landed wisely form'd themselves into a BODY POLITICK under the Crown of *England*, by the solemn CONTRACT hinted above, & which Governor *Bradford* gives us in the following Terms. [2]

' In the Name of GOD Amen: We whose Names are underwritten, the Loyal Subjects of our dread Sovereign Lord King JAMES by the Grace of GOD, of Great-Britain, France and Ireland, King, Defender of the Faith, &c.

' Having undertaken for the Glory of GOD, and advancement of the Christian Faith, and Honour of our King and Country, a Voyage to Plant the first Colony in the Northern Parts of Virginia; Do by these Presents solemnly and mutually in the Presence of GOD, and one of another, Covenant and Combine ourselves together unto a Civil Body Politick, for our better Ordering and Preservation, and Furtherance of the Ends aforesaid; & by Virtue hereof to enact, constitute & frame such just and equal Laws, Ordinances, Acts, Constitutions & Offices [3]

' from

[1] Agreeable to this, we observ'd in the Month of June this Year, while the English Leydeners were preparing for their Voyage; that as Capt. Dermer Returned from Virginia to New-England, He met certain Hollanders sailing for Hudson's River, where they had had a Trade for several Years

[2] The same is Printed in Mourt's Relation, Purchas, Morton and Neal; tho' the 2 latter with some small Variation from the other 3.

[3] So Bradford, Mourt & Purchas; but Morton says Officers

from Time to Time, as shall be tho't most meet and convenient for the General Good of the Colony; unto which we Promise all due Submission and Obedience: In witness whereof we have hereunder subscribed our Names at Cape Cod, the 11th of November, in the Year of the Reign of our Sovereign Lord King JAMES of England, France and Ireland the Eighteenth and of Scotland the Fifty-fourth, Anno Domini, 1620. (B)

To this Instrument Mr. Morton sets the Subscribers in the following Order: But their Names corrected, with their Titles and Families I take from the List at the End of Governor Bradford's Folio Manuscript: Only this I observe; that out of Modesty, He omits the Title of *Mr.* to his own Name, which He ascribes to several others.

- N. B. 1. Those with this Mark (||) bro't their *Wives* with them; Those with this (*) for the Present left them either in *Holland* or *England*.
2. Some left behind them some, and others all their *Children*, who afterwards came over.
3. Those *Italic'd* Deceased before the *End* of *March*.
4. The *narrow Column* contains the *Number* in their several *Families*.

Names.	No	Names.	No
1 Mr. John Carver	8	9 Mr. Christopher Martin	4
2 William Bradford	2	10 Mr. William Mullins	5
3 Mr. Edward Winslow	5	11 Mr. William White	5†
4 Mr. William Brewster	6	12 Mr. Richard Warren *	1
5 Mr. Isaac Allerton	6	13 John Howland [4]	
6 Capt. Miles Standish	2	14 Mr. Stephen Hopkins	8†
7 John Alden	1	15 Edward Tilly	4
8 Mr. Samuel Fuller *	2†	16 John Tilly	3

V 4

17 Francis

† One of these was the Servant who died before their Arrival (B)

‡ Besides the Son, Born in Cape Cod Harbour, named Peregrine (B)

[4] He was of Governor Carver's Family. (B)

† One of these was a Son Born at Sea, and therefore named Oceanus (B)

17	Francis Cook *	2	30	Thomas Williams
18	Thomas Rogers	2	31	Gilbert Winslow
19	Thomas Tinker	3	32	Edmund Margefon
20	John Ridgdale	2	33	Peter Brown
21	Edward Fuller	3	34	Richard Britterige [8]
22	John Turner	3	35	George Soule [9]
23	Francis Eaton	3	36	Richard Clarke
24	James Chilton	3	37	Richard Gardiner
25	John Crackston [5]	2	38	John Allerton
26	John Billington	4	39	Thomas English
27	Moses Fletcher [6]	1	40	Edward Dotey † } [10]
28	John Goodman	1	41	Edward Leister } [10]
29	Degory Priest [7]	1		

101

So there were just 101 who sail'd from *Plimouth* in *Eng-land*, and just as many arriv'd in *Cape Cod* Harbour. And this is the solitary Number, who for an undefiled Conscience and the Love of pure Christianity, first left their Native and pleasant Land, and encountred all the Toils and Hazards of the tumultuous Ocean, in Search of some uncultivated Region in *North Virginia*; where they might quietly enjoy their Religious Liberties, and transmit them to Posterity, in Hopes that none wou'd follow to disturb or vex them.

Some noted Writers, not with a sufficient accuracy studied in the *Religious History* of those Times, have through great Mistake represented as if this People were a Congregation of *Brownists*. But even *Baylie* Himself (b) that bitter

- [5] *Mr. Morton* calls him *Craxton*.

[6] *Mr. Morton* seems to mistake in calling him *Joses*

[7] *Mr. Morton* calls Him *Digery*.

[8] *Mr. Morton* calls Him *Bitteridge*.

[9] He was of *Governor Winslow's* Family. (B)

† *Mr. Morton* seems to mistake in calling Him *Doten*.

[10] They were of *Mr. Hopkins's* Family. (B)

b. *Baylie's* *Disproof* from the Errors of the Times, Printed in 4to, London, 1645.

Butter Inveigher both against the *Brownists* and *Independents*.
owns, 'That Mr. ROBINSON their Pastor, was a Man of
excellent Parts, and the most Learned, polished and
modest Spirit as ever separated from the *Church of England*,
that the Apologies He wrote were very handſom; that
by Dr. Ames and Mr. Parker, He was bro't to a greater
Moderation, than He at first expressed; that he ruined
the Rigid Separation, allowing the *Lawfulness of communi-
cating with the Church of England in the Word and Prayer*
[11] *tho' not in the Sacraments and Discipline*; that He wa
a Principal Overthrower of the *Brownists*, and became
the Author of *Independency*.' The like Account of Mr
Robinson, *Hornius* also gives us. (b) And how inconsistent i
it then to call Him or his People *Brownists*, when he wa
known to be a principal Overthrower of them.

Agreably, *Hornius*, from my Lord *Brook*, seems to ex-
press Himself in this more accurately than other Writers
by Dividing those who separated from the *Church of Eng-
land* into Two Sorts, viz. (1) The Rigid Separatists or *Brow-
nists*. (2) The Semi-Separatists or *Robinsonians*; who after a
while were called *Independents*, and still retain the Name.
And so distant were the Former in their Principles and
Temper from the Latter; that as the chief Seat of the
Brownists was then at *Amsterdam*; Governor *Winslow* a
principal Member of Mr. *Robinson's* Church, acquaints us,
'That the *Brownists* there wou'd hardly hold Communion
'with the People at *Leyden*.' (w)

The

[11] But Mr. Cotton, who was well acquainted with Elders
Brewster and the first Members of the Church at *Plimouth*.
tells us, 'That by Prayer must not be understood the Com-
'mon Prayer Book, but of the Prayers conceived by the
'Preacher before and after Sermon. (*Way of Congre-
'gational Churches cleared, in Answer to Baylie, &c.*
'Printed in 4to London, 1648.)

b *Hornii Histeria Ecclesiastica & Politica.*

w Governor *Winslow's* Ground of Planting New Eng-
land; at the End of his Answer to *Gorton*, Printed in 4to
London, 1645.

The same Gentleman also tells us, ' That Mr. *Robinson* was always against Separation from any of the Churches of CHRIST, holding Communion with the Reformed Churches, both in *Scotland, France* and the *Netherlands*; that his Study was for Peace and Union, so far as might agree with Faith and a good Conscience: But for the Government of the *Church of England*, as in the *Episcopal Way*, the *Liturgy* and *stinted Prayers*, yea the Constitution of the Church as National, and so the *corrupt Communion* of the Unworthy with the Worthy Receivers of the *Lord's Supper*; these Things were never approved of Him, but witnessed against to his Death, and by the Church under him: that the *Church of Leyden* made no Schism or Separation from the *Reformed Churches*, but as Occasion offer'd, held Communion with them. For we, says Governor *Winslow*, ever plac'd a large Difference between those, who ground their Practice on the *Word of God*, tho' differing from us in the Exposition or Understanding of it, and those who hated such Reformers and Reformation, and went on in Antichristian Opposition to it and Persecution of it, as the late *Lord Bishops* did. Never the less Mr. *Robinson* allowed Hearing the Godly Ministers of the *Church of England* Preach and Pray in the Publick Assemblies; yea allowed *Private Communion* [12] with them and with all the Faithful in the Kingdom and elsewhere upon all Occasions.' None of which wou'd the *Brownists* ever allow.

'Tis true says Governor *Winslow*, we Profess and Desire to Practice a Separation from the *World* and the *Works of the World*, which are the *Works of the Flesh*, such as the Apostle speaks of, *Eph. v. 19,--21*; *1 Cor. vi. 9,--11*; and

[12] By Private Communion, I suppose He means in Opposition to the mix'd Communion in the Publick Churches: i. e. He allowed all of the Church of England who were known to be Pious, to have Communion in his Private Church: For as *M^r. Cotton*, writing of Mr. *Robinson*, says ' He separated not from any Church, but from the *World*.'

and *Eph. ii. 11, 12.* And as the *Churches* of CHRIST are all *Saints* by Calling; so we desire to see the Grace of GOD shining forth, at least seemingly (leaving secret Things to GOD) in all we admit into Church-Fellowship and to keep off such as openly wallow in the Mire of their Sins; that neither the Holy Things of GOD nor the Communion of the Saints may be thereby leavened or polluted. And if any joining to us when we liv'd at *Lyden*, or since we came to *New England*, have with the Manifestation of their Faith and Profession of Holiness, held forth there-with Separation from the *Church of England*; I have diverse times in the one Place heard Mr. *Robinson* our Pastor, and in the other Mr. *Brewster* our Elder, stop them forthwith, shewing them that we requir'd no such Thing at their Hands, but only to hold forth Faith in JESUS CHRIST, Holiness in the Fear of GOD, and Submission to every Divine Appointment; leaving the *Church of England* to themselves and to the LORD, to whom we ought to Pray to Reform what was amiss among them.

Perhaps *Hornius* was the only Person, who gave this People the Title of *Robinsonians*. But had He been duely acquainted with the Generous Principles both of the People and their famous Pastor; He wou'd have known that nothing was more disagreeable to them, than to be called by the Name of any meer Man whatever; since they renounced all Attachment to any meer Humane Systems or Expositions of the Scripture, and reserved an entire and perpetual Liberty of searching the inspired Records and of forming both their Principles and Practice from those Discoveries they shou'd make therein, without imposing them on others. This appears in their Original Covenant in 1622, as we observed before. And agreeable to this, Governor *Winslow* tells us, that when the *Plimouth People* Parted from their Renowned Pastor, with whom they had always liv'd in the most intire Affection; "He charged us before GOD
" and his Blessed Angels to follow Him no further than
" He followed CHRIST: And if GOD should reveal any
" thing to us by any other Instrument of his, to be as ready
" to receive it as ever we were to receive any Truth by
" his

his Ministry : For he was very confident the LORD
 had more Truth and Light yet to brake forth out of his
 HOLY WORD. He took Occasion also miserably to
 bewail the State of the REFORMED CHURCHES, who
 were come to a Period in Religion, and wou'd go no
 further than the INSTRUMENTS of their Reformation.
 As for Example, the LUTHERANS cou'd not be drawn
 to go beyond what LUTHER saw ; for whatever Part
 of GOD'S WORD He had further revealed to CALVIN
 they had rather Die than embrace it : and so said He,
 you see the CALVINISTS, they stick were He left them,
 A Misery much to be lamented : For tho' they were
 precious, shining Lights in their Times ; yet GOD had
 not revealed his whole Will to them : And were they
 now alive, said He, they wou'd be as ready to embrace
 further Light as that they had received. Here also He
 put us in mind of our CHURCH-COVENANT ; whereby
 we engaged with GOD and one another to receive what-
 ever Light or Truth shou'd be made known to us from
 his WRITTEN WORD. But withal exhorted us to take
 heed what we receive for Truth ; and well to ex-
 amine, compare and weigh it with other SCRIPTURES
 before we receive it. For said He, It is not possible the
 Christian World shou'd come so lately out of such An
 ichristian Darkness, and that full Perfection of Know-
 ledge should brake forth at once, &c. ——— Words
 almost astonishing in that Age of low and universal Bi-
 gotry which then prevailed in the *English Nation* : wherein
 this truly Great and Learned Man seems to be almost the
 only Divine, who was capable of rising into a noble Free-
 dom of Thinking and Practising in Religious Matters, and
 even of urging such an equal Liberty on his own People.
 He labours to take them off from their Attachment to
Him, that they might be more intirely free to search and
 follow the SCRIPTURES.

As for Mr. *Robinson's* being the *Author of Independency* ———
 Mr. *Colton* replies ' That the NEW TESTAMENT was the
 Author of it ; and 'twas receiv'd in the Times of Purest,
 Primitive Antiquity, many Hundreds of Years before Mr.
Robinson was Born : And Governor *Winslow* ——— that
 " the

the *Primitive Churches in the Apostolick Age* are the only Pattern which the *Churches of CHRIST in NEW ENGLAND* have in their Eye ; not following *Luther, Calvin, Knox, Ainsworth, Robinson, Ames,* or any other, further, than they follow *CHRIST and his Apostles.*

But as *Mr. Robinson and his Church,* were of the same mind, and always liv'd in great Harmony and Unity ; I shall here give a SUMMARY of their *main Principles* from their Published Writings.

I. They were in the Sentiments which since, the famous *Mr. Chillingworth* tells us that after long Study He also came into ; viz. That the *INSPIRED SCRIPTURES ONLY* contain the *true Religion* ; and especially nothing is to be accounted the *Protestant Religion,* respecting either Faith or Worship, but what is taught in them : as also in the same Sentiments which the present celebrated *Bishop Hoadly* and many other Great Men, have so nobly defended, as the Right of Humane Nature, as the very Basis of the Reformation, and indeed of all sincere Religion ; viz. That every Man has a Right of *Judging* for Himself, of *Trying* Doctrines by them, and of *Worshipping* according to his Apprehension of the Meaning of them.

II. As to *Faith* and the Holy Sacraments—they Believed the *DOCTRINAL Articles* of the Church of *England* as also of the Reformed Churches of *Scotland, Ireland, France, the Palatinate, Geneva, Switzerland,* and the *united Provinces,* to be agreeable to the Holy Oracles ; Allowing all the Pious Members of the Churches Communion with them ; and Differing from them only in Matters *purely Ecclesiastical.*

III. As to *Ecclesiastical Matters*—they held the following Articles to be agreeable to Scripture and Reason.

1. That no particular Church ought to consist of more Members than can conveniently Watch over one another and usually meet and Worship in *one Congregation.*

2. That every particular Church of *CHRIST* is only to consist of such as appear to Believe in and Obey Him.

3. That any competent Number of such, when their Consciences oblige them, have a Right to *embody into a Church* for their mutual Edification.

4. That

4. That this Embodying is by some certain *Contract or Covenant* either *Expressed* or *Implied*; tho' it ought to be by the *Former*.

5. That being Embodied, they have a Right of *Choosing* all their *Officers*.

6. That the *Officers* appointed by CHRIST for this Embodied Church are in some Respects of *three Sorts*, in others but *two*, viz.

[1] *Pastors* or *Teaching Elders*--who have the Power both of *Overseeing*, *Teaching*, *Administring* the *Sacraments* and *Ruling* too: And being chiefly to give themselves to *Studying*, *Teaching* and the *spiritual Care* of the *Flock*, are therefore to be maintained.

[2] *Meer RULING ELDERS*--who are to Help the *Pastors* in *Overseeing* and *Ruling*; that their *Offices* be not *Temporary*, as among the *Dutch & French Churches*, but *continual*: And being also qualified in some Degree to *Teach*, they are to *Teach* only *Occasionally*, thro' *Necessity*, or in their *Pastor's* *Absence* or *Illness*; but being not to give themselves to *Study* or *Teaching*, they have no need of *Maintenance*.

That the *Elders* of *Both Sorts* form the *Presbytery* of *Overseers & Rulers*, which shou'd be in every particular Church. And are in *Scripture* called sometimes *Presbyters* or *Elders*, sometimes *Bishops* or *Overseers*, sometimes *Guides* & sometimes *Rulers*.

[3] *DEACONS*--who are to take *Care* of the *Poor* and of the Churches *Treasure*; to *Distribute* for the *Support* of the *Pastor*, the *Supply* of the *Needy*, the *Propagation* of *Religion*, and to *Minister* at the *Lord's Table*, &c.

7. That *these Officers* being chosen and ordained, have no *Lordly*, *Arbitrary* or *imposing Power*; but can only *Rule* and *Minister* with the *Consent* of the *Brethren*; who ought not in *Contempt* to be call'd the *Laity*, but to be *Treated* as *Men* and *Brethren* in CHRIST, not as *Slaves* or *Minors*.

8. That no *Churches* or *Church Officers* whatever have any *Power* over any other Church or *Officers*, to *control* or *impose* upon them: But are all *Equal* in their *Rights & Privileges*, and ought to be *Independant* in the *Exercise & Enjoyment* of them.

9. As to *Church-Administrations*--they held, that BAPTISM is a *Seal* of the *Covenant of Grace*; and shou'd be dispensed only to *visible Believers*, with their *unadult Children*; and this in *Primitive Purity*, as in the *Times* of CHRIST and

his *Apostles*, without the Sign of *the Cross* or any other invented Ceremony: That the LORD'S SUPPER shou'd be Received as it was at first even in CHRIST'S immediate Presence, in the *Talle Posture*: That the Elders should not be Restrain'd from PRAYING *in Publick* as well as Private, according to the various Occasions continually offering from the Word or Providence, and no set Form shou'd be impos'd on any: That EXCOMMUNICATION should be wholly *Spiritual*, a meer Rejecting the Scandalous from the Communion of the Church in the Holy Sacraments, and those other spiritual Privileges which are peculiar to the Faithful: And that the Church or its Officers have no Authority to inflict any Penalties of a *Temporal* Nature.

10. and lastly, As for *Holy Days*--- They were very strict for the Observation of the LORD'S DAY, in a pious Memorial of the Incarnation, Birth, Death, Resurrection, Ascension and Benefits of CHRIST; as also *solemn FASTINGS* and THANKSGIVINGS, as the State of Providence requires: But all other Times not Prescrib'd in Scripture they utterly relinquish'd: And as in general, they cou'd not conceive any thing a Part of CHRIST'S Religion which He has not Required; they therefore renounced all Humane Right of *Inventing*, and much less of *Imposing* it on others.

These were the *main Principles* of that Scriptural and Religious Liberty, for which this People suffered in *England*, fled to *Holland*, traversed the Ocean, and sought a dangerous Retreat in these remote and savage Desarts of *North-America*; that Here they might fully enjoy them, and leave them to their last Posterity.

But Removing the *Stage* of our *Chronology* to the *Western Side* of the *Atlantick*; we may take a brief Survey both of the State of *Great Britain* and the *Neig'bouring Countries* they left behind them and for which they were chiefly concerned, as well as the State of *North East America* at the Time of their Arrival.

In *France* and *Navarr*, the King begins to Persecute the Protestants and turn them out of their Churches. In *Lusatia*, *Bohemia*, and *Germany*, the *Imperial* and *Spanish* Forces are prevailing and ruining the Reformed Interest; even the Protestant Elector of *Saxony* joining with them. And the
King



King of *England*, extremely fond of matching his only Son Prince *Charles* to the Popish *Infanta*, refuses to support and even allow of a *Publick Fast* for his own Daughter the excellent Queen of *Bohemia*, the Darling of the *British Puritans*; indulges the *Papists* throughout his Kingdoms, and at the same time allows no Rest for any of the Reformed in them who mislike the *Ceremonies* or *Diocesan Episcopacy*. In *Scotland*, the *Presbyterian Church* is wholly overthrown, her Ministers Deprived, Confined, Banished: And in *ENGLAND*, 'Most of the Affairs in Church and State, as *Eachard* tells us, are Transacted by the Countess of *Buckingham*, whom He calls a fiery *Romanist*.'

In so dark a Season on the *European Shoar*, are this People bro't to the *North American*, where the Prospect also looks almost as dismal and discouraging.

For besides the Natives, the nearest *Plantation* to them is a *FRENCH* one at *Port-Royal* [13] who have another at *Canada*. And the only *ENGLISH* ones are at *Virginia*, *Bermudas* and *Newfoundland*; the nearest of these about 500 *Miles* off, and every one uncapable of helping them. Wherever they turn their Eyes, nothing but Distress surrounds them. Harrass'd for their Scripture-Worship in their native Land, grieved for the Profanation of the Holy Sabbath and other Licenciousness in *Holland*, fatigued with their boisterous Voyage, disappointed of their expected Country, forced on this northern Shoar both utterly unknown and in the advance of *Winter*; none but prejudic'd *Barbarians* round about them, and without any Prospect of Humane Succour: Without the Help or Favour of the Court of *England*, without a Parent, without a Publick Promise of their

[13] *Governor Bradford*, in a *Manuscript Note* in the Margin of *Sir William Alexander's Description of New England*, &c. Printed in 4to *London*, 1630, says, that 'Biencourt lived at *Port-Royal*, when we came into the Country in '1620.' By which it seems as if by Connivance of the Court of *England*, a small *Plantation* of the *French* were suffered to continue at *Port-Royal*, after the Reduction by *Capt Argal* in 1613.

their Religious Liberties, worn out with Toil and Sufferings, without convenient Shelter from the rigorous Weather; and their Hardships bringing a *General Sickness* on them, which reduces them to great Extremities, bereaves them of their dearest Friends, and leaves many of the Children Orphans. Within 5 *Months* Time, above Half their Company are carried off; whom they account as Dying in this noble Cause, whose Memories they consecrate to the dear Esteem of their Successors, and bare all with a Christian Fortitude and Patience as extraordinary as their Trials.

I have only now to remind the Reader, that utterly unsought, and then unknown to them; on Nov. 3. about a *Week* before their arriving at *Cape Cod*, King James Sigus a PATENT for the Incorporation of the Adventurers to the Northern Colony of Virginia, between 40 and 48 Degrees North; being the Duke of *Lenox*, the Marquesses of *Buckingham* and *Hamilton*, the Earls of *Arundel* and *Warwick*, Sir *F. Gorges*, with 34 others, and their Successors, styling them---*The Council established at PLIMOUTH in the County of DEVON, for the Planting, Ruling, Ordering and Governing of NEW-ENGLAND in AMERICA*: * which is the Great and CIVIL BASIS of all the *Future Patents and Plantations* that divide this Country.



Notes for this I. Section.

b, Beginning. m, Middle. e, End.

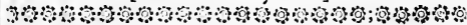
Printed Tracts.

- re, Mourt's Relation.
- W, Winslow's Relation.
- ps, Purchas's Pilgrims.
- sm, Smith's History.
- j. Johnson's History.
- gr, Sir F. Gorges.
- mn, Morton's Memorial.

Manuscripts.

- B, Gov. Bradford's History
- bg—his Register.
- Mc, Massach. Col. Records.
- G, Gookin of the Indians.
- H, Hubbard's History.
- bc, Book of Charters.
- ms, Manuscript Letters.

[Additions of my own.]




* From a *Manuscript Copy* of the Charter it self in the Hands of the Honourable *Elisba Cooke*, Esq;

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1621.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

SECTION I.

To the *Settlement* of the MASSACHUSETTS Colony, by the Arrival of Governor *Wintbrop* and Deputy Governor *Dudley*, with the *Charter* and *Assistants*, at *Salem*, June 12. 1630.

- Jan. 1.  ONDAY, The People at *Plimouth* go betimes to Work (*re*) and the Year Begins with the *Death* of *Degory Priest*. (*bg*)
- Jan. 3. Some abroad see *great Fires* of *Indians* and go to their *Corn-Fields*, but discover none of the *Savages*; nor have seen any since we came to this Harbour. (*re*)
- Jan. 4. Capt. *Standish*, with 4 or 5 more, go to look for the *Natives* where their *Fires* were made, find some of their *Houses*, tho' not lately inhabited, but none of the *Natives*. (*re*)
- Jan. 8. *Francis Billington* having the Week before, from the Top of a Tree on a high Hill, discovered a *Great Sea*, as He tho't, goes *this Day* with one of the *Master's Mates*, to view it, travel 3 *Miles* to a large *Water* divided into two *Lakes*; the *bigger* 5 or 6 *Miles* in *Compass*, with an *Islet* in it of a *Cable's Length* square. The *other* 3 *Miles* in *Compass*, and a *Brook* issuing from it: find 7 or 8 *Houses*, tho' not lately inhabited, (*re*) and this *Day Dies* Mr. *Christopher Martin*. (*bg*)
- Jan. 9. We labour in *Building* our *Town* in 2 *Rows* of *Houses* for greater *Safety*: Divide by *Lot* the *Ground* we build on: Agree that every *Man* shall

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1621.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

shall build his own House, that they may make more Haste than when they work in common. (re)

Jan. 12. At Noon, *John Goodman* and *Peter Brown* gathering Thatch abroad, & not coming Home after their 2 Companions, put us in great Sorrow: Master *Leaver* with 3 or 4 more go to seek them, but can hear nothing of them: *Next Day*, thinking the *Indians* had surpriz'd them, we arm out 10 or 12 Men after them, who go searching 7 or 8 Miles, but return without Discovery, to our great Discomfort. (re)

Jan. 13. Having the major Part of our People ashore we Purpose there to Keep the *Publick Worship* to morrow (re)

Jan. 14. *Lord's Day Morning* at 6 a Clock, the Wind, being very high, we on Ship board see our *Rendezvous* in Flames: & because of the Loss of the 2 Men, fear the *Savages* had fired it: nor can we come to help them for want of the Tide till 7 a Clock: at Landing hear good News of the Return of our 2 Men, and that the House was fired by a Spark flying into the Thatch, which instantly burnt it up: The greatest Sufferers are Governor *Carver* and Mr. *Bradford*. The 2 Men were lost in the Woods on *Friday Noon*; ranged all the *Afternoon* in the wet and cold: at *Night* it snowing, freezing, and being bitter Weather, they walked under a Tree till *Morning*: then travelled by many Lakes and Brooks: In the *Afternoon*, from a high Hill they discover the 2 *Isles* in our *Harbour*; and at *Night* get Home, faint with Travel and want of Food and Sleep, and almost famished with Cold. (re)

Jan. 21. We Keep our *Publick Worship* ashore. (re)

Jan. 29. Dies *Rose*, the Wife of Capt. *Standish*. (bg)

Jan. 31. This *Morning* the People aboard the Ship

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain
1621.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III

see 2 *Savages*, [the first we see at this Harbour,] but cannot speak with them. (re)

N. B. This *Month*, 8 of our Number Die. (bg)

Feb. 9 This *Afternoon*, our *Huse* for our Sick People is set a Fire by a Spark lighting on the Roof. (re)

Feb. 16. One of our People a fowling by a Creek about a Mile and Half off, 12 *Indians* march by Him towards the Town : in the Woods He hears the Noise of many more, lies close till they are passed by, then hastens home and gives the Alarm : so the People abroad Return, but see none : only Capt *Standish* and *Francis Cook*, leaving their Tools in the Woods, and going for them, find the *Savages* had took them away ; and towards Night a great Fire about the Place where the Man saw them. (re)

Feb. 17. This *Morning*, we first meet for appointing military Orders, chuse *Miles Standish* for our *Captain*, give Him Power accordingly : and while we are consulting, 2 *Savages* present themselves on the Top of the Hill over against us about a Quarter of a Mile off, making Signs for us to come to them : we send Capt. *Standish* and Mr. *Hopkins* over the Brook towards them, one only with a Musket, which He lays down in Sign of Peace and Parley : but the *Indians* wou'd not stay their coming : a Noise of a great many more is heard behind the Hill, but no more come in Sight. (re)

Feb. 21. Die Mr. *William White*, Mr. *William Mullins*, with 2 more. And the 25th Dies *Mary*, the Wife of Mr. *Isaac Allerton*. (bg)

N. B. This *Month*, 17 of our Number Die. (bg)

This *Spring*, there go 10 or 12 Ships from the *West*

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1621.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

West of England to Fish on the [North Eastern] Coasts of New England; who get well freighted with Fish and Furr. (sm. ps.)

About this time, the *Indians* get all the *Pa-raws* of the Country, for 3 *Days* together, in a horrid and devilish Manner to curse and excrete us with their Conjurations: which Assembly they hold in a dark and dismal *Swamp*, as we are afterwards informed. (B)

Mar. 7. The *Governor*, with 5 more go to the *Great Ponds*; & we begin to sow our *Garden Seeds* (re)

Mar. 16. This *Morning*, a *Savage* boldly comes along the *Houles* strait to the *Randevous*, surprizes us with calling out, *Welcome Englishmen! Welcome Englishmen!* having learned some broken *English* among the *Fishermen* at *Monbiggon*: The first *Indian* we met with; his Name *SAMOSET*; says he is a *Sagamore* or Lord of *Moratiggon*, lying hence a *Day's* Sail with: great *Wind*, and 5 *Days* by *Land*, and has been in these *Parts* 8 *Months*: we entertain Him, and He informs us of the *Country*; that the *Place* we are in is called *PATUXET*, that about *four Years* ago all the *Inhabitants* Died of an extraordinary *Plague*, and there is neither *Man*, *Woman* nor *Child* remaining: as indeed we find none to hinder our *Possession*, or lay claim to it At *Night* we lodge and watch Him. (re)

Mar. 17. This *Morning*, we send *Samoset* to the *Massetts*, our next *Neighbours*, whence He came. The *Nausites* near *S. E.* of us, being those by whom we were first *Encountred* as before related, are much incensed against the *English* about 8 *Months* ago slew 3 *Englishmen*; and more hardly escaped to *Monbiggon*: they were

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1621.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

- Sir *F. Gorges* Men, as our Savage tells us. [1] He also tells us of the Fight we had with the *Nausites*, and of our Tools lately taken away, which we required Him to bring. This People are ill affected to us because of *Hunt*, who carried away 20 from *this Place* we now inhabit, and 7 from the *Nausites* as before observed. He promises within a Night or two to bring some of the *Masaffoits*, with Beaver Skins to trade (*re*)
- Mar. 18. *Samofet* returns with 5 other Men, who bring our Tools with some Skins and make shew of Friendship; but being the *Lord's Day*, we wou'd not Trade, but entertaining them, bid them come again and bring more, which they Promise within a Night or two: but *Samofet* carries with us. (*re*)
- Mar. 21. This Morning, the *Indians* not coming, we send *Samofet* to enquire the Reason. In his absence, 2 or 3 *Savages* present themselves on the Top of the Hill against us, with a shew of Daring us: But Capt. *Standish* and another with their Muskets, going over, the *Indians* wheel their Arrows and make shew of Defiance; but as our Men advance, they run away. (*re*)
- This Day, PHILIP III, K. of Spain Dies, *Æt.* 43 (*p.ri*) & his Son PHILIP IV succeeds, *Æt.* 16 (*ri*)
- Mar. 22. About Noon, *Samofet* returns with *SQUANTO*, the only *Native* of this Place, one of the 20 *Hunt* had carried to *Spain*, but got into *England*

[1] Whether these were not Capt. *Dermer's* Company mentioned after *June 30* last Year.

p. Pctavius. *ri. Ricciolius*; who say *March 31*. But conclude they mean *New Style*.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1621.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV

land, liv'd in Cornhill, London, with Mr. *John Slanie*, Merchant, and can speak a little *English*, with 3 others: bring a few Skins & signify that their Great Sagamore MASASSOIT [2] the greatest King of the *Indians* bordering on us, is hard by, with his Brother *Quadequina* and their Company. After an Hour, the King comes to the Top of an Hill over against us, with a Train of 60 Men. We send *Squanto* to Him, who brings Word that we shou'd send one to Parley with Him. We send Mr. *Edward Winslow* to know his Mind, and signify that our Governor desires to see Him & truck and confirm a Peace. Upon this the King leaves Mr. *Winslow* in the Custody of *Quadequina* and comes over the Brook with a Train of 20 Men, leaving their Bows and Arrows behind them. Capt. *Standish* and Master *Williamson* with 6 *Musketers* meet Him at the Brook, where they salute each other, conduct Him to a House wherein they place a green Rug and 3 or 4 Cushions: Then instantly comes our Governor, with Drum, Trumpet, and Musketers: After Salutations, the Governor kissing his Hand, and the King kissing Him, they set down, the Governor entertains Him with some Refreshments, and then they agree on a LEAGUE of Friendship, as follows. (re)

1. That neither He nor His shou'd injure any of ours.

2. That

[2] The Printed Accounts generally spel Him--*Massasoit*, Governor *Bradford* writes Him---*Massasoyt* and *Massasoyt*: But I find the ancient People from their Fathers in *Plimouth Colony* pronounce his Name *Ma-sas-so-it*.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain
1621.	James I.	Lewis XII.	Philip IV.

2. That if they did, He shou'd send the Offender, that we might Punish Him.

3. That if our Tools were taken away, He shou'd Restore them: And if ours did any Harm to any of his, we wou'd do the like to them.

4. If any unjustly war'd against Him, we wou'd aid Him: And if any war'd against us, He shou'd aid us.

5. He shou'd certify his Neighbour Confederates of this, that they might not Wrong us, but be comprized in the Conditions of Peace

6. That when their Men come to us, they shou'd leave their Bows and A-rows behind them, as we shou'd leave our Pieces when we come to them.

7. That doing thus, King JAMES wou'd esteem Him as his Friend and Ally. [3]

After this, the Governor conducts Him to the Brook, where they embrace & part; we keeping 6 or 7 Hostages for our Messenger. But *Quadequina* coming with his Troop, we entertain and convey Him back, receive our Messenger, and return the Hostages (re)

Mar. 23. This Morning, diverse *Indians* coming over tell us, the King wou'd have some of us come and see Him: Capt. *Standish* and Mr. *Isaac Alberton* go venturously to them, whom they welcome after their manner; and about Noon. (re) they return to their Place called *Sowams* [4] about

40

[3] Governor *Bradford* in 1645, observes, *This League hath lasted this 24 Years.* To which I may add, *yea 30 Years longer, viz. to 1675.*

[4] Sometimes called *Sowams.* and sometimes *Pacanokik;* which I suppose is afterwards called *Mount Hope;* and since named *Brifsel.*

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1621.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

40 Miles off (B) to the *Westward*. The King is a Portly Man, in his best Years, grave of Countenance, spare of Speech. And we cannot but judge He is willing to be at Peace with us: especially because He has a potent Adversary the *Narragansetts*, who are at War with Him against whom He thinks we may be some Strength, our Pieces being terrible to them. But *Sam-set* and *Squanto* tarry. (re)

This Day we meet on common Business, conclude our *Military Orders*, with some *Laws* convenient for our present State; & chuse (re) or rather confirm (B) Mr. CARVER our Governor for the following Year. (re. B)

Mar. 24. Dies *Elizabeth*, the Wife of Mr. *Edward Winslow* (bg)

The first Offence since our Arrival is of *John Billington* (bg) who came on board at *London*, (B) and is *this Month* convented before the whole Company for his Contempt of the Captain's lawful Command with opprobrious Speeches: for which he is adjudged to have his Neck and Heels tied together: but upon Humbling himself and craving Pardon, and it being the first Offence, He is forgiven. (bg)

N. B *This Month*, 13 of our Number Die. (bg) And in *Three Months* past, Dies *Half* our Company; the greatest Part in the *Depth of Winter*, wanting Houses and other Comforts, being infected with the Scurvy & other Diseases, which their long Voyage and unaccommodate Condition brought upon them: so as there Die sometimes 2 or 3 a *Day*: of 100 Persons scarce 50 remain: the Living scarce able to Bury the Dead: the Well not sufficient to tend the Sick: there

K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1621. James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

there being in their time of greatest Distress but 6 or 7, who spare no Pains to help them : 2 of the 7 were Mr. Brewster their Reverend Elder, and Mr. Standish their Captain.

The like Disease fell also among the *Sailors* ; so as almost *Half* their Company also *Die* before they sail. (B)

But the *Spring* advancing, it pleases God the Mortality begins to cease, and the Sick & Lame recover ; which puts new Life into the People, tho' they had born their sad Affliction with as much Patience as any cou'd do. (B)

Apr. 5. We dispatch the *Ship* with Capt. Jones ; who *this Day* sails from *New Plimouth* ; and *May 6* arrives in *England* (sm. ps)

After this we Plant 20 *Acres* of *Indian Corn* (re) wherein *Squanto* is a great Help ; showing us how to set, fish, dress & tend it, (B) of which we have a good Increase : we likewise sow 6 *Acres* of *Barley* [5] and *Pease* ; our *Barley* indifferent Good, but our *Pease* Parched up with the Sun (re)

While we are busy about our Seed, our *Governor*, Mr. CARVER comes out of the Field very Sick, complains greatly of his Head, with in a few Hours his Senses fail, so as He speaks no more, and in a few Days after *Dies*, to our great Lamentation and Heaviness. His Care and Pains were so great for the common Good, as therewith 'tis tho't He oppressed Himself and shortned his Days : of whose Loss we cannot sufficiently

[5] Governor *Bradford* calls them *Wheat* and *Pease* ; and says they came to no Good.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1621.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

sufficiently complain : and *His Wife* deceases about 5 or 6 *Weeks* after. (B)

Soon after, we chuse Mr. *William Bradford* our *Governor*, and Mr. *Isaac Allerton* his *Assistant* : who are by renewed Elections continued together *sundry Years*. (B)

May 12. The first *Marriage* in this Place (B) is of Mr. *Edward Winslow* to Mrs. *Susanna White*, Widow of Mr. *William White*. (bg)

June 18 The second *Offence* is the first *DUELL*, fought in *New England*, upon a Challenge at single Combat with Sword & Dagger between *Edward Doty* and *Edward Leister*, Servants of Mr. *Hopkins* : Both being wounded, the one in the Hand, the other in the Thigh ; they are adjudg'd by the whole Company to have their Head and Feet tied together, and so to lie for 24 *Hours*, without Meat or Drink : which is begun to be inflicted, but within an *Hour*, because of their great Pains, at their own & their Master's humble Request, upon Promise of better Carriage, they are Released by the *Governor*. (bg)

July 2. We agree to send [6] Mr. *Edward Winslow* and Mr. *Steven Hopkins* with *Squanto* to see our new Friend *MASASSOIT* (B) at *Pakanokit*, (re) to bestow some *Gratuities* on Him, bind Him
faster

[6] *Mourt's Relation* says, They set out *June 10*. But this being *Lord's Day*, is very unlikely, and is also inconsistent with the rest of the *Journal* : whereas *July 2* is *Monday*, when *Governor Bradford* says we sent &c ; tho' to comport with the Rest of the *Journal*, I conclude that on *Monday July 2*, they agreed to send, but set not off till the next *Morning*.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spaine.
1621.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

faster to us, view the Country, see how and where He lives, his Strength, &c (B. re)

[Tuesday] At Nine this Morning, we set out, travel 15 Miles Westward to Namasket by 3 in the Afternoon The People entertain us with Joy, give us Bread they call Maizum, & the Spawn of Shads, which they now have in great Plenty, and we eat with Spoons. By Sun set we get 8 Miles further to a Ware, where we find many of the Namascheuks, i. e. Namasket Men, a fishing, having caught abundance of Bafs; who welcome us also, and there we lodge. The Head of this River is said to be not far from the Place of our abode: upon it are and have been many Towns; the Ground very good on both Sides, for the most part cleared: Thousands of Men have lived Here, who Died of the Great Plague (re) which befell these Parts about 3 Years before our Arrival: the Living not being able to Bury them, and their Skuls and Bones appear in many Places where their Dwellings had been (B) Upon this River MASASSOIT lives: It goes into the Sea at NARRAGANSETT BAY, where the Frenchmen use so much Next Morning, we travel 6 Miles by the River to a known shoal Place: and it being low Water, put off our Cloaths and wade over: Thus far the Tide flows: We observe few Places on the River but what had been inhabited (re) though now greatly wasted by the Plague aforesaid. (B) And so we travel to Pacanskik, where Masassoit kindly welcomes us (re) and gratefully receives our Presents, (B) assures us He will gladly continue the Peace and Friendship, (re) tells us the Narragansetts live on the other Side of that
Great

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1621.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

Great Bay, are a strong People and many in Number, live compactly, and were not touched with that wasting Sicknes: (*B*) desires us not to let the *French Trade* with them: and there we Lodge. Next Day, being *Thursday*, many of their *Sachins* or *Petty Governours*, come to visit us: we see their *Games* for Skins and Knives, and there Lodge again. *Friday Morning*, before Sun Rise we take our Leave: *Masaffoit* retaining *Squanto* to procure Truck for us, appoints *Tockamahamon* in his Place, whom we had found faithful before and after upon all Occasions. *That Night* we reach to the *Ware*, and the next Night Home. (*re*)

July 6. *John Billington* (*B*) a Boy (*re*) being lost in the Woods, the Governor causes Him to be enquired for among the *Natives*: at length *Masaffoit* sends word He is at *Nauset*. He had wandered 5 *Days*, liv'd on Berries, then light of an *Indian Plantation*, 20 *Miles South* of us called *Manomet*, and they convey'd Him to the People who first assaulted us, (*B*) but the Governor sends 10 *Men* (*re*) in a *Shallop* (*B. re*) with *Squanto*, and *Tockamahamon*, (*re*) to fetch Him (*B. re*)

The first Day [7] the *Shallop* sails for the Harbour at *Cummaquid*, but *Night* coming on we Anchor in the midst of the Bay, where we are

[7] *Mourt's Relation*, and *Purchas* from it, places this on June 11. But this Date being inconsistent with several Hints in the foregoing and following Stories, I keep to Governor *Bradford's* original Manuscript, and Place it between the end of *July* and the 13th of *August*.

	K. of <i>Great Britain.</i>	K. of <i>France</i>	K. of <i>Spain</i>
1621.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

are Dry at low Water. Next Morning, the *Indians* on the other Side of the Channel invite us to come and eat with them as soon as our Boat floats, six of us go ashoar, leaving 4 of them Pledges in the Boat: the rest bring us to their *Sachem*, whom they call *Iyanough*, [8]: Man not above 26 Years of Age, but personable and curteous, who gives us plentiful and various Cheer. After *Dinner* we take Boat for *Nauset*. *Iyanough* and two of his Men with us. But the Day and Tide failing, we cannot get in with our Shallop. *Iyanough* with his Men go ashoar and we send *Squanto* to tell *Aspinet* the *Sachem* of *Nauset*, our Errand. After *Sunset*, *Aspinet* comes with a great Train of a 100 with Him bringing the Boy; one bearing Him thro' the Water, delivers Him to us. The *Sachem* makes his Peace with us. We give Him a Knife, and another to Him who first entertained the Boy. At this Place we hear the *Narragansetts* had spoiled some of *Masassett's* Men & taken Him, which strikes us with some Fear; and setting sail, carry *Iyanough* to *Cummaquid*, & get Home the next Day Night. (re) Those People also come & make their Peace, & we give them full Satisfaction for the Corn we had formerly found in their Country. (B)

H. bamack (B) a *Pinesse* or chief Captain of *Masassett* (B) also comes to dwell among us and continues faithful as long as He lives. (B)

A

[8] Sometimes called *Iyanough* of *Cummaquid*, and some times *Iyanough* of *Atatakiest*; which seems to be the Country between *Barrstable* and *Yarmouth Harbours*.

K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1621. James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

At our Return from *Nauset*, we find it true that *Masaffoit* is put from his Country by the *Narragansetts*, [9] and word is bro't us that *Coubatant* (*re*) or *Corbitant* (*B*) [10] a petty *Sachen* under *Masaffoit*, ever fear'd to be too conversant with the *Narragansetts*, (*re*) and no Friend to the *English* (*B*) is at *Namasket*, seeking to draw the Hearts of *Masaffoit's* Subjects from Him, speaks disdainfully of us, storms at the Peace between *Nauset*, *Cummiquid* and *Us*, and at *Squanto* the Worker of it, as also at *Tokamaham* and *Hobbamak*. However, *Squanto* and *Hobbamak* go privately to see what is become of their King and lodge at *Namasket*, but are discover'd to *Corbitant*; who besets the House, (*re*) threatens to kill *Squanto* and *Hobbamak* for being Friends to us, (*B*) seizes *Squanto* and holds a Knife at his Breast, (*re*) offers to stab *Hobbamak*, but being a stout Man, clears Himself, (*B*) concludes *Squanto* kill'd, (*re*) and flies to our Governor with the Information. (*B*)

Aug. 15. At this the Governor assembles our Company, (*B. re*) and taking Council, 'tis conceiv'd not fit to be borne; for if we shou'd suffer our Friends and Messengers thus to be wrong'd, we shall have none to cleave to us, or give us Intelligence, or do us any Service, but wou'd next fall upon us, &c. (*B*) We therefore resolve to send

[9] Governor *Bradford* says nothing of this, nor of *Masaffoit's* being either seized or invaded by the *Narragansetts*.

[10] The Relation Published by *Mourt*, with *Smith* and *Powells* from it, call Him *Coubatant*, but Governor *Bradford* plainly writes Him *Corbitant*; and *Morton* follows Him

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1621.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

send 10 Men to *Morrow* with *Hobamak* (re) to seize our Foes in the Night; if *Squanto* be kill'd, to cut off *Corbitant's* Head; but hurt only those who had a Hand in the Murther, (B) and retain *Nepeof* another *Sachim* in the Confederacy, till we hear of *Masaffoit*. (re)

Aug. 14. Capt *Standish* with 14 Men and *Hobamak* set out (B) in a rainy Day, loose their Way in the Night, wet, weary and much discouraged. But finding it again, beset *Corbitant's* House a *Midnight* (re) where three Indians are sorely Wounded in trying to brake away, but find Him gone, (B) and *Tokamahamou* and *Squanto* safe (re) *Corbitant* having only threatened *Squanto's* Life and made an offer to stab Him. (B)

Next Morning we march into the midst of the Town, (re) *Hobamak* telling the Indians what we only intended, they bring the best Food they have, (B) and we Breakfast at *Squanto's* House: Whither all whose Hearts are upright to us come; but *Corbitant's* Faction fled away. We declare that if *Masaffoit* does not Return in safety from *Narragansett*; or if *Corbitant* shou'd make any Insurrection against Him, or offer Violence to *Squanto*, *Hobamak*, or any of *Masaffoit's* Subjects; we wou'd revenge it to the utter overthrow of Him and His. With many Friends attending us, we get Home a *Night*, (re) bringing with us the 3 Wounded Savages, whom we Cure and send Home. (B)

After this we have many Gratulations from diverse *Sachems*, and much firmer Peace. Yet those of the Isle of *Capawak* lend to secure our Friendship: and *Corbitant* Himself uses the Mediator

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1621.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

Mediation of *Masassoit* to be Reconciled. (B) Yea CANONICUS chief *Sachem* of the *Narragansetts*, sends a Messenger to treat of Peace. (re) Sept. b. Sir *William Alexander* (gr) of *Scotland*, (ps) afterwards *Earl of Sterling*, having prevailed on King *JAMES* to send to Sir *F. Gorges* to assign Him Part of the *New England Territory*; (gr) Sir *F.* being entrusted with the Affairs of this Country, advising with some of the Company, yields that Sir *William* shou'd have a *Patent* of the *North Eastern Part* of *New England*, to be held of the *Crown of Scotland* and call'd *NEW SCOTLAND*. (ps) Whereupon presently, (gr) viz. Sept. 10. K. *JAMES* gives Sir *Wm. Alexander* a *Patent* for *NOVA SCOTIA*; Bounding the same from *Cape Sables* to the *Bay* of *St. Mary*, thence N. to the *River St. Croix*, thence N. to *Canada River*, so down the *River* to *Gachepe*, thence S. E. to *Cape Briton Islands* and *Cape Briton*, thence round to *Cape Sables* again; with all Seas and Islands within six Leagues of the *Western, Northern* and *Eastern* Parts, and within 40 Leagues to the *Southward* of *Cape Briton*, & *Cape Sables*; to be called *NOVA SCOTIA*, &c (ps) [11]

Sept. 13. *Nine Sachems* subscribe an Instrument of Submission to K. *JAMES*, viz *Obquamehud*, *Carwanacome*, *Obbatinnua*, *Nattawakunt*, *Caunbatant*, * *Chikkatabak*, *Quadaquina*, *Huttamoiden*, and *Apannow*. (mn) Yea *Masassoit* in Writing under his Hand to *Capt. Standish* has own'd the *King of England* to be his Master: Both He and many other

[11] Taken from the LATIN PATENT in *Purchas*.

* I suppose the same with *Corbitant*.

K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1621. James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

other Kings under Him, as of *Pamet*, *Naruset*, *Cummaquid*, *Namasket*, with diverse others who dwell about the *Bays* of *Patuxet* and *Massachusetts*: and all this by friendly Usage, Love and Peace, just & honest Carriage, good Counsel, &c. (re)

Tho' we are told the *Massachusetts* often threaten us, yet the Company think good to send among them, (re) to Discover the Bay, (B) see the Country, make Peace, (re) & trade with the Natives: (B) The Governor chuses 10 Men with *Squants* and 2 other *Savages* to go in the Shallop. (re) Sept. 18. [Being *Tuesday*] at *Midnight*, the Tide serving, we set sail. *Next Day*, get into the Bottom of the *Massachusetts Bay*, about *twenty Leagues North* from *Plimouth*, and Anchor. *Next Morning*, we land under a Cliff The *Sachem* of this Place is *Obbatinewat*, [12] and tho' He lives in the Bottom of this Bay, yet is subject to *Masassoit*; uses us kindly, and tells us He dare not now remain in any settled Place for Fear of the *Tarratines* (re) who live to the *Eastward*, are wont to come at Harvest & take away their Corn, and many times kill them: (B) and that the *Squaw Sachem* or *Massachusetts Queen*, is an Enemy to Him. He submits to the King of *England*, upon our Promising to be his Safe-Guard against his Enemies. We cross the Bay, which is very large, and seems to have 50 Islands. *Next Morning*, all but *two*, go ashore, march 3 Miles into the Country, where Corn had

[12] I suppose. the same as *Obbatinua*, who subscribed his Submission to King JAMES, on Sept. 13. last.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1621.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

had been newly gathered. A Mile hence their late King *Nanepashemet* had lived: his House was built on a large Scaffold 6 Foot high and on the Top of a Hill. Not far hence in a Bottom we come to a Fort He had built; the Pallizadoes 30 or 40 Foot high; a Trench about it Breast high; but one Way in, over a Bridge: In the midst of the Pallizado stands the Frame of a House, where He lies Buried. A Mile hence we come to such another, but on the Top of a Hill, where He was kill'd. The *Natives* at first fly from us, but are at length induc'd to meet us Here, and entertain us in the best manner they can. Having traded with us, and the Day near spent, we return to the Shallop. Within *this Bay*, the *Savages* say, are 2 *Rivers*, one of which we saw, having a fair Entrance: Better Harbour for Shipping cannot be than Here: most of the Islands have been inhabited, being clear'd from End to End; - but their Inhabitants all Dead or Removed. Having a light Moon, we set sail at *Evening*: and before *next Day Noon* get Home (*re*) with a considerable Quantity of Bever, and a good Report of the Place, wishing we had been seated There. (B)

All the *Summer* no Want: while some were Trading, others were Fishing Cod, Bass, &c. We now gather in our *Harvest*: and as *Cold Weather* advances, come in Store of Water-Fowl, wherewith this Place abounds; tho' afterwards they by Degrees decrease; as also abundance of Wild Turkeys with Venison, &c. Fit our Houses against Winter, are in Health and have all Things in Plenty. (B)

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1621.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

Nov. 9. Arrives a Ship at Cape Cod, (*B. re*) and the 10th (*B*) the Indians bring us Word of her being near, but think her a *Frenchman*: upon her making for our Bay, the Governor orders a Piece to be fired, to call Home such as are abroad at Work, [13] & we get ready for Defence: But unexpectedly find her a Friend(*re*) of 55 Tons (*sm ps*) called the *Fortune*, in which comes Mr. Cushman (*B*) with 35 Persons (*B. W*) to live in the Plantation, which not a little rejoices us. But both Ship and Passengers poorly furnish'd with Provisions; so that we are forc'd to spare Her some to carry Her home, which threatens a *Famin* among us, unless we have a timely Supply. She sail'd from London the Beginning of July, (*B*) cou'd not clear the Chanel til the End of Aug. (*sm. ps*) & brings a Letter for Mr. Carver, from Mr. Weston, Dated, London July 6, wherein He writes---*We* (i. e. the Adventurers) *have procured you a CHARTER, the best we cou'd better than your former, and with less Limitation* (*B*) She finds all our People she left in April in Health, except 6 who Died, & stays a Month ere she sails for England. (*sm. ps*)

Dec. 11. We have built 7 Dwelling Houses; 4 for the Use of the Plantation, and have made Provision for diverse others. Both *Masassoit*, the greatest King of the *Natives* and all the Princes and People round us have made Peace with us. Seven of them at once sent their Messengers for this End. And as we cannot but account it an
extra

[13] Smith places this on Nov. 11; but Nov. 11 being Lord's Day, we discover his Mistake.

	K. of Great Britain,	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1621.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

extraordinary Blessing of God in Directing our Course for these Parts, we obtain'd the Honour to receive Allowance of our Possessing and Enjoying thereof under the Authority of the PRESIDENT and COUNCIL for the Affairs of NEW ENGLAND. (re)

Dec. 13. The Ship sails (*sm. ps.*) viz. the *Fortune*. (B) [14] laden with 2 Hogsheds of Bever and other Skins, and good Clapboards as full as she can hold; the Freight estimated near 500 Pounds: Mr. *Cushman* returning in her, as the Adventurers had appointed, for their better Information But in her Voyage (B) as she draws near the *English Coast*, is seized by the *French*, carried to *France*, (B) into the *Isle Deu*, (*sm. ps.*) kept there (B) 14 (*sm. ps.*) or 15 Days, robb'd of all she had worth taking: then the People & Ship released, get to *London*, (B) Feb. 14. (*sm. ps.*) or 17. (B)

Upon her Departure, the *Governor* and his *Assistant* dispose the late Comers into several Families, find their Provisions will now scarce hold out 6 Months at *Half Allowance*, & therefore put them to it, which they bare patiently (B)

1622

[14] Gov. *Bradford* says, we Dispatched Her in 14 Days: But *Smith* and *Purchas* saying she staid a Month, & Mr. *E. W.* Dating his Letter by this Ship on Dec. 11; we may suppose Gov. *Bradford* meant 14 Days from her being unladen. *Smith* & *Purchas* say she was laden with 3 Hogsheds of Bever Skins, Wainscot, Walnut: and *Purchas* says, some Saxafra.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1622.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

1622.

SOON after the Ship's Departure, that Great People of the *Narragansetts*, (*B.W.*) said to be many Thousands strong, (*W*) can raise above 5000 Fighting Men, (*G*) notwithstanding their desired and obtained Peace with us in the foregoing Summer, begin to breath forth many Threats against us ; so that 'tis the common Talk of all the *Indians* round us, of their Preparations to come against us. At length *Canonicus* their chief *Sachem* (*W*) in a braving manner sends us a Bundle of Arrows tied with a Snake Skin, which *Squanto* tells us is a Challenge and Threatning. Whereupon our Gov. with Advice of others, sends them an Answer, That if they had rather War than Peace, they might Begin when they wou'd ; we had done them no Wrong, nor do we fear them, nor shou'd they find us unprovided. By another Messenger we send back the Snake-Skin charg'd with Powder and Bullets : But they refuse to receive it, and Return it to us. (*B.W.*) Since the Death of so many *Indians* they tho't to Lord it over the Rest, conceive we are a Bar in their Way, and see *Masassoit* already take Shelter under our Wings. (*B*)

This makes us more carefully to look to our selves, and agree to enclose our Dwellings with strong Pales, Flankers, Gates, &c. (*B.W.*)

Feb. We Impale our Town, taking in the Top of the Hill under which our Town is seated, make 4 Bulwarks or Jetties, whence we can defend the whole Town, in 3 whereof are Gates (*W*) which are lock'd every Night ; a Watch and Ward kept in the Day. (*B*) The Governor and
Captain

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1622.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip III.

Captain Divide the Company into 4 Squadrons (B. W) with Commanders (W) every one its Quarter assign'd, to repair to in any Alarm : And if there be a Cry of Fire, a Company is appointed for a Guard with Muskets, while others Quench it, to prevent Treachery. (B. W)

This Spring, there Go from the West of England to the [North Eastern] Coasts of New England, 35 Ships to Fish. (sm. ps)

Mar. b. By this Time our Town is impaled, inclosing a Garden for every Family. (B)

Mar. e. (B) We Prepare for a second Voyage to the Massachusetts : But Hobamak tells us, that from some Rumours, He fears they are joined with the Narragansetti, and may betray us if we are not careful, and has also a Jealousy of Squanto from some private Whisperings between Him and other Indians. However we resolve to proceed. (B. W) And

Apr. k. We send our Shallop (B. W) with Captain Standish (W) and 10 of our chief Men, with Hobamak and Squanto. (B) But they had no sooner turn'd the Gurnet or Point of the Harbour, (W) then a Native of Squanto's Family, comes run with his Face wounded and the Blood fresh upon it, calling to the People abroad to make haste Home; Declaring that the Narragansetti with Corbitant and He tho't Masassoit, were coming (B) to Assault us in the Captain's Absence; that He had receiv'd the Wound in his Face for speaking for us, and that He had Escaped by Flight, (W) looking frequently back as if they were just behind Him. Upon this the Governour orders all to Arms, and a Warning Piece or two to be fired to call back the Shallop.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain
1622.	James I.	Lewis XII.	Philip IV.

At which the returns and we Watch all Night, but nothing is seen. *Hobamak* is confident for his *Master* & thinks all is false. Yet the Governor causes Him to send his Wife privately (*B*) to *Pacanokik* (*W*) to see how Things are, pretending other Occasions, who finds all in Quiet (*B*) Upon this we discover it to be *Squanto's* Policy to set us against *Masassoit*, that He being removed out of the Way, *Squanto* might succeed as principal King of all these Parts of the Country. (*W*) After which the Shallop proceeds to the *Massachusetts*, has good Trade and return in Safety. (*B*)

May. Our Provision being spent (*B*) a *Famine* begins to Pinch us, and we look hard for Supply, but none arrives. (*B*)

May e. We spie a Boat at Sea, which we take to be a *Frenchman*, but proves a Shallop from a Ship (*B. W*) call'd the *Sparrow*. (*W*) which Mr. *Weston* (*B. W*) & *Beachamp* (*B*) set out a Fishing at *Damarin's Cove*, 40 Leagues to the Eastward, (*B. W*) where this Year are 30 Sail of *Skips* a Fishing. (*W*) She brings a Letter to Mr. *Carver* from Mr. *Weston*, of Jan. 17 (*B*) with 7 *Passengers* on his Account, but no *Victuals* (*B. W*) nor Hope of any; nor have we ever any afterwards: and by his Letter find He has quite deserted us, and is going to settle a *Plantation* of his own. (*B*)

The Boat brings us a kind Letter from Mr. *John Huddleston* (*B*) or *Hudston*, (*mn*) a Capt. of a Ship, Fishing at the Eastward, whose Name we never heard before, to inform us of a *Massacre* of 400 *English* by the *Indians* in *Virginia*, whence He

K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1622. James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

He came. [15] By this Boat the *Governor* returns a grateful Answer: and with them sends Mr. *Winslow* in a Boat of ours to get Provisions of the Fishing Ships: whom Capt. *Huddleston* receives kindly, and not only spares what He can, but writes to others to do the like. By which means He gets as much *Bread* as amounts to a Quarter of a Pound a Person a Day till Harvest, and returns in Safety. The *Governor* causing their Portion to be daily given them, or some had starved. And by this Voyage we not only get a present Supply, but also learn the Way to those Parts for our future Benefit. (B)

At Mr. *Winslow's* Return, He finds the Colony much weaker than He left it. The Want of Bread had abated the Strength and Flesh of some, had swelled others; and had they not been where are diverse sorts of *Shet-Fish*, they must have Perished. These Extremities beset us in *May* and *June*: and in the Time of these Straits, and indeed before Mr. *Winslow* went to *Monhiggon*, the *Indians* began to cast forth many insulting Speeches, Glorifying in our Weakness, and giving out how easy it would be ere long to cut us off, which occasions us to erect a *Fort* on the Hill above us. (W)

June e. or July b. Come into our Harbour 2 Ships of Mr. *Weston's*, the *Charity* (W) of 100 Tons, (*sm. ps*) & *Swan* (W) of 30, (*sm. ps*) with his Letter of *Apr. 10.* (B) and 50 or 60 Men, sent at his own

[15] This *Massacre* was on *March 22* last, (*sm. ps*) being *Friday*, (*ps*) and *Smith* and *Purckas* reckon up 347 *Englsh* People slain.

1622. K. of Great Britain, James I. K. of France, Lewis XIII. K. of Spain, Philip IV.

own Charge, (W) to settle a Plantation for Him in the *Massachusetts Bay*, for which he had procured a *Patent*, [16] they sail'd from *London* about the last of *April*, (sm. ps) the *Charity*, the bigger Ship leaves them, having many Passengers to carry to *Virginia*. (W) We allow this People Housing: and many being Sick, they have the best Means our Place affords. (B) [17]

By Mr. *Weston's* Ship comes a Letter from Mr. *John Pierce*, in whose Name the *Plimouth Patent* is taken; signifying that whom the Governor admits into the Association, He will approve. (B)

July 16. Our Number is about 100 Persons, all in Health, (ps) [i. e. Free from Sicknes, tho' not from Weaknes.] near 60 Acres of Ground well Planted

[16] *Smith* and *Purchas* say there were 60 Passengers: *Gov. Bradford* says - about 60 stout Men. But *Morton* mistakes in calling the *Swan* the *Sparrow*: *Smith & Purchas* mistake in saying they come to Supply the Plantation; whereas they come from Mr. *Weston* to Begin another: And as the *Manuscript Letter* tells us, They came upon no Religious Design, as did the Planters of *Plimouth*. (ms) so they were far from being Puritans.

[17] Mr. *Weston* in a Letter owns, that Many of them are Rude and Profane Fellows: Mr. *Cushman* in another writes. They are no Men for us, and I fear they will hardly Deal so well with the Savages as they shou'd; I Pray you therefore signify to *Squanto*, that they are a distinct Body from us, and we have nothing to do with them, nor must be blamed for their Faults, much less can warrant their Fidelity: And Mr. *John Pierce* in another writes - As for Mr. *Weston's* Company, they are so base in Condition for the most part, as in all Appearance not fit for an honest Man's Company; I wish they Prove otherwise. (B)

1622.	K. of Great Britain. James I.	K. of France. Lewis XIII.	K. of Spain. Philip IV.
-------	----------------------------------	------------------------------	----------------------------

Planted with Corn, besides Gardens repleniſhed with uſeful Fruits. (*ſm. pſ*)

This Summer we Build a *Timber Fort*, both ſtrong and comely, with flat Roof and Battlements; on which Ordnance are mounted, a Watch kept, and it alſo ſerves as a Place of Publick Worſhip. (*B*)

Mr. *Weston's* People ſtay Here the moſt part of the Summer, (*B*) while ſome ſeek out a Place for them. They exceedingly waſte and ſteal our Corn, and yet ſecretly revile us. At length their Coaſters Return, having found in the *Maſſachuſetts Bay* a Place they judge fit for Settlement, named *Wichaguſcuſſet* (*W*) or *Wesaguſquaſſet*, (*mn*) or *Wesſaguſſet* (*mſ*) ſince called *Weymouth*: Whither, upon their Ship [i.e. the *Charity*] returning from *Virginia*, (*B*) the Body of them go, leaving their Sick and Lame with us (*W*) till they had built ſome Houſing, (*B*) whom our Surgeon by God's Help recovers Gratis, & they afterwards fetch Home, (*W*) nor have we any Recompence for their Curtesy, nor deſired it. They prove an unruly Company, have no good Government over them; by Diſorder will ſoon fall to Want if Mr *Weston* come not quickly among them (*B*) Nor had they been long from us ere the *Indians* fill our Ears with Clamours againſt them for Stealing their Corn and other Abuſes. (*W*)

Our Crop proving ſcanty, partly thro' Weakneſs for want of Food to tend it, partly through other Buſineſs, & partly by much being ſtolen; a *Famine* muſt enſue next Year unleſs prevented: (*B*) But

Aug. e. (*W*) By an unexpected Providence (*B*) come into our Harbour 2 *Ships*; viz. the *Sparrow*, Mr. *Weston's*

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1622.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

Weston's, who having made her Voyage of Fifth (W) goes to *Virginia* (W.B) where both she and her Fish are sold. (B) The other called the *Discovery*, (W) Capt. *Jones*, Commander, (B.W) in her Way from *Virginia* Homeward, being set out by some Merchants to Discover the Shoals about *Cape Cod*, and Harbours between this and *Virginia*. Of her we buy Knives and Beads, which are now good Trade, tho' at Cent per Cent or more, and yet Pay away Coat Bever at 3 s. a Pound (which a few Years after yields 20 s.) By which means we are fit to Trade, both for Corn and Bever. (B)

In this Ship comes Mr. *John Porey*, who had been Secretary in *Virginia*, and is going Home in Her: who after his Departure sends the Governor a Letter of Thanks, Dated August 28. wherein He highly commends Mr. *Ainsworth's* and *Robinson's* Works: And after his Return to *England*, does this poor Plantation much Credit among those of no mean Rank. (B) [18]

Sept. e. or Octob. b. Mr. *Weston's* biggest Ship, the *Charity* Returns to *England*, leaving his People

[18] Mr. *Winslow* and Mr. *Hubbard* seem to mistake in thinking Capt. *Jones* was now bound for *Virginia*: and Mr. *Morton*, in thinking Mr. *Porey* was going Home in Mr. *Weston's* Ship, wherein his Men came [viz.--The *Charity*, which Mr. *Winslow* says sail'd for *England* at the end of Sept. or b. of October.] unless Mr. *Porey* went in the *Charity* from *Plymouth* to *Wessagusset*, and there wrote his Letter of Aug. 28: and then both Mr. *Winslow* and Mr. *Morton* may be Right, but Governor *Bradford* mistaken in thinking He was going Home in *Jones*.

K. of Great Britain.
1622. James I.

K. of France.
Lewis XIII.

K. of Spain.
Philip IV:

ple sufficiently victualed: The lesser viz. the *Swan* remains with his Plantation for their further Help. (W)

Shortly after Harvest, Mr. *Weston's* People at the *Massachusetts*, having by Disorder, much wasted their Provisions, begin to perceive a Want approaching; & hearing we had bought Commodities and design'd to trade for Corn, they write to the *Governor* to join with us, offer their *small Ship* for the Service, and Pray to let them have some of our Commodities: which the *Governor* condescends to; designing to go round *Cape Cod*, to the *Southward*, where Store of Corn may be obtained. (B) But are often crossed in our Purposes. As first, Mr. *Richard Green*, Brother-in-law to Mr. *Weston*, who from Him had the Charge of his Colony, Dies suddenly at *Plimouth*. (W) Then Capt. *Standish* (B. W) with *Squanto* for Guide, (B) Twice sets forth with them, but is driven back by violent Winds. [19] The second Time the *Captain* falling ill of a Fever, (W)

Nov. The *Governor* goes with them: but seeing no Passage thro' the Shoals of *Cape Cod*, puts into a Harbour at *Manamoyk*. That Evening the *Governor* with *Squanto* and others go ashore to the *Indian Houses*, stay all Night, trade with the *Natives*,

[19] This seems to be about the latter End of October; for which Gov. *Bradford* seems to mistake in writing the latter End of September; when He says, 'twas after Harvest [i. e. Indian Harvest] that Mr. *Weston's* People began to perceive a Want approaching, and wrote to the *Governor* of *Plimouth*, to join in Trading for Corn, &c.

K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1622. James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV

Natives, get 8 Hogsheads of Corn and Beans (W) Here *Squanto* falls Sick of a Fever, bleeding much at the Nose, which the *Indians* reckon a fatal Sympton, and Here in a few Days *Dies*, desiring the *Governor* to Pray that he might go to the *English Man's* God in Heaven, bequeathing his Things to sundry of his *English Friends* as Remembrances of his Love ; of whom we have a great Loss. (B) Thence sail to the *Masachusetts*, find a great *Sickness* among the *Natives*, not unlike the *Plague*, if not the same ; must give as much for a *Quart of Corn* as we used for a *Bever Skin* : The *Sayages* renew their Complaints to our *Governor* against those *English* : Thence sails to *Nauset*, buys 8 or 10 Hogsheads of Corn and Beans, as also at *Mattachusetts* : [20] but our *Shallop* being cast away, we cannot get our Corn aboard ; our *Governor* causes it to be stack'd and covered ; and charging the *Indians* with it, He procures a Guide, sets out a Foot, being 50 Miles, receiving all Respect from the *Natives* by the Way, weary and with galled Feet comes Home : 3 Days after, the *Ship* comes also ; and the Corn being Divided, Mr. *Weston's* People return to their Plantation. (W)

1623.

Jan. **C**apt. *Standish* being Recovered, takes another *Shallop*, sails to *Nauset*, finds the Corn left there in Safety, mends the other *Shallop*, gets the Corn aboard the *Ship* ; but it being very Cold

[20] Gov. *Bradford* says, they get 26 or 28 Hogsheads of Corn and Beans in all, for both Plantations.

K. of Great Britain.	K. of France	K. of Spain.
1623. James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

Cold and Stormy, is oblig'd to cut the Shallops from the Stern of the Ship, and loose them: but the Storm being over, finds them. While we lodge ashore, an *Indian* Steals some Trifles out of the Shallop as she lay in a Creek: which when the *Capt.* miss'd, He takes some of his Company, goes to the *Sachem*, requires the Goods, or wou'd Revenge it on them before He left them. On the *Morrow*, the *Sachem* comes to our Rendevous with many Men, Salutes the *Captain*, licking his Hand and bowing down, delivers the Goods, says He had beaten the Stealer, was very sorry for the Fact, orders the Women to make and bring us Bread, and is glad to be Reconciled: So we come Home and divide the Corn as before. (W)

After this the *Governor* with another Company goes to *Namasket*, buys Corn there: Where a *Great Sicknes* rising among the *Natives*, our People fetch it Home. (W)

The *Governor* also, with *Hobamak* and others go to *Manomet*, a Town near 20 Miles South of *Plimouth*, stands on a fresh River runing into a Bay [21] towards *Narragansett*, which cannot be less than 60 Miles from thence: 'Twill bare a Boat of 8 or 10 Tons to this Place: hither the *Dutch* or *French* or both used to come: It is from Hence to the Bay of *Cape Cod* about 8 Miles, out of which Bay the Sea flows into a Creek about 6 Miles almost directly towards the Town:

[21] This is called *Manomet Bay*: tho' these new Comers seem to mistake it for *Narraganset Bay*, which is near 20 Leagues to the Westward.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain
1623.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

Town : The Heads of this *Creek* and *River* are not far distant. [22] The *Sachem* of this Place is *Caunacum*, who (W) *Sept.* 13. last. (mn) with many others own'd themselves Subjects of King JAMES, and now uses the *Governor* very kindly, the *Governor* lodging Here in a bitter Night, buys Corn, but leaves it in the *Sachem's* Custody. (W)

Feb. Having not much Corn left, Capt. *Standish* goes again with 6 Men in the Shallop to *Matachiest*, meeting with the like Extreme Weather, being froze in the Harbour the first Night, gets a good Quantity of Corn of the *Natives* : Thro' Extremity is forc'd to lodge in their Houses, which they much press with a Design to KILL Him, as after appeared: For now begins a CONSPIRACY among the *Indians* to destroy the *English*, tho' to us unknown ; but the *Captain* ordering his Men to keep awake by Turns, is saved. Here also, an *Indian* Steals some Trifles, which the *Capt.* no sooner perceiv'd, but tho' He had no more than 6 Men with Him, yet draws them from the Boat, besets the *Sachim's* House, where most of the People were, and threatens to fall upon them without Delay,

[22] This *Creek* runs out Easterly into *Cape Cod Bay* at *Scusset Harbour* : and this *River* runs out Westerly into *Monomet Bay* : the Distance over Land from Bay to Bay is but 6 Miles : the *Creek* and *River* nearly meet in a low Ground : and this is the Place thro' which there has been a Talk of making a *Canal*, this 40 Years ; which wou'd be a vast Advantage to all these Countries, by saving the long and dangerous Navigation round the *Cape* and thro the *Shoals* adjoining.

1623.	K. of Great Britain. James I.	K. of France. Lewis XIII.	K. of Spain. Philip IV.
-------	----------------------------------	------------------------------	----------------------------

Delay, if they wou'd not forthwith restore them : signifying that as He wou'd not offer the least Injury, so He wou'd not receive any, without due Satisfaction : Hereupon the *Sachem* finds out the Party, makes Him return the Goods ; and this Act so daunts their Courage, that they dare not attempt any thing against the *Captain* ; but to appease his Anger, bring Corn afresh to Trade ; so as He lades his Shallop and comes Home in safety. (W)

Feb. e. An *Indian* comes from *John Sanders*, the Overseer of Mr. *Weston's* Men at the *Massachusetts* (W) with a Letter, shewing the great Wants they were fallen into (B) that having spent all their Bread and Corn (W) wou'd have borrow'd a Hogshead of the *Natives*, but they wou'd lend Him none : He desired Advice whether He might take it by Force, to support his Men till He returns (B) from *Monbiggon* ; where is a Plantation of Sir *F. Gorges*, and whither He is going to buy Bread of the Ships that come There a Fishing. (W) But the *Governor* with others dispatch the Messenger with Letters to diswade Him by all means from such a Violence. (B. W) exhorting them to make a shift as we, who have so little Corn left, that we are forc'd to live on *Ground-nuts*, *Clams*, *Muscles*, &c. Upon receiving our Letters, Mr. *Sanders* alters his Purpose, comes first to *Plimouth* : where notwithstanding our Necessities, we spare Him some Corn to carry Him to *Monbiggon*. (W) And

Feb. e. He goes thither with a *Shallop*, without knowing any thing of the *Indian CONSPIRACY* before He sails. (W)

K. of Great Britain. K. of France. K. of Spain.
1623. James I. Lewis XIII. Philip IV

This Spring go from England to the [North Eastern] Coasts of New England, about 40 Ships to Fish; who make a far better Voyage than ever. (*fin*)

Mar. b. The Captain having refresh'd Himself, takes a Shallop and goes to *Manomet* for the Corn the Gov. had bought. [23] Being with 2 of his Men far from the Boat at *Caunacum's* House 2 Natives come in from the *Massachusetts*, the chief of whom is *Wituwamet*, a notable, insulting Indian; who had formerly embrew'd his Hands in the Blood both of French and English derides our Weakness and boasts his Valour: He came, as appears afterwards, to engage *Caunacum* in the Conspiracy: the Weather being cold, they wou'd perswade the Captain to send to the Boat for the Rest of his Company; but He refusing, they help carry the Corn. There [24] a lusty Savage of *Paomet*, had undertaken to kill Him in the Rendezvous before they part; upon which they intend to fall on the others: But the Night being exceeding Cold, the Captain cou'd not rest without turning his Sides to the Fire continually: whereby the Indian missed his Opportunity. The next Day wou'd fain perswade the Captain to go to *Paomet*, where He had much Corn, & the Captain put forth with Him: but the Wind forcing them back, they come to *Plimouth*. (*W*)

March

[23] It seems as if the Captain went into *Scuffit Harbour*, which goes up *Westward* towards *Manomet*.

[24] *Smith* says, *Scar* a lusty Savage, &c. But *Smith* taking his History from this of *Winslow's*, I suspect the *Priester* mistook *Scar* for *There* in *Smith's* written Abridgment.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1623.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

Mar. While the *Captain* was at *Manomet*, News comes to *Plimouth* that *Masaffoit* is like to Die, and that a *Dutch Ship* is driven ashore before his House so high that she cou'd not be got off till the Tides encrease. Upon which the Gov. sends Mr. *Edward Winslow* & Mr. *John Hambden*, a Gentleman of *London*, with *Hobamak* to visit and help him, and speak with the *Dutch*. The first Night we lodge at *Namasket*: Next Day at One, come to a *Ferry* in *Corbitant's* Country, and 3 Mile further to *Mattapuyst* his Dwelling Place, tho' He be no Friend to us, but find Him gone to *Pakanokik* about 5 or 6 Miles off: Late within Night we get thither, whence the *Dutch* had departed about 2 in the Afternoon, find *Masaffoit* extream low, his Sight gone, his Teeth fix'd, having swallow'd nothing for 2 Days, but using means He surprisngly revives: we stay and help Him 2 Nights and 2 Days: at the End of the latter, taking our Leave He expresses his great Thankfulness: we come and lodge with *Corbitant* at *Mattapuyst*, who wonders that we being but 2 shou'd be so venturous. Next Day, on our Journey, *Hobamak* tells us, That at his coming away, *Masaffoit* privately charged Him to tell Mr *Winslow*, there was a *Plot* of the *Massachusuks* against *Weston's* People; and least we shou'd revenge it, against us also; that the *Indians* of *Paomet*, *Nauset*, *Mattachiest*, *Succonet*, [25] the
 Z 2 Ile

[25] Whither this was *Succonest*, since named *Falmouth*; or *Seconet*, since named *Little-Compton*, seems uncertain.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1623.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

Isle of *Capawak*, *Manomet* and *Agawayuom* are join'd with them ; and advises us by all means as we value our Lives and the Lives of our Countrymen, to kill the Conspirators in *Massachusetts* and the Plot wou'd cease ; and without Delay, or 'twou'd be too late. That Night we lodge at *Namasket*, the next Day get Home : where we find Capt. *Standish* had sail'd this Day for the *Massachusetts*, but contrary Winds had driven Him back, and the *Paome* Indian still soliciting the Captain to go with Him. At the same time, *Wissapinewat* another *Sachem*, Brother to *Obrakiest*, *Sachem* of the *Massachusetts*, Reveals the same thing (W)

Mar. 23. Being a *Yearly Court Day*, the Governor communicates his Intelligence to the whole Company, and asks their Advice : who leave it to the Governor, with his *Assistant* and the *Captain* to Do as they think most meet Upon this they order the *Captain* to take as many Men as He thinks sufficient, to go forth with and fall on the Conspirators, but forbare till he makes sure of *Wituwamet* the bloody *Savage* before spoken of. The *Captain* takes but eight least He thou'd raise a Jealousy. (W)

The next Day comes 1 of *Weston's Men* (W) thro' the Woods to *Plimouth*, tho' he knew not a Step of the Way, but indeed had lost the Path, which was a happy Mistake ; for being Pursued (B) the *Indian* (W) thereby miss'd Him (B) but by little, and went to *Manomet*. (W) the Man makes a pitiful Narration of their weak and dangerous State, with the Insults of the *Indians* over them, and that to give the *Savages* content, since *Sanders* went to *Monbiggon*, they

K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1623. James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

had *Hinged* One who had stole their Corn (W) tho' He was Bed rid, (*Hudibras*) and yet they were not satisfied: Some Died with Cold and Hunger: one in gathering Shel-fish, was so weak that he stuck in the Mud and was found Dead in the Place: the Rest were ready to starve, & He dare stay no longer. (W) [26]

The *next Day*, the *Captain* sails and arrives There, is suspected, insulted and threatned by the *Savages*: But at length watching an Opportunity, having *Wituwamet* and *Peksuot*, a notable *Pinese* (i. e. Counsellor & Warriour) with another Man, and a *Brother* of *Wituwamet*, with as many of his own Men together, He falls upon and after a violent Struggle slays the 3 former with their own Knives, orders the *last* to be *Hang'd*, goes to another Place, Kills another, Fights and makethe Rest to Fly, and Mr. *Weston's* Men Kill 2 more. But the *Captain* releases the *Indian Women*, wou'd not take their Beaver Coats, nor suffer the least Discourtesy to be offered them. (W)

Upon this, Mr. *Weston's* People resolve to leave their Plantation. The *Captain* tells them for his own Part He dare live Here with fewer Men than they: Yet since they were other wise minded, according to his Orders (W) offers to bring them to *Plimouth*, where they shou'd fare as well as we till Mr. *Weston* or some Supply comes to them: or if they better liked any other Course, He wou'd help them as well as He cou'd. Upon this they desire Him to let

Z 3

them

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1623.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip I V.

them have Corn, and they wou'd go with their small Ship (B) to *Monbiggon* (W) where they may hear from Mr. *Weston*, or have some Supply from Him, seeing the Time of Year is come for the Fishing Ships to be There : or other wise, wou'd work with the Fishermen for their Living and get their Passage to *England*. So they ship what they have, (B) He lets them have all the Corn He can spare, scarce keeping enough to last Him Home, sees them under sail well out of the *Massachusetts-Bay*, (B. W) not taking of them the Worth of a Penny ; (B) with some few of their Company who desire it, He Returnsto *Plimouth* : bringing the Head of *Witwamer*, which He sets up on the *Fort* (W)

Thus this *Plantation* is broken up in a Year : and this is the End of those who being all able Men, had boasted of their Strength and what they wou'd bring to pass, in comparison of the People at *Plimouth*, who had many Women, Children, and weak Ones with them (B)

While Capt. *Standish* was gone, the *Savage* who went to *Monamet*, returning through our Town was secured till the *Captain* came back : then confess'd the Plot and says that *Obtakies* was drawn to it by the Importunity of his People ; is now sent to inform Him of the Grounds of our Proceeding, and require Him to send us the 3 *Englishmen* among them. After some time *Obtakies* perswades an *Indian Woman* to come and tell the *Governor*, He was sorry they were kill'd before He heard from us, or He wou'd have sent them, and desires Peace. (W)

But this Action so amazes the *Natives*, that they forsake their Houses, run to an fro, live

	K. of <i>Great Britain.</i>	K. of <i>France.</i>	K. of <i>Spain.</i>
1623.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

in *Swamps*, &c; which brings on them *sundry Diseases*, whereof many *Die*: as *Caunacum*, Sachem of *Monamet*; *Aspinet*, Sachem of *Nawset Iyanough*, Sachem of *Matachieft*; and many others are still daily *Dying* among them. From one of those *Places* a *Boat* is sent to the *Governor* with *Presents* to work their *Peace*: but not far from *Plimouth* is cast away, when 3 are drown'd, and one escaping dare not come to us. (W)

Apr. 6. No' Supply being heard of nor knowing when to expect any, we consider how to raise a better Crop, and not languish still in Misery. We range all the Youth under some Family, agree that every Family Plant for their own Particular and Trust to themselves for Food (B) but at Harvest bring in a competent Portion for the maintenance of Publick Officers, Fishermen, &c. (W) and in all other things go on in the *General Way* as before: for this End assign every Family a Parcel of Land in Proportion to their Number, tho' make no *Division* for *Inheritance*: which has very good Success, makes all industrious, gives Content: Even the Women and Children now go into the Field to Work, and much more Corn is Planted than ever. (B)

☞ Capt. *John Mason* (H) who had been *Governor* of *Newfoundland*, (gr) *Sir F. Gorges*, and several other *Gentlemen* of *Shrewsbury*, *Bristol*, *Dorchester*, *Plimouth*, *Exeter* and other *Places* in the *West* of *England*, having obtained *Patents* of the *New England Council* for several *Parts* of this *Country*. (H) They, *this Spring* (W) send over *Mr. David Thompson* (H) or *Tompson* a *Scotchman*

K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
623. James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

Scotchman (W) with Mr. *Edward Hilton* and his Brother *Wm. Hilton*, with others, to Begin a Settlement: (H) and Mr. *Tompson* now Begins One, 25 Leagues North East from *Plimouth*, near *Smith's Isles*, at a Place call'd *Pascataquack*. (W) the Place first seiz'd is call'd the *Little Harbour*, on the West Side of *Pascataqua River* and near the Mouth, where the first House is built call'd *Mason Hill*. But the *Hilton's* set up their Stages higher up the River at [*Cocbecho*] since nam'd *Dover*. (H)

This Year [and I conclude this Spring] there are also some scattering Beginnings made at *Munbiggon*, and some other Places by sundry others. (B) But about *Pascataqua River*, there seem not many other Buildings erected till after 1631. (H)

Shortly after Mr. *Weston's* People went to the Eastward, He comes There Himself with some of the Fishermen, under another Name and Disguise of a Blacksmith; where He hears the Ruin of his Plantation: and getting a Shallop with a Man or two comes on to see how things are: but in a Storm is cast away in the Bottom of the Bay between *Pascataquack* and *Merrimack River*, [27] & hardly escapes with his Life. Afterwards He falls into the Hands of the Indians, who pillage Him of all He sav'd from the Sea, and strip Him of all his Cloaths to his Shirt. At length He gets to *Pascataquack* borrows a Sute of Cloaths, finds means to come to

[27] And so says Mr. *Morton*: Mr. *Hubbard* therefore seems to mistake in writing *Ipswich Bay*.

K. of Great Britain.	K. of France	K. of Spain
1623. James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

to *Plimouth*, and desires to borrow some Bever of us. Notwithstanding our Straits, yet in Consideration of his Necessity, we let Him have 170 odd Pounds of Bever, with which He goes to the *Eastward*, stays his small Ship and some of his Men, buys Provision and fits Himself, which is the Foundation of his future Courses: and yet never Repaid us any thing save Reproaches, and becomes our Enemy on all Occasions (B)

Apr. m. We Begin to set our Corn, the setting Season being good till the latter End of *May*. (W) But by the time our Corn is Planted, our Victuals are spent: not knowing at Night where to have a Bit in the Morning, and have neither Bread nor Corn for 3 or 4 Months together: yet bare our Wants with Cheerfulness and rest on Providence. (B)

Having but one Boat left, we divide the Men into several Companies, 6 or 7 in each: who take their Turns to go out with a Net and fish, and return not till they get some, tho' they be 5 or 6 Days out; knowing there's nothing at Home, and to return empty would be a great Discouragement. When they stay long or get but little, the Rest go a digging *Shell fish*: and thus we live the *Summer*; only sending 1 or 2 to range the Woods for *Deer*, they now and then get one, which we divide among the Company: and in the *Winter* are help'd with *Fowl* and *Ground-nuts*. (B)

At length we receive Letters from the *Adventurers* in *England* of Dec. 22 and Apr. 9 last, wherein they say, *It rejoiceth us much to hear those good Reports that divers have bro't home*

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1623.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

of you : and give an Account, that last Fall (B) Octob. 16 (ps) a Ship the *Parragon*, sail'd from London with Passengers (B) 37 (sm) or rather 67 (ps) for *New-Plimouth* : being fitted out by Mr. *John Pierce*, in whose Name our first *Patent* was taken, his Name being only used in Trust : but when He saw we were Here hopefully seated, and by the Success God gave us had obtained favour with the Council for *New-England*, He gets another *Patent* of a larger Extent, meaning to keep it to Himself, allow us only what He pleas'd, hold us as his Tenants and sue to his Courts as chief Lord : But meeting with tempestuous Storms (B) in the Downs (mn) the Ship is so bruis'd and leaky that in 14 Days she Return'd (B) to London (mn) was forc'd to be put into the Dock, 100 Pounds laid out to mend Her, and lay 6 or 7 Weeks to Dec. 22, before she sail'd a second time : but being half way over, met with extream tempestuous Weather about the middle of Feb which held 14 Days, beat off the Round-House with all her upper Works, oblig'd them to cut her Mast and return to *Portsmouth* ; having 109 Souls aboard, with Mr. *Pierce* Himself. Upon which great and repeated Loss and Disappointment, He is prevail'd upon for 500 Pounds to resign his *Patent* to the Company [28] which cost Him but 50 Pounds : and the Goods with Charge of Passengers in this Ship cost the Company 640 Pounds : for which they were forc'd to hire

[28] By this Company seems to be meant the *Adventurers to Plimouth Colony.*

K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1623. James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

hire another Ship, viz. the *Ann* of 140 Tons to Transport them, viz 60 Passengers with 60 Tons of Goods; hoping to sail, by the end of April. (B)

June e. Arrives a *Ship* with Capt. *Francis West* who has a Commission to be *Admiral* of *New England*, to restrain such Ships as come to Fish and Trade without Licence from the *New England Council*, for which they shou'd Pay a round Sum of Money: tell us they spake with a *Ship* at Sea and were aboard her, having sundry Passengers, bound for this Plantation, but lost her Mast in a Storm which quickly follow'd, wonder she is not arriv'd and fear some Miscarriage which fills us with Trouble. But Mr. *West* finding the *Fishermen* stubborn Fellows and too strong for Him, sails for *Virginia*; and their Owners complaining to the *Parliament*, procure an Order that Fishing should be Free. (B)

July m. Notwithstanding our great Pains and Hopes of a large Crop, God seems to blast them and threaten sorer *Famine* by a *Great Drought and Heat* from the *third Week* in *May* to the middle of *this Month* [29] so as the Corn withers (B) both the Blade and Stalk, as if 'twere utterly Dead: Now are our Hopes overthrow and we discouraged, our Joy being turned into Mourning: and to add to our sorrowful State, our Hearing the Supply sent us in Company with anothe Ship 300 Leagues at Sea, and now
it

[29] Mr. *Morton* mistaking Governour *Bradford*, wrongly plac'd this *Drought* in the *preceeding Year*: and Mr. *Hubbard* follows Mr. *Morton's* mistake.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1623.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

three Months see nothing of Her, only Signs of a Wreck on the Coast, which we can judge no other than She : The most couragious are now discouraged. Upon this the *Publick Authority* (W) sets apart a solemn *Day of Humiliation and Prayer* to seek the LORD in this Distress who was pleased to give speedy Answer, to our own and the *Indians* Admiration : For tho' it in the former Part of the Day, it was very clear and hot, without a Cloud or sign of Rain ; yet towards Evening (B. W) before the Exercise is over, the Clouds gather and *next Mornning* distill such soft (W) & gentle (B) Showers (B. W) as give cause of Joy and Praise to GOD : they come without any Thunder, Wind, or Violence, and by Degrees and that Abundance (B) continuing 14 *Days* with seasonable Weather (W) as the Earth is thoroughly soaked, and the decayed Corn and other Fruits so reviv'd, as is wonderful to see, the *Indians* are astonished to behold, and gives a joyful Prospect of a fruitful Harvest. (B) At the same time, Capt *Standish*, who had been sent by the *Governor* to buy Provisions, returns with some, accompanied with Mr. *David Tompson* above said. (W)

Now also we hear of the *third Repulse* [30] our Supply had, of their safe tho' dangerous Return to *England*, and of their Preparing to to come to us. Upon all which, another Day is set apart for solemn and *Publick Thanksgiving*. (W)

July

[30] Neither *Governor Bradford* nor Mr. *Morton* give any Hint of this *third Repulse*.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1623.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

July e. (W) Aug (B) comes in the expected Ship the Ann. Mr. Wm Pierce Master: [31] and about a Week or 10 Days after (B) Aug. b. (W) arrives the Pinnace (B) nam'd the James, Mr. Bridges Master (m) which they had left in fowl Weather, a fine new Vessel of 44 Tuns which the Company had built to stay in the Country: they bring about 60 Persons for the General (B) being all in Health but one who soon Recovers, (W) some being very useful and become good Members of the body (B) of whom the Principal are Mr. Timothy Hutterly and Mr. George Morton, who came in the Ann; and Mr. John Fenney, who come in the James (m) Some were the Wives and Children of such who came before: and some others are so bad we are forc'd to be at the Charge to send them Home next Year (B)

By this Ship R. C [i. e. doubtless Mr. Custman their Agent] writes, *Some few of your old Friends are come: they come dropping to you; and by Degrees I hope ere long you shall enjoy them all, &c. (B)*

From the General, subscribed by 13 we have also a Letter wherein they say. -- *Let it not be grievous to you, that you have been Instruments to brake the Ice for others who come after with less Difficulty: the Honour shall be yours to the World's End: we have you always in our Breasts. and our hearty Affection is towards you all, as*

[31] Governor Bradford and from Him Mr. Morton, mentioning Capt. West's sailing for Virginia, say, the Ann came in about 14 Days after: and Smith tells us the two Ships came in either the next Morning or not long after the Thanksgiving.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain
1623.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

are the Hearts of Hundreds more which never saw your Faces, who doubtless Pray your Safety as their own (B)

When these Passengers see our poor and low Condition ashore, they are much dismayed and full of sadness: only our *old Friends* rejoice to see us & that 'tis no worse, & now hope we shall enjoy better Days together. The best Dish we cou'd present them with, is a *Lobster*, or *Piece of Fish*, without Bread, or any thing else but a *Cup of fair Spring Water*: and the long continuance of this Diet with our Labours abroad has somewhat abated the Freshness of our Complexion; but God gives us Health, &c. (B)

Aug. 14. The fourth Marriage is of Gov. Bradford to Mrs. Alice Southworth, Widow. (bz)

Sept. 10. (W) The *Pinnace* (B) being fitted for Trade & Discovery to the Southward of Cape Cod, is now ready to sail [32]: and *this Day*, the *Ann*, having been hired by the Company, sails for London (W) being laden with Clapboards, and all the Beaver and other Furrs we have: with whom we send Mr. Winslow, to inform how Things are and procure what we want. (B)

[Here Ends Mr. WINSLOW's Narrative: and there with also PURCHAS's ACCOUNT of NEW ENGLAND. And from this Time forward I shall chiefly confine my self to the MANUSCRIPTS.]

Now

[32] Smith says, under Capt Alton; but either Smith or the Printer perhaps mistook the Name for Alden.

141

K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1623. James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

Now our *Harvest* comes; instead of *Famine* we have *Plenty*, & the *Face of Things* is changed to the *Joy of our Hearts*: nor has there been any *General Want of Food* among us since to this *Day*. (B) [33]

Sept. m Capt. *Robert Gorges* Son of Sir *Ferdinand* with Mr. *Morell* (B) an *Episcopal Minister* (m/s) and sundry *Passengers* and *Families* arrive in the *Massachusetts Bay*, to Begin a *Plantation* There [34] *Pitches* on the same *Place* Mr. *Weston's* People had forsaken; has a *Commission* from the *Council for New England* (B) to be their *Lieutenant General* (gr) or *General Governor* of the *Country*; and they appoint for his *Council* and *Assistance*, Capt. *West* the aforesaid *Admiral*, *Christopher Levit*, Esq; and the *Governor* of *Plimouth* for the *Time* being, giving Him *Authority* to chuse others as He thou'd find fit; with full *Power* to Him and his *Assistants*, or any 3 of them. whereof Himself to be one, to Do what they shou'd think good in all *Cases*, *Capital*, *Criminal*, *Civil*, &c. He gave us notice of His *Arrival* by *Letter*: and before we cou'd visit Him sails for the *Eastward* with the *Ship* He came in: but a *Storm* rising they bare into our *Harbour*, are kindly entertained and stay 14 *Days*. Mean while Mr. *Weston*,

[33] Gov. *Bradford's* *History* reaches to the end of 1646

[34] Sir *F. Gorges* says, *His Son* arrived at the *Massachusetts-Bay* about the the beginning of *Aug.* and Mr. *Hubbard* says in the end of *Aug.* But these seem unlikely; inasmuch as Mr. *Winslow* sailing from *Plimouth* on *Sept. 10*, for *London*, and *There* Printing an *Account* of *N. E.* to the very *Day* of his sailing, has not the least Hint of Capt. *Gorges* Arrival.

K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1623. James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

Weston, having recovered his Ship, & coming in Here, Capt. *Gorges* calls Him to Account for some Abuses laid to his Charge: with great Difficulty Governor *Bradford* makes Peace between them. Shortly after, Gov. *Gorges* goes to the *Massachusetts* by Land, being thankful for his kind Entertainment. His Ship staying Here, fits for *Virginia*, having some Passengers to deliver There. (B)

The *Pinnace* being sent about the *Cape* to Trade with the *Narragansetts*, gets some Corn and Beaver: yet makes but a poor Voyage; the *Dutch* having used to furnish them with Cloath and better Commodities; whereas they had only Beads and Knives, which are not There much esteemed. (B)

Nov. 5 (m) Some of the Seamen roystering in a House and making a Great Fire in very cold Weather, it brakes out of the Chimney into the Church, consumes the House with 3 or 4 more and all the Goods and Provisions in them (B) [35] to the value of 500 l. (fm) the Dwelling where it begun being right against the House which contain'd our common Store and Provision, was like to be consum'd, which wou'd have overthrown our Plantation: But through God's Mercy by the great Care and Diligence of the Governor and others about Him, is saved. Some

[35] *Smith* says there were 7 Houses Burnt: But perhaps by mistake He may account therewith the 2 Burnt in 1621; and Mr. *Hubbard* seems to mistake in writing as if the Common House were Burnt, whereas the Fire was only right over against it, & greatly danger'd it.

1623.	K. of Great Britain. James I.	K. of France. Lewis XIII.	K. of Spain. Philip IV.
-------	----------------------------------	------------------------------	----------------------------

Some wou'd have had the Goods thrown out; which if they had, much wou'd have been stolen by the rude People of the 2 *Ships*, who were almost all ashore. But a trusty Company was plac'd within, as well as others who with wet Cloaths and other Means kept off the Fire without: For we suspected malicious Dealing if not plain Treachery: For when the Tumult was greatest, was heard a Voice, though from whom unknown---*Look well about you, for all are not Friends that are near you.* And when the Vehemence of the Fire was over, Smoak was seen to rise within a *Shed* adjoining to the *Store House*, which was wattled up with Boughs, in the withered Leaves whereof a Fire was kindled; which some running to quench, found a *Fire-brand* of an Ell long, lying under the Wall on the Inside, which must be laid there by some Hand, in the Judgment of all who saw it. But God kept us in the Danger whatever was intended (B)

Capt. *Gorges* Ship sailing for *Virginia*, sundry of those whom the *Company* had sent over Returned in Her: Some because of the *Fire*, which had burnt both their Houses and Provisions (B) one of whom was Mr. *Hatherly* (mn) and others out of Discontent and Dislike of the Country. (B)

1624.

Towards the Spring, after Capt. *Gorges* and Mr. *Weston* had been to the *Eastward*, Mr. *Weston* comes again to *Plimouth*, then sails for
A a *Virginia*.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1624.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

Virginia. [36] And Capt. *Gorges* not finding the State of Things to answer his Quality, with some who depended on Him, Returns to *England*: some of his People go to *Virginia*; and some few remain, who are help'd with Supplies from Hence. But Mr. *Morrell* stays about a Year after the Governor, and then takes shipping Here and returns. At his going away, told some of our People, He had a Power of *Superintendency* over the Churches Here, but never show'd it. And thus the *second Plantation* at the *Massachusetts* Ended. (B)

This Spring there go about 50 *English Ships*, to Fish on the Coasts of *New England*. (sm)

[*This Spring*] within a Year after Mr. *David Tompson* had began a Plantation at *Pascataqua*, He removes to the *Massachusetts Bay* and possesses a fruitful *Island* and very desirable Neck of Land, which is after confirmed to Him by the *General Court* of the *Massachusetts Colony*. (H)

About *this Year* [and I conclude *this Spring*] the Fame of the *Plantation* at *New Plimouth* being spread in all the Western Parts of *England*; the Rev. Mr. *White* (H) a famous *Puritan Minister* (ec) of *Dorchester*, excites several *Gentlemen* There to make way for another Settlement in *New England*: who now on a common Stock, send over sundry Persons to Begin a *Plantation* at *Cape Ann*: employ Mr *John Tilly* their Overseer of Planting; and Mr. *Thomas Gardener*, of the Fishery for the present Year. (H) *This*

[36] He afterwards Dies of the Sickness at *Bristol* in *England*, in the Time of the Civil War. (B)
 ec. *Echard's History of England*.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1624.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

This Year [and I suppose *this Spring*] Mr. *Henry Jacob* who had set up an *Independant Church* in *England* in 1616, with the Consent of his Church goes to *Virginia* : where soon after He *Dies* : But upon his Departure, his Congregation chuse Mr. *Lathrop* their Pastor. (np) [I conclude He is the same Mr. *John Lathrop*, who about 10 Years after comes to *Sci-tuate* in *Plimouth Colony*.]

The Time of our *Electing* Officers for this Year arriving, the *Governor* desires the People, both to *change* the Persons and *add* more *Assistants* to the *Governor* for Council and Help : showing the Necessity of it ; that if 'twere a Benefit or Honour, 'tis fit others shou'd be Partakers ; or if a Burthen, 'tis but equal others shou'd help to bare it ; and that this is the *End* of *Yearly Elections*. (B. mn) Yet they chuse the same *Governor*, viz. Mr. *Bradford* : (H) But whereasthere was but 1 *Assistant*, they now chuse 5 and give the *Governor* a *double Voice*. (B. mn)

Mar. b. We send our *Pinnacle* to the *Eastward* a fishing : but arriving safe in a *Harbour* near *Damarin's Cove*, where Ships used to ride, some Ships being There already arriv'd from *England* ; soon after, an extraordinary Storm drove Her against the Rocks, broke and sunk Her There : the Master and 1 Man drowned ; the others sav'd ; but all their Provisions, Salt and Lading lost. *Shortly after*, (B) viz. in

Mar. (mn) Mr. *Winslow* (B) our Agent, (mn) comes over in the Ship *Charity* and brings a pretty

A a 2

good

K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1624. James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

good Supply of Cloathing, &c. the *Ship* comes a *Fishing*, a Thing fatal to this Plantation He also brings a *Bull* and 3 *Heifers*, the *first Cattle of this kind in the Land*: but therewith a sad Account of a *strong Faction* among the Adventurers against us, and especially against the Coming of Mr. *Robinson* and the *Rest* from *Leyden*. (B)

By Mr. *Winslow* we have several Letters (1) from Mr. *Robinson* to the *Governor*, dated *Leyden*, Dec 19 [I suppose *New Style*; but in ours, Dec. 9] 1623: wherein he writes with great Concern and Tenderness about our Killing the *Savage Conspirators* at the *Massachusetts*; says, *O how happy a thing had it been that you had converted some before you had killed any!* &c [37] (2) From the same to Mr. *Brewster*, Dated *Leyden* Dec. 20 [I suppose *New Style*; but in ours, Dec. 10] 1623, wherein He writes of the deferring of their desired Transportation, thro' the Opposition of some of the Adventurers: 5 or 6 being absolutely bent for *Them* above all others; 5 or 6 are their professed Adversaries; the *rest* more indifferent, yet influenc'd by the *latter*, who above all others are unwilling that He shou'd be Transported, &c. (3) From R. C. [I conclude Mr. *Cushman* at *London*, dated *Jan.* 24 1623, 4; wherein He writes, they send a CARPENTER to build 2 *Ketches*, a *Ligbtier* and 6 or 7 *Shallops*; a SALT-MAN to make Salt; and a PREACHER, *tho' not the most eminent, for whose Going* (says He) *Mr. Winslow* and I gave way

to

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1624.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

to give Content to some at London : the Ship to be laden as soon as you can and sent to Bilboa : to send Mr. Winslow again : We have taken a PATENT for CAPE ANN, &c. (B)

This Spring the People requesting the Gov. to have some Land for Continuance, and not by Yearly Lot as before ; He gives every Person an Acre to Them and Theirs, as near the Town as can be ; and no more till the 7 Years expire, that we may keep close together for greater Defence and Safety. (B)

The Ship is soon discharg'd and sent to Cape Ann a fishing, and some of our Planters to help build her Stages to their own Hindrance : but thro' the Drunkenness of the Master which the Adventurers sent, made a poor Voyage ; and wou'd have been worse, had we not kept one a Trading There who got some Skins for the Company. (B)

The Fishing Masters sending us Word, that if we wou'd be at the Cost, they wou'd help to weigh our Pinnace near Damarin's Cove, and their Carpenter shou'd mend Her ; We therefore sent : and with several Tun of Cask fastened to Her at low Water, they buoy her up, hale her ashore, mend her ; and our People bring her to us again. (B)

June 17. Born at *Plimouth* to Governor *Bradford*, his Son *William* ; who afterwards becomes *Deputy Governor* of the Colony. (db)

A a 3

[This

db. From the said *Deputy Governor's* Original Table-Book written with a black Lead Pencil.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1624.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV

This Month, Dies Mr. George Morton, a gracious Servant of GOD, an unfeigned Lover and Promoter of the common Good & Growth of this Plantation, & faithful in what ever Publick Employment He was entrusted with. (*mn*)

The SHIP-CARPENTER sent us is an honest and very industrious Man, quickly builds us 2 very good and strong *Shallops*, with a great and strong *Lighter*, and had hewn Timber for 2 *Ketches*; but this is spoilt; for in the *Hot Season* of the Year, He falls into a Feaver and *Dies* to our great Loss and Sorrow. (*B*)

But the SALT-MAN is an ignorant, foolish and selfwill'd Man; who chules a Spot for his Salt-Works, will have 8 or 10 Men to help Him, is confident the Ground is Good, makes a Carpenter rear a great Frame of a House for the Salt and other like Uses; but finds Himself deceiv'd in the Bottom; will then have a Lighter to carry Clay, &c. yet all in vain: He cou'd do nothing but boil Salt in *Pans*. The next Year, is sent to *Cape Ann*; and there the *Pans* are set up by the Fishery: but before the Summer is out, He burns the House and spoils the *Pans*: and there's an End of this Chargeable Business. (*B*)

The MINISTER is Mr. John Lysford, whom a Faction of the Adventurers send, to hinder Mr. Robinson. At his Arrival appears exceeding complaisant and humble, sheds many Tears, blesses GOD that had brought Him to see our Faces, &c: we give Him the best Entertainment we can; at his Desire Receive Him into our Church, when He blesses GOD for this Opportunity and Freedom to enjoy his Ordinances in

K. of <i>Great Britain.</i>	K. of <i>France.</i>	K. of <i>Spain.</i>
1624. James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

in Purity among his People, &c; we make Him larger Allowance than any other; and as the *Governor* used in weighty Matters to consult with Elder *Brewster* with the *Affistants*, so now He calls Mr. *Lysford* to Council also. But Mr. *Lysford* soon joins with Mr. *John Oldham* a private Instrument of the Factious Part of the Adventurers in *England*, whom we had also called to Council in our chief Affairs without Distrust: yet they fall a *Plotting* both against our *Church* and *Government*, and endeavour to overthrow them. (B)

July. [38] At length, the *Ship* (B) wherein *Lysford* came (*mn*) setting sail towards *Evening*; the *Governor* takes a *Shallop*, goes out with Her a *League* or 2 to Sea, calls for *Lysford's* and *Oldham's* Letters, opens them, and finds their Treachery: Mr. *Wm. Pierce* now Master of the Ship, who was aware of their Actions, readily helping. The *Governor* returns in the *Night*, brings some of their Letters back, but keeps them private, till *Lysford* and his few *Accomplices* which the Factious Part of the Adventurers sent, judging their Party strong enough, rise up, oppose the *Government* and *Church*, draw a Company apart, set up for themselves, and He wou'd minister the *Sacrament* to them by his *Episcopal* Calling, &c (B)

Upon this the *Governor* calls a Court, summons the whole Company to appear, charges *Lysford* and *Oldham* with *Plotting* and *Writing* against us; which they Deny. The *Governor* then

[38] This Date I compute from the Article of *August* 22 following.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1624.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

then produces their own *Letters* : they are confounded and convicted : *Oldham* being outrageous wou'd have rais'd a Mutiny ; but his Party leaves Him : and the Court Expells them the Colony : *OLDHAM*---*presently*, tho' his Wife and Family have Leave to stay the *Winter*, or till he can make Provision to remove them comfortably. He goes and settles at *Natasco(B)* i. e. *Nantasket(mn.H)* [at the Entrance of the *Massachusetts-Bay*] where the *Plimouth People* had before set up a Building to accommodate their Trade with the *Massachusetts* : and there Mr. *Roger Conant* and some others with their Families retire and stay a Year and some few Months. (H) *LYFORD* has Leave to stay six Months ; owns his Fault before the Court, that all He had written is False, & the Sentence far less than He deserves ; afterwards confesses the same to the *Church* with many Tears, begs Forgiveness, and is restored to his Teaching. (B)

Aug. 5 The ninth Marriage at *New Plimouth* is of Mr. *Thomas Prince* with Mrs. *Patience Brewster*, (bg) [He is afterwards Governor : and by this only Hint I find He was now in the Country.]

Aug. 22. Notwithstanding *Lysford's* Protestations and the Kindness shown him ; He in a Month or 2 Relapses ; and this Day, writes by the *Pinnace* another *Letter* to the Adventurers against us ; but the Party entrusted gives it to the Governor. (B) [This *Pinnace* seems to sail for *London* and Mr. *Winslow* in Her.]

This Year comes some Addition to the few Inhabitants of *Wessaguset*, from *Weymouth* in *England* : who are another sort of People than the

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1624.	James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

the Former (*msl*) [& on whose Account I conclude the Town is since called *Weymouth*] [39]

At *New Plimouth*, there are now about 180 *Persons*; some Cattle & Goats, but many Swine and Poultry; 32 Dwelling Houses: the Town is impaled about half a Mile in Compass: on a High Mount in the Town, they have a *Fort* well built with Wood, Lime and Stone, and a fair Watch Tower. The Place it seems is Healthful: for in the 5 *last Years*, notwithstanding their great Want of most Necessaries, there hath not one Died of the *first Planters*: And *this Year*, they have freighted a *Ship* of 180 *Tuns*, &c. (*sm*)

The *General Stock* already employed by the *Adventurers* to *Plimouth*, is about *seven thousand Pounds*. (*sm*)

At *Cape Ann* there is a *Plantation* beginning by the *Dorchester Men*, which they hold of those of *New Plimouth*; who also by them have set up a *Fishing Work*. (*sm*)

☞ [And Here SMITH Ends his Account of NEW ENGLAND]

1625.

THIS Winter Mr. *White* with the *Dorchester Adventurers*, hearing of some Religious Persons lately remov'd from *New Plimouth* to *Nantasket* from Dislike of their rigid Principles, among whom was Mr. *Roger Conant*, a pious

[39] They have the Rev. Mr. *Barnard* their first *Non-conformist Minister*, who Dies among them: But whether He comes before or after 1630, or when He Dies is yet unknown (*msl*) nor do I any where find the least Hint of Him, but in the *Manuscript Letter*, taken from some of the oldest People at *Weymouth*.

K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1625. James I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

ous, sober and prudent Gentleman; they chuse Mr. *Conant* to manage their Affairs at *Cape Ann*, both of Planting and Fishing: and Mr. *White* engag-s Mr. *Humphry* their Treasurer to signify to Him the same by Writing. They also invite Mr. *Ljford* to be Minister to the Plantation, and Mr. *Oldham* to manage their Trade with the Natives. (H)

Mar. 27. *Lord's Day*, King JAMES I, of Great Britain Dies (hs) [Æt. 59: having Reigned over England 22 Years and over Scotland above 57] and his only Son CHARLES I, Æt. 25 succeeds (hs) in whose Reign the Reformation degenerates, and the Prelates load us with more Popish Innovations, and bind the Burthens more straitly on us. (bl)

This Year, (mn) comes over Capt *Wollaston*, with three or 4 more of some Eminence [40] and a great many Servants, Provisions, &c to Begin a Plantation. They Pitch on a Place in the *Massachusetts-Bay*, (B) since named *Brainrey* (mn) on the Northerly mountainous Part thereof (msl) which they call *Mount Wollaston*: among whom is one (B) *Thomas* (mn) *Morton*: who had been a kind of petty Fogger at *Furnival's Inn*. (B)

This Spring, at our Election Court, *Oldham*, tho' forbid to Return without Leave; yet openly

fs. *Howes* Continuation of *Stow's Annals*.

lb. Mr. *Berj Hubbard's* Sermo Secularis.

[40] Deputy Governor *Dudley* saysthere came 30 with Capt. *Wollaston*; in his Letter to the Countess of *Lincoln*. of March 28. 1631, Printed in 8 vo at *Boston*, 1696.

	K. of <i>Great Britain.</i>	K. of <i>France.</i>	K. of <i>Spain.</i>
1625.	Charles I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

penly comes, and in so furious a manner reviles us, that even his Company are aham'd of his Outrage. Upon which we appoint Him to Pass thro' a Guard of Soldiers and every one with a Musket to give Him a Blow on his hinderPart, is then convey'd to the Water Side, where a Boat is ready to carry Him away. (B)

While this is doing Mr. *Winslow* and Mr. *Wm. Pierce* land from *England*, and bid them spare neither Him nor *Lyford*: for they had play'd the villians with us; and their Friends in *England* had the like Bickerings with ours There about *Lyford's* calumnious Letters, &c. after many Meetings and much Clamour against our Agents for accusing Him; the Controversy was referr'd to a further Meeting of most of the Adventurers to hear and decide the Matter. Mr. *Lyford's* Party chose Mr. *White* a Councillor at Law; the other chose the Rev. Mr. *Hooker*, Moderator; and many Friends on both Sides coming in, there was a great Assembly: In which Mr. *Winslow* made so surprizing a Discovery of *Lyford's* Carriage when Minister in *Ireland*, for which He had been forc'd to leave that Kingdom, and coming to *England* was unhappily lit on and sent to *New Plimouth*; as struck all his Friends mute, made 'em aham'd to defend Him; and the Moderators Declared, that as his Carriage with us gave us cause enough to do as we did; so this new Discovery renders Him unmeet to bare the Ministry more. (B) [41] Hence

[41] By this it seems as if the Rev. Mr. *White* and the *Dorchester* Gentlemen, had been impos'd upon with respect

	K. of <i>Great Britain.</i>	K. of <i>France.</i>	K. of <i>Spain.</i>
1625.	Charles I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

Hence therefore *Lysford* with some of his Friends, go after *Oldham* to *Natasco*, (*B*) where receiving the Invitation of the *Dorchester* Gentlemen, Mr. *Lysford* removes with Mr. *Conant* to *Cape Ann*: but Mr. *Oldham* chuses to stay at *Nantasket* and Trade for Himself. (*H*)

But upon this Decision, the Company of Adventurers to *Plimouth* brake in Pieces; two Thirds of them deserting us: yea some of *Lysford's* and *Oldham's* Friends set out a Ship fishing (*B*) under one Mr. *Hewes*, (*H*) and getting the start of ours, they take our Stage and other Provisions made for Fishing at *Cape Ann* the Year before to our great Charge, and refuse to restore it without Fighting: Upon which we let them keep it, and our *Governor* sends some Planters to help the Fishermen build another. (*B*) [42] Yet

respect to *Lysford* and *Oldham*, and had sent Invitations to them before this Discovery. And as by many Passages in Mr. *Hubbard*, it appears He had never seen Gov. *Bradford's* History; for want thereof he is sometimes in the Dark about the Affairs of *Plimouth*, and especially those which relate to *Lysford* and *Oldham*, as also to Mr. *Robinson*.

[42] Mr. *Hubbard* tells us, that Capt. *Standish*, who had been bred a Soldier in the *Netherlands*, arriving at *Cape Ann*, Demands the Stage in a peremptory Manner: And the others refusing, the Dispute grows hot, the Captain seems resolv'd to attack them and recover his Right by Force of Arms: but the Prudence of Mr. *Conant* & the Interposition of Mr. *Wm. Pierce* who lay just by, prevents it; the Ship's Crew promising to help build another, ends the Controversy.

K. of Great Britain. 1625. Charles I.	K. of France Lewis XIII.	K. of Spain Philip IV.
--	-----------------------------	---------------------------

Yet some of the Adventurers still cleaving to us, they by Mr. *Winslow* write on Dec. 18. 1624, as follows.—*We cannot forget you, nor our Friendship and Fellowship we have had some Years—our hearty Affections towards you (unknown by Face) have been no less than to our nearest Friends, yea to our own selves.—As there has been a Faction among us [at London] more than 2 Years; so now there is an utter Breach and Sequestration.—The Company's DEBTS are not less than 1400 l. and we hope you will do your best to free them.—We are still perswaded, you are the People that must make a Plantation in those remote Places when all others fail.—We have sent some Cattle, Cloaths, Hoes, Shoes Leather, &c; but in another Nature than formerly, having committed them to the Charge of Mr. *Allerton* and *Winslow*, to sell as our Factors, &c. The Goods are order'd to be sold at 70 per Cent Advance—-a thing tho't unreasonable and a great Oppression. The Cattle are the best Commodity. (B)*

They send also 2 *Ships* a Fishing upon their own Account: the one is the *Pinnace* which had been sunk & weigh'd as before; the other a large *Ship*, which makes a great Voyage of good dry Fish, that wou'd fetch 1800 l. at *Bilboa* or *St. Sebastian's*, whither her Owners had ordered Her: but there being a Rurnour of a War with *France*, the Master, timorous, sails to *Plimouth* & *Portsmouth*, whereby He looses the Opportunity to their great Detriment. The lesser *Ship* is fill'd with goodly Cor-fish tools on the Bank, with 800 Weight of Beaver, besides other Furr from our Plantation. They go joyfully

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1625.	Charles I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

joyfully together Homeward, the bigger Ship towing the lesser all the way till they are shot deep into the *English Channel*, almost within sight of *Plimouth*; when a *Turks Man of War* takes the lesser and carries Her off to *Sally*, where the Master and Men are made Slaves, and many of the Beaver Skins sold for four Pence a piece, (B)

In the bigger Ship, Capt. *Standish* goes out Agent, [43] both to the remaining Adventurers for more Goods, and to the *New England Council* to oblige the others to come to a Composition: but arriv'd there in a bad Time, the State being full of Trouble and the *Plague* very hot in *London*; there Die such Multitudes Weekly, that Trade is dead, little Money stirring, and no Business can be done. However, He engages several of the *Council* to Promise their Helpfulness to our Plantation: but our remaining Adventurers are so much weakened by their Loss of the Fish, and of the Ship the *Turks* had taken, they can do but little. (B)

Mean while God gives us Peace and Health with contented Minds; and so succeeds our Labours that we have Corn sufficient and some to spare, with other Provisions: nor had we ever any Supply [from *England*] but what we first bro't with us. After Harvest, we send a
Boat

[43] It seems most likely that Capt. *Standish* first went in the smaller Ship with the Furr, which at first was the only Ship bound for *England*; but after the Master of the greater Ship determin'd for *England* too, that the Captain got into Her, and so escaped the Slavery.

K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1625. Charles I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV.

Boat Load of Corn 40 or 50 Leagues to the Eastward up *Kennebeck River*; it being one of those 2 *Shallops* our Carpenter built the Year before, for we have no larger Vessel. We had laid a Deck over her Mid ship to keep the Corn dry: but the Men were forc'd to stand in all Weathers without any Shelter, and the Time of Year begins to grow tempestuous: but God preserves and prospers them; for they bring home 700 Weight of Beaver besides other Furr, having little or nothing but our Corn to Purchase them. This Voyage was made by Mr. *Winslow* and some old Standards; for Seamen we have none. (B)

Some time this Fall [44] Mr. *Lysford's* People at *Nantasket* remove to *Cape Ann*, a Place more convenient for the Fishery; and there stay about a Year. But Mr. *Conant* finding a more commodious Place for Plantation a little to Westward, on the other Side of a Creek call'd *Naumkeak*; secretly conceives in his Mind, that in after times, as is since fallen out it may prove a Receptacle for such in *England* as on the Account of Religion wou'd be willing to settle in these Parts of the World; & gives an Intimation of it to his Friends in *England*. (H)

Dec. 25. From Dec. 22. 1624. to this Day, there Die of the *Plague* in *London* and *Westminster*, 41,513. (Howes)

1626

[44] I gather this from Mr. *Hubbard*, who says that Mr. *Conant* and *Lysford* with their Families and those few who follow'd them, tarried at *Nantasket* a Year & some few Months, till the Door was open'd for their Remove to *Cape Ann*.

	K. of Great Britain.	K. of France.	K. of Spain.
1626.	Charles I.	Lewis XIII.	Philip IV

1626.

UPON a Year's Experience, the *Dorchester* Adventurers being disappointed of their Expectations, throw up their Business. But the Rev. Mr. *White*, a chief Founder under God, of the *Massachusetts-Colony*, being griev'd for good a Work shou'd fall to the Ground, writes to Mr. *Conant*, not to desert the Business; and Promises that if Mr. *Conant* with 3 others whom He knew to be honest and prudent Men, viz. *John Woodberry*, *John Balch*, and *Peter Palfreys*, wou'd stay at *Naumkeak*, He wou'd procure them a *Patent*, and send them Men, Provisions, and whatever they write for to trade with the Natives. (H)

This Spring a French Ship is cast away at *Sagadehock*: wherein are many *Biscay* Rugs and other Commodities, which fall into the Hands of the People at *Monhiggen* and other Fishermen at *Damarin's Cove*. (B)

About a Year after we had sent *Oldham* away; as He is sailing for *Virginia*, being in extream Danger; He makes a free and large Confession of the Wrongs He had done the Church and People at *Plimouth*; and as He had sought their Ruin, the LORD might now destroy Him; beseeching God to forgive Him. making Vows if He be spared, to carry other wife: and being spared He after carries fairly to us, owns the Hand of God to be with us, seems to have an honourable Respect for us, and we give Him Liberty to come and converse with us when he pleases (B)

Apr. 6. We hear of Capt. *Standish* arriving in a Fishing-Ship, send a Boat to fetch Him, and welcome

K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain
1626. Lewis XIII.	Charles I. †	Philip IV.

welcome He is : had taken up for us 150 *l.* the at 50 *per Cent* ; which his Expence deducted He laid out in suitable Goods, and has prepared the Way for our Composition with the Company. But the *News* He brings is *sad* in many Regards ;--not only of the Losses mention'd, whereby some of our Friends are disabled to help us, and others Dead of the Plague ; but also that our Dear Pastor Mr. ROBINSON is Dead, (B) about the 50th Year of his Age, (H) which strikes us with great Sorrow. His & our Enemies had been continually Plotting, how they might hinder his coming Hither ; but the Lord has appointed him a better Place. (B)

Mr. Roger White in a Letter from *Leyden* of Apr. 28, [i. e. Apr. 18 our Style] 1625, to the Governor and Mr. Brewster, has the following Words—*It has pleas'd the Lord to take out of this Vale of Tears, your and our Loving and Faithful Pastor, Mr. Robinson,--He fell Sick Saturday Morning, Feb. 22. [i. e. Feb. 12. our Style, 1624,5] Next Day Taught us, Twice--On the Week grew Weaker every Day, feeling little or no Pain--Sensible to the last--Departed this Life the first of March [i. e. Saturday, Feb. 19 our Style, 1624,5] Had a continual inward Ague--All his Friends came freely to Him-- And if Prayers, Tears or Means wou'd have sav'd his Life, He had not gone Hence--We still hold close together in Peace--wishing that you and we were again together, &c. (B)*

Our other Friends at *Leyden* also write us many Letters full of Lamentations for their

	K. of <i>France</i> .	K. of <i>Great Britain</i> .	K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1626.	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	‡ Philip IV.

heavy Loss: and tho' their Wills are good to come, yet see not how. (B) [45]

Our *Captain* also brings us Notice of the *Death* of our ancient Friend Mr. *Cushman*; who was our Right Hand with the Adventurers, and for diverse Years has manag'd all our Business with them, to our great Advantage. He had wrote to the *Governor* a few Months before of the sore Sickness of Mr. *James Sherley*; who was a chief Friend of the Plantation, and lay at the Point of Death, declaring his Love and Helpfulness in all Things, and bemoaning our Loss if God shou'd take Him away, as being the Stay and Life of the Business; as also of his own Purpose to come this Year and spend the rest of his Days with us. (B)

These

[45] Contrary to Mr. *Baylie's* Suggestion, Gov. *Bradford* and Gov. *Winslow* tell us, that Mr. ROBINSON & his People always liv'd in great Love and Harmony among themselves, as also with the *Dutch* with whom they sojourned. And when I was at *Leyden* in 1714, the most ancient People from their Parents told me, that the City had such a Value for them, as to let them have one of their Churches, in the Chancel whereof He lies Buried, which the *Englysh* still enjoy: and that as He was had in high Esteem both by the City and *University*, for his Learning, Piety, Moderation and excellent Accomplishments; the Magistrates, Ministers, Shollars, and most of the Gentry mourn'd his Death as a Publick Loss, and follow'd Him to the Grave. His Son ISAAC came over to *Plimouth Colony*, liv'd to above 90 Years of Age: a venerable Man, whom I have often seen, and have left Male Posterity in the County of *Barnstable*.

	K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain:
1626.	Lewis XIII	Charles I	† Philip IV.

These Things cou'd not but cast us into great Perplexity: yet being stript of all Humane Help and Hopes; when we are *now at the lowest*, the Lord so helps us, as we are not only upheld, but *begin to rise*, and our Proceedings both honoured and imitated by others. (B)

Having now no Business but *Trading and Planting*, we set our selves to follow *them*. The People finding *Corn* a Commodity, having Sold it at *six Shillings* a Bushel, they use great Diligence in *Planting*: and the *Trade* being retain'd for the general Good, the *Governor* and *other Managers* apply it to the best Advantage. For, wanting proper Goods, and understanding the Plantation at *Monbiggon*, belonging to some Merchants of *Plimouck* [in *England*] is to brake up, and divers *Goods* to be sold; the *Governor* with *Mr. Winslow*, take a Boat and with some Hands go thither; *Mr. David Thompson*, who lives at *Piscatoway*, going with us on the same Design, we agree to buy all their Goods and divide them equally. Our Moiety comes to 400 *l.* we also buy a Parcel of *Goats* which we distribute to our People for *Corn* to their great Content. We likewise buy the *French Goods* aforesaid, which makes our Part arise to above 500 *l.*: and which we mostly Pay with the *Beaver* and *Commodities* we got *last Winter*, and what we had gathered *this Summer*. (B)

After Harvest, with our Goods and *Corn*, we get such Store of Trade, as to discharge some other Engagements, viz. the Money took up by *Capt. Standish*, with the Remains of former

K. of <i>France</i> .	K. of <i>Great Britain</i> .	K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1626. Lewis XIII.	Charles I	‡ Philip IV.

Debts, to get some Cloathing for the People, and have some Commodities beforehand. (B)

This Year [and I suppose in *the Fall*] we send Mr. *Allerton* to *England*, to finish with the *Adventurers*, take up more Money, and buy us Goods. (B)

Sometime *this Fall*, Mr *Conant* with the People who came to *Cape Ann*, Remove a *third* time, viz. to *Naumkeak* aforesaid, on a pleasant and fruitful Neck of Land, embrac'd on each Side with an Arm of the Sea, since nam'd SALEM; answer Mr. *White* that they will stay on his *Ferms* (H) and Mr. *Lysford* removes with them. (B) [46]

Captain *Wollaston* having continued at *Mount Wallaston* some Time, and finding Things not answer his Expectation, He carries a great Part of the Servants to *Virginia*, writes back to Mr. *Rasfall* one of his chief Partners to carry another Part, and appoints Mr. *Fitcher* his *Lieutenant* till He or *Rasfall* returns. But *Rasfall* being gone, *Morton* excites the Rest to turn away *Fitcher* and set up for themselves; forcing *Fitcher* to seek his Bread among his Neighbours, till he can get a Pass to *England*. After this they fall to great Licentiousness and Prophaness. (B) [47]

Finding

[46] Mr. *Conant* lives about *Salem* to 1680, when He deceases. (H)

[47] It is by Guess I here insert this Article :--- Because Mr. *Hubbard* says, *The Capt. spent much Labour, Cost and Time in Planting at Mount Wallaston* (H) It seems most likely that He tried the *Crop* of *this Summer*; and the *Autumn* is the usual Time for the N. E. Fishing Ships to go to *Virginia*.

K. of France	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain
1626. Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	† Philip IV

Finding we run great Hazards in going such long Voyages in a little open *Boat*, especially in the Winter Season, we consider how to get a small *Pinnace*. And having no Ship-BUILDER, but an ingenious House Wright, who wrought with our Ship Carpenter, deceased; at our Request He tries his Skill, saws our *bigger Shallop* across the middle, lengthens her *five* or *six* Foot, strengthens Her with Timbers, builds Her up, decks and makes her a convenient Vessel. The *next Year* we fit Her with Sails and Anchors, and She does us Service *seven Years* (B)

In the *Beginning of Winter*, a *Ship* with many Passengers bound to *Virginia*, the Master Sick, loose themselves at Sea; have neither Beer, Wood, nor Water left: In fear of starving Steer towards the Coast to find some Land: run over the dangerous Shoals of *Cape Cod* in the Night, they know not how: come right before a small obscure *Harbour* about the *middle of Monamoyack Bay*; at high Water, touch the Bar; towards Night beat over it into the Harbour, and run on a Flat within close to the Beach; where they save their Lives and Goods. Not knowing where they are, as the *Savages* come towards them in Canoes, they stand on their Guard: but some of the *Indians* asking if they are the *Gov* of *Plimouth's Men*, and offering to bring them or their Letters, they are greatly revived: send a Letter with 2 Men to the *Governor*, intreating Him to send them Pitch, Oakum, Spikes, &c. to mend their Ship, with Corn to help them to *Virginia*. Those being abroad a Trading, who were fit to send, the *Governor* goes himself in a Boat with the Materials wrote for, and Com

K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1626. Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	‡ Philip IV.

modities proper to buy Corn of the *Natives*. And it being no Season of the Year to go with out the Cape, He sails to the Bottom of the Bay within, into a Creek call'd *Naumskaket*; whence 'tis not much above 2 Miles across to the Bay where they are: has *Indians* to carry the Things: is received with Joy: buys of the *Natives* as much Corn as they want: leaves them thankful: returns to the Boat, goes into other adjacent Harbours, buys and loads with Corn and comes Home. (B) [48]

1627.

NOT many Days after the *Governor* came Home, the People at *Monamoyack* send Him Word that their Ship being mended, a Great Storm drove her ashore and so shattered her as to make her wholly unfit for Sea; beg Leave and Means to transport themselves and Goods to us, and be with us till they find Passage to *Virginia*. We readily help to transport, and shelter them and their Goods in our Houses. The chief among them are Mr. *Fells* & *Silsby*, who have many Servants. Upon their coming to *Plimouth* and being somewhat settled, seeing the *Winter* before them, and like to be the latter End of the Year before they can get to *Virginia*; the Masters desire some Ground to employ their Servants, clear, plant, and help
bare

[48] Though Gov. *Bradford*, and from Him Mr. *Morton* place the whole Story under 1627.; yet Gov. *Bradford* says, This Part of it happen'd in the *Beginning of Winter* 1626.

K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1627. Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	† Philip IV.

bare their Charge: which being Granted, they raise a great deal of Corn. (B)

[About *mid March*] we receive Messengers from the Governor of the *Dutch Plantation*, with Letters written in *Dutch* and *French*, Dated from the *Manhatas* in the *Fort Amsterdam*, March 9. 1627. [i. e. *New Styl*, which is Feb 27. 1626, 7] Sign'd *Isaac de Rasier*, Secretary. [49] They had Traded in those Southern Parts divers Years before we came; but Began no Plantation There till 4 or 5 Years after our Coming. In their Letter, *They congratulate us and our prosperous and praise-worthy Undertakings and Government of our Colony, with the Presentation of their Good Will and Service to us, in all friendly Kindness and good Neighbourhood: Offer us any of their Goods that may be serviceable to us, declare they shall take themselves bound to accommodate & help us with them, for any Wares we are pleased to deal for.* (B)

Mar. 19 We send the *Dutch* our obliging Answer, express our thankful Sense of the Kindnesses we receiv'd in their Native Country, & our grateful Acceptance of their offered Friendship (B)

This Spring, at the usual Season of the Ships Coming, Mr. *Allerton* Returns: having taken up for us 200*l* at 30 per Cent, laid them out in suitable Goods and brings them to the great Content of the Plantation. With no small Trouble

[49] Mr. *Morton* saying that *de Rasier*, not long after, comes to *Plimouth*; thence Mr. *Hubbard* mistakes in Thinking He comes *this Year*: whereas 'tis plain from Gov. *Bradford*, that he comes not Hither till the Year succeeding.

K of France.	K of Great Britain,	K. of Spain.
1627. Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	† Philip IV.

Trouble & the Help of sundry faithful Friends who took much Pains, He made a Composition with the Adventurers on *October 26* last, which they Sign'd *November 15*; a Draught of which, He brings for our Acceptance: wherein we allow them 1800 *l* Paying 200 at the *Royal Exchange* every *Michaelmas*, the first Payment to be in 1628: in Consideration of which the Company sell us all their Shares, Stocks, Merchandizes, Lands and Chattels: which is well approv'd and agreed to by the whole Plantation; tho' they scarce know how to raise the Payment, discharge their other Engagements, and supply their yearly Wants.; seeing they are forc'd to take up Monies or Goods at such high Interests: yet they undertake it; and 7 or 8 of the chief become jointly Bound in behalf of the rest to make said Payments: wherein we run a great Venture, as our Condition is, having many other heavy Burthens upon us, and all Things in an uncertain State among us. (B)

Upon this, to make all Easy, we take every Head of a Family, with every young Man of Age and Prudence, both of the *first Comers* and those who have *since arriv'd*, into Partnership with us; agree the Trade shall be manag'd as before, to Pay the Debts; that every single Freeman shall have a single Share, and every Father of a Family also Leave to Purchase a Share for Himself, *one* for his Wife, *one* for every Child living with Him; and every one shall Pay his Part toward the Debts according to the Shares He holds; which gives Content to all. We accordingly Divide *one* Cow and *two* Goats

K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain:
1627. Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	† Philip IV.

Goats by Lot to every six Shares; and Swine, tho' more in Number, in the same Proportion: to every Share 20 Acres of tillable Land by Lot, besides the single Acres (B) with the Gardens and Homesteds (*mn*) they had before; the most abutting on the Water Side, five in Breadth and four in Depth: but no Meadows laid out till many Years after, because being strait of Meadow, it might hinder Additions to us; tho' at every Season, all are order'd where to mow, in Proportion to their Number of Cattle. (B)

Morton and Company at M Wallaston, having got some Goods and acquired much by trading with the Natives; they spend the same in Rioting and Drunkenness; drinking 10 l. worth of Wine and Spirits in a Morning: set up a May-Pole, get the Indian Women to drink and dance about it, with worse Practices; as in the Feasts of Flora, or like the mad *Bachanalsians*; and change the Name to Merry Mount, as if this Jollity were to last for ever. (B) [50]

[May and June] [51] For greater Convenience of Trade, to discharge our Engagements & maintain our selves, we build a small Pinnacle at
 . . . Monamet

[50] By Guess I also place this Here;---because of the Goods they had gotten of the *European Ships*, and the *May-Pole* now erected: which I suppose is the only one ever set up in *New England*.

[51] I Place this in *May* and *June*; because in the Article of *July* following, this Pinnacle is said to be lately Built at *MONAMET*:

K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1627. Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	† Philip IV.

Monamet, a Place on the Sea, 20 Miles to the South: to which by another Creek on this Side, we transport our Goods by Water within four or five Miles, and then carry them over Land to the Vessel; thereby avoid our compassing *Cape Cod* with those dangerous Shoals, and make our Voyage to the Southward, with far less Time & Hazzard. For the Safety of our Vessel and Goods, we *There* also build a *House*, and keep some Servants; who Plant Corn, rear Swine, and are always ready to go out with the *Bark*: which takes good Effect, and turns to Advantage. (B)

June 27. (*hs cb. rs*) Wednesday (*hs*) the Duke of Buckingham (*hs. cb. rs*) with 100 Ships (*hs. rs*) sails from *Portsmouth* [in England] for the *Ile of Rhee* on the Coast of France, and Begins the WAR with that Kingdom (*cb. rs*)

July. But besides the Discharge of our heavy Engagements, our great Concern is to help over our Friends at LEYDEN; who so much desire to come to us, as we desire their Company. The Governor therefore, with Mr. Edward Winslow, Thomas Prince, Nyles Standish, Wm. Brewster, John Alden, John Howland, and Isaac Allerton, now run a great Venture; and hire the Trade of the Colony for 6 Years, to begin the last of next September: and for this with the *Shallop* call'd the *Bals Boat*, and *Pinnace* lately built at *Monamet*, with the Stock in the Store-House; we this Month, undertake to Pay the 1800 l. with all other Debts of the Plantation amounting

K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1627. Lewis XIII.	† Charles. I.	† Philip IV.

ing to 600 more ; bring over for them 50 l. a Year in Hoes and Shoes, sell them for Corn at 6 s. a Bushel ; and at the End of the Term return the Trade to the Colony. (B)

The latter End of the Summer, the Virginia People at *Plimouth*, sell us their Corn, go Thither in a couple of Barks ; and afterwards, several of them express their Thankfulness to us. (B) And [now it seems] Mr *Lyford* sails with some of his People also to *Virginia*, (H) and there shortly Dies. (B)

With the Return of the Ships we send Mr *Allerton* again to *England*. (1) To conclude our Bargain with the Company and deliver our nine Bonds for the Paying the 200 l. at every *Michaelmas* for 9 Years. (2) To carry our Beaver and pay some of our late Engagements ; for our excessive Interest still keeps us low. (3) To get a Patent for a fit Trading Place on *Kennebeck River* ; especially since the Planters at *Pascatoway* and other Places Eastward of 'em, as also the Fishing Ships envy our Trading There, and threaten to get a Patent to exclude us ; tho' we first discover'd and began the same, and bro't it to so good an Issue. (4) To deal with some of our special Friends in *London* to join with the said eight Undertakers, both for the Discharge of the Colony's Debts, and the helping our Friends from *Lejden*. (B)

Nov. 6. Mr. *Allerton* concludes our Bargain with the Company at *London* delivers our Bonds and receives their Deed. (B)

Dec 27. Mr. *Sherley* from *London* writes to the *Plimouth* People, as follows.—The sole Cause why the greater Part of the Adventurers ma
lign

K. of France	K. of Great Britain.	{K. of Spain.
1627. Lewis XIII.	† Charles I.	† Philip IV.

lign me was, that I would not side with them against you and the coming over of the LEYDEN PEOPLE---and assuredly unless the LORD be merciful to us and the whole Land in General, our Condition is far worse than yours: wherefore if the LORD shou'd send Persecution Here, which is much to be feared; and should put into our Minds to fly for Refuge; I know no Place safer than to come to you &c. (B)

' About this Year, some Friends being together in Lincolnshire, fall into Discourse about New England & the Planting of the Gospel there: and after some Deliberation, we [says Deputy Governor Dudley] impart our Reasons by Letters and Messages to some in London and the West Country: where it is at length so ripened as to Procure a Patent [for the MASSACHUSETTS COLONY] (dd)

1628.

MR. Allerton having settl'd all Things in a hopeful way, Returns in the *first of the Spring* with our Supply for Trade. The Fishermen with whom He comes, us'd to *set forth* in Winter, and be Here betimes. He has Paid the first 200*l.* of our 1800 to the Adventurers; as also all our Debts to others, except Mr *Sberley, Beachamp* and *Andreves*, to whom we now owe but 400 and odd Pounds: informs that our *said three Friends* and some others will join us in our *six Years Bargain*, and will send to *Leyden* for a Number to come *next Year*: brings

dd. Deputy Governor Dudley's aforesaid Letter to, the Countess of Lincoln.

	K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1628.	Lewis XIII.	† Charles I.	† Philip IV.

brings a competent Supply of Goods; with a PATENT for KENNEBECK, but so strait and ill bounded, as we are forc'd to get renew'd and enlarged *next Year*, as also THAT we have at HOME to our great Charge. He likewise brings us one Mr. *Rodgers*, a young Man, for Minister. (B)

Mar. 19. The Council for New England sell to Sir *Henry Roswell*, Sir *John Young*, Knights, *Thomas Souticoat*, *John Humphry*, *John Endicott* and *Simon Whetcomb*, Gent. (Bc) about *Dorchester* in England (H) their Heirs and Associates that Part of New England between *Merrimack River* and *Charles River* in the Bottom of the *Massachusetts Bay*; and 3 Mile to the South of every Part of *Charles River* and of the Southermost Part of said Bay; & 3 Miles to the North of every Part of said *Merrimack River*; and in Length within the Breadth aforesaid from the *Atlantick Ocean* to the *South Sea*, &c. (Bc)

After some time, Mr. *White* brings the *Dorchester* Grantees into Acquaintance with several other Religious Persons in and about *London*; who are first Associated to them, then buy their Right in the Patent [52] and consult about settling some *Plantation* in the *Massachusetts Bay* on the Account of RELIGION; where
 . Nonconformists

Bc. Manuscript Book of Charters in the Hands of the Hon. *Thomas Hutchinson*, Esq;

[52] By the *Massachusetts Colony Charter and Records*, it seems the three former wholly sold their Rights; the three latter retaining theirs in equal Partnership with the said Associates.

	K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1628.	Lewis XIII.	† Charles I.	† Philip IV.

Nonconformists may Transport themselves & enjoy the Liberty of their own Perswasion in Matters of *Worship* and *Church Discipline*. Soon after, the Company chuse Mr. (H) MATTHEW (Mr) CRADOCK, Governor, Mr. (H) THOMAS (Mr) GOFF, Dep Governor, with other *Assistants* (H)

The *New Plimouth* People having obtain'd their *Patent* for *Kennebeck*, now erect a *House* up the *River*, in a convenient Place for Trade: and furnish it both Winter and Summer, with Corn and other Commodities, such as the *Fishermen* had traded with; as Coats, Shirts, Rugs, Blankets, Bisket, Pease, Prunes, &c: what we cou'd not get from *England*, we buy of the *Fishing Ships*; and so carry on the *Business* as well as we can. (B)

This Year [and I conclude *this Spring*] the *Dutch* send to us again from their *Plantation*, both kind Letters and diverse Commodities; as Sugar, Linnen, Stuffs, &c: come with their *Bark* to our *House* at *Manomet*: their Secretary *Rasier* comes with Trumpeters, &c; but not being able to travel to us by Land, desires us to send a Boat within side [the *Cape*] to fetch Him: so we send a Boat to *Manonscuffer*, and bring him with the chief of his Company to *Plimouth*. After a few Days Entertainment, He returns to his *Bark*: some of us go with Him, and buy sundry Goods. After which Beginning, they often send to the same Place; and we trade together divers Years, sell much *Tobacco* for Linnens, Stuffs, &c; which proves a great Benefit to us, till the *Virginians* find out their *Colony* (B)

But

	K. of <i>France</i> .	K. of <i>Great Britain</i> .	K. of <i>Spain</i> .
1628.	Lewis XIII.	† Charles I.	† Philip IV.

But that which in Time turns most to our Advantage is, their now acquainting and entering us in the Trade of WAMPAM: telling us how vendible it is at their *Fort Orania*, and perswading we shall find it so at *Kennebeck*. Upon this we buy about 50*l.* worth. At first it sticks, and 'tis 2 *Years* before we can put it off; till the *Inland Indians* come to know it, and then we can scarce procure enough for many *Years* together. By which and other Provisions we quite cut off the Trade both from the Fishermen and straggling Planters. And strange it is to see the *great Alteration* it in a *few Years* makes among the Savages: For the *Massachusetts* and others in these Parts had scarce any; it being only made and kept among the *Pequots & Narragansetts*, who grew Rich and Potent by it; whereas the Rest who use it not are poor and beggarly. (B)

Hitherto the *Natives* of these Parts have no other Arms but Bows and Arrows, nor many *Years* after. But the *Indians* in the *Eastern Parts*, having Commerce with the *French*, first have Guns of them, and at length they make it a common Trade. In Time our *English Fishermen* follow their Example: but upon Complaint against them, the KING by a strict Proclamation forbid the same, and commanded that no sort of Arms or Munition be traded with them. (B) [53]

June

[53] By KING seems to be meant K. *James*: And the *Massachusetts Colony Records* of July 28. 1629, as also Mr. *Hubbard* say, this Proclamation was issued in 1622

	K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1628.	Lewis XIII.	† Charles I.	† Philip IV.

June 20. Capt JOHN ENDICOT, with his *Wife* and *Company*, *This Day* sails in the Ship *Abigail*, *Henry Gauden*, Master, from *Weymouth* in *England*, for *Nabumkeak* in *New England*, (*Mer*) [54] being sent by the *Massachusetts Patentees* at *London*, to carry on the *Plantation* There, make *Way* for the *settling a Colony*, and be their *Agent* to order all *Affairs*, till the *Patentees* themselves come over. (*H*)

Sept. 13 Mr. *Endicot* writes of his safe *Arrival* at *Naumkeak*, to Mr. *Matthew Cradock* one of the *Massachusetts Company* in *London*, which Mr. *CRADOCK* receives on *Feb. 13* following. (*cl*) With Mr. *Endicot* come Mr *Gott*, *Brackenbury*, *Davenport*, *Capt. Trask* and others : who go on comfortably in *Preparing* for the *New Colony* (*H*)

Among those who arrive at *Naumkeak*, are *Ralph Sprague*, with his Brethren *Richard* and *William* ; who with 3 or 4 more, by Governor *Endicot's* Consent, undertake a *Journey*, and travel the *Woods* above 12 *Miles Westward*,
light

[54] The *Bills of Lading* being Sign'd on *June 20* (*Mer*) I Place their *Sailing Here*. But from the odd *Way* of reckoning the 4th of *March next*, to be in 1628 ; Dep. Governor *Dudley*, Mr. *Hubbard* and others wrongly place Mr *Endicot's* Voyage, after the Grant of the *Royal Charter*, whereas He came above 8 Months before. And Dep Governor *Dudley* says, *We sent Him and some with Him, to Begin a Plantation ; and to strengthen such as He should find There, which we send Thither from Dorchester and some Places adjoining.*

cl. Mr. *Cradock's* Original Letter among the *Mer* compar'd with the Copies of Letters in the first *Book of Records* of the *County of Suffolk*.

1628. K. of France. Lewis XIII † K. of Great Britain. Charles I † K. of Spain. Philip IV.

light on a Neck of Land call'd *Mishawum*, between *Mistick* & *Charles Rivers*, full of *Indians*, named *Aberginians*.— Their old *Sachem* being Dead, his Eldest Son call'd by the *English* JOHN SAGAMORE is Chief; a Man of a gentle & good Disposition; by whose free Consent they settle Here; where they find but *one English House*, thatch'd and pallizado'd, possess'd by *Thomas Walsford* a Smith. (1cr)

That worthy Gentleman Mr. *Endicot*, coming over for the Government of the *Massachusetts* [55] visits the People at *Merry Mount* causes the *May Pole* to be cut down, rebukes them for their Profaneness, admonishes them to look there be better Walking, and the Name is changed to *Mount Dagon*. (B)

But *Morton* and Company, to maintain their Riot, hearing what Gain the *French* and *Fishermen* made by selling Guns, with Powder and Shot to the *Natives*; He begins the same Trade in these Parts, teaches how to use them, employs the *Indians* in Hunting and Fowling for Him; wherein they become more active than any *English*, by their swiftness of Foot, nimbleness of Body, quicksightedness, continual Exercise. and knowing the Haunts of all sorts of Game. And finding the Execution Guns will do and the

1cr. *Town of Charlestown Records*; wrote by Mr. *Increase Nowell*, afterward *Town Clerk* of *Charlestown* and *Secretary* of the *Massachusetts Colony*.

[55] *Governor Bradford* and Mr. *Morton* seem to mistake in saying, He came with a Patent under the Broad Seal for the Government of the *Massachusetts*.

	K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1628.	Lewis XIII.	† Charles I.	† Philip IV.

the Benefit thereby, become mad after them and give any Price for 'em. *Morton* sells them all He can spare, and sends to *England* for many more. The neighbouring *English* who live scattered in diverse Places and have no Strength in any, meeting the *Indians* in the Woods thus arm'd, are in great Terror: and those in remoter Places see the Mischief will quickly spread if not forthwith prevented. Besides, they see they shou'd not keep their *Servants*: for *Morton* receives any, how vile soever; and they with the discontented will flock to Him, if this Nest continues: and the other *English* will be in more Fear of this debauched and wicked Crew than of the *Savages* themselves. The chief of the straggling Plantations therefore, from *Pascatoway*, *Naumkeak*, *Winisimet*, *Wesaguscuffet*, *Natasto* and other Places, meet, and agree to solicit those of *Plimouth*, who are of greater Strength than all, to join and stop this growing Mischief, by suppressing *Morton* and Company before they grow to a further Head. Those of *Plimouth* receiving their Messengers and Letters, are willing to afford our Help. However, first send a Messenger with Letters to advise Him in a friendly Way to forbear those Courses. But he scorns their Advice, asks *Who has to do with Him*; declares He will trade Pieces with the *Indians* in Despight of all, &c. We send a second time, to be better advis'd; for the Country can not bare the Injury; it is against their common Safety, and the King's Proclamation. He says, *The King's Proclamation is no Law, has no Penalty but his Displeasure, that the King is Dead and his Displeasure*

with

K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1628. Lewis XIII.	† Charles I.	† Philip IV.

with him; and threatens, if any come to molest Him, let them look to themselves, He'll prepare for 'em. Upon this, they see no Way but Force: and therefore obtain of the *Plimouth Governor* to send Capt. *Standish* with some Aid to take Him. The *Captain* coming, *Morton* arms his Consorts, heats them with Liquor, bars his Doors, sets his Powder and Bullets on the Table ready. The *Captain* summons Him to yeild: but has only Scoffs, &c. At length *Morton* fearing we shou'd do some Violence to the House, He and some of his Crew come out to shoot the *Captain*: At which the *Captain* steps up to Him, puts by his Piece, takes Him, enters the House, disperses the worst of the Company, leaves the more modest There, brings *Morton* to *Plimouth*: where he is kept till a *Ship* going from the *Iste of Shoals* to *England*, He is sent in Her to the *New England Council*, with a Messenger and Letters to inform against Him, &c: yet they do nothing to Him, not so much as rebuke Him, and he returns next Year. (B)

This Year [and I suppose this Fall] we send Mr. *Allerton* our Agent again to *London*; to get our *Kenebeck Patent* enlarg'd and rectified, as also This at *Home* enlarg'd, and help our Friends from *Leyden*. (B)

This Year, Dies Mr. *Richard Warren*; a useful Instrument, and bare a deep Share in the Difficulties attending the first Settlement of *New Plimouth*. (mn)

This Year, the *Massachusetts Patentees* at *London* send several *Servants* to *Naumkeak*: but for want of wholesome Diet and convenient Lodgings, many Die of *Scurvys* and other

	K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1628.	Lewis XIII.	† Charles I. †	Philip IV.

Distempers. (H) Upon which Mr. *Endicot*, hearing we at *Plimouth* have a very skilful Doctor, viz Mr. *Fuller* (B) Deacon of Mr. *Robinson's* Church, skill'd in the Diseases of the Country which the People at *Naumkeak* are fill'd with, (H) sends to our Governor for Him, who forthwith sends Him to their Assistance. (B) [56]

1629.

Feb. 16. MR. *Graddock*, at *London*, in his Letter to Capt. *Endicot* at *Naumkeak* says, 'We are thro'ly inform'd of the safe Arrival of your self, your Wife and the rest of your good Company in our Plantation, by your Letters of Sept. 13, which came to hand the 13th Instant-- Our Company are much enlarged since your Departure-- There's 1 Ship bought for the Company, of 100 Tuns, and two more hired of 200; 1 of 19, the other of 20 Ordnance: in which Ships are like to be sent between 2 and 300 Persons to reside There, and about a 100 Head of Cattle-- I wrote you by Mr. *Allerton* of *New Plimouth* in *November*-- It is resolv'd to send 2 Ministers at least with the Ships now to be sent-- Those we send shall be by Ap probation of Mr. *White* of *Dorchester* and Mr *Davenport*

[56] Gov. *Bradford*, and Mr. *Morton* from Him, seem to mistake in blending the several Sicknesses at *Naumkeak* of 1628 and 29 together; and writing as if Dr. *Fuller* went first Thither to help in the Sickness introduc'd by the Ships in 29: whereas by Gov. *Endicot's* Letter of *May* 11, 1629, it appears that Dr. *Fuller* had been then to help them; which was above a Month before the Ships Arrival There in 29.

K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1629. Lewis XIII.	† Charles I.	† Philip IV.

‘ *Davenport*--I account our Ships will be ready
 ‘ to sail Hence by the 20th of *next Month.* (c)

The *Massachusetts Company*, for promoting
 their great Design, first consider where to find
 2 or 3 able *Ministers* to send : not doubting
 but if they meet with such, they shall have a
 considerable Number of *Religious People* to go
 with them ; especially if there be grounded
 Hopes of an *Orderly Government*, to Protect the
 People and promote the Cause of RELIGION
 among them, as well as their civil Rights and
 Liberties. For which they with one Consent
 agree to Petition the *King* to Confirm their *aforsaid*
Grant to themselves and Associates by a
 ROYAL CHARTER, (H) Mr. *White* an honest
 Councillor at Law, and Mr. *Richard Belling-*
ham furthering the same. (j)

Mar. 2. Monday, at a Meeting of the *Massachusetts*
Company in *London*, Present the Governor, *Dep.*
Mr. Wright, Vassal, Hurwood, Coulson, Adams,
Nowell, Whetcomb, Perry & Huson ; [57] when Mr
Coney propounding in behalf of the *Boston Men*
 that 10 of them may subscribe 10 *l.* a Man in the
 joint Stock, and with their Ships to adventure
 250 *l.* more on their own Account, and provid-
 able Men to send for managing the Business
 it is condescended to (*Mer*)

Mar. 4.

[57] This is the first Account of *Names* set down at their
 Meetings, in the *Mer.* By *Governor* is doubtless meant
 Mr. *Cradock* ; and by *Dep. Governor*, Mr. *Goff* : who
 seem to be chose to those Offices by Virtue of their *Pa-*
tent from the *New England Council.*

K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spau.
1629 Lewis XIII.	† Charles I.	† Philip IV.

Mar. 4 At the Petition of the *Massachusetts Company*, K. CHARLES by CHARTER confirms their *Patent* of the MASSACHUSETTS COLONY to them, i. e. to the aforesaid Sir Henry Roswell, Sir John Young, Thomas Southcot, *John Humphrey, John Endicot, Simon Whetcomb*, and their Associates, viz. Sir *Richard Saltonstak*, Knight *Isaac Johnson, Samuel Aldersey, John Ven*, MATTHEW CRADOCK, George Harwood, *Increase Nowell, Richard Perry, Richard Bellingham, Nathaniel Wright, Samuel Vassal, Theophilus Eaton, THOMAS GOFF, Thomas Adams, John Brown, Samuel Brown, Thomas Hutchins. Wm Vassal, Wm. Pynchon* and *George Foxcroft*, their Heirs and Assigns for ever; that they and all who shall be made free of their Company, be for ever a Body Corporate and Politic, by the Name of the *Governor and Company of the MASSACHUSETTS BAY in NEW ENGLAND*, & have perpetual Succession: that there shall be for ever a *Governor, Deputy Governor*, and 18 *Assistants* chosen out of the Freemen of said Company: that MATTHEW CRADOCK be the first and present *Governor*; THOMAS GOFF 1st *Dep. Governor*; and the 18 Printed in *Italica*, be the first *Assistants*: that on the last *Wednesday in Easter Term* yearly, the *Governor, Dep. Governor*, and all other *Officers*, shall be in the General Court held that Day, newly chosen by the greater Part of the Company: that they may have 4 *General Courts* a Year, viz. the last *Wednesday in Hillary, Easter, Trinity* and *Michaelmas Terms* for ever; which may admit Freemen, remove and chuse Officers, order Lands, and make Laws not repugnant to the Laws of *England*:

K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1629. Lewis XIII.	† Charles I.	† Philip IV.

England: that the Governor and Company and their Successors and Assigns may carry People who are willing out of any of the King's Dominions Thither, transport Goods, have all the Privileges of natural Subjects in all the King's Dominions: that their chief Commanders, Governors, other Officers, and others under them, may by Force of Arms encounter all who shall attempt any Detriment or Annoyance to them, and take their Persons, Ships, Armour, Goods, &c: But that Fishing shall be Free, &c.
(bc) [58]

Mar. 9 At a Meeting of the *Massachusetts Company* in *London*, *John Washborn* entertained Secretary for one whole Year; and directed to call on all such as have Charge of Provision for the Ships now bound to *New England*, that they may be dispatch'd by the 25th of *this Month* at furthest
(Mer)

Mar. 10 At a Meeting of the *Massachusetts Company* in *London*; *Mr. Thomas Graves* of *Gravesend*, *Gent*, agrees to go to *New England*, and serve the Company, as a Person skilful in Mines of Iron, Lead, Copper, mineral Salt and Allome, Fortification of all Sorts, Surveying, &c. (Mer)

Mar. 16.

[58] The *Chronologies* at the End of *Mr. Danforth's Almanack* Printed at *Cambridge, New England*, 1649; of *Mr. Jeffrey's* at *London*, 1651; and of *Mr. Foster's* at *Boston, New England*, 1676; all greatly mistaken, in representing this Charter to be granted by *Parliament*.

K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	-K. of Spain.
1629. Lewis XIII.	† Charles I.	† Philip IV.

Mar. 16. Estimate of Charges for 100 *Passengers* and their Provisions at 15 *l* a Man 1500*l*.
 Freight of the Ship *Talbot* 5 Months at 80*l*. 400
 Her Victuals & Wages for 32 Men at 70*l*. 350
Lyon's Whelp set to Sea 500
 20 Cows and Bulls at 4 *l*. 80 *l*. }
 10 Mares and Horses at 6 *l*. 60 } 610
 Charges of them 470 }
(Mer) 3360 *l*.

Mar. 23. Governor CRADOCK sworn in Chancery (H) Dep. Governor GOFF and eleven *Assistants* sworn, as also Mr. George Harwood sworn *Treasurer*. [59] At a Meeting of the *Massachusetts Company* this Day at London, Mr. Nowell giving Intimation by Letters from Mr. *Johnson*, that Mr. HIGGINSON of *Leicester*, an able (Mer) and eminent (H) Minister (Mer) Silenc'd for Non-conformity, wou'd be likely (H) to go to our Plantation: who being approv'd for a Rev. Grave Minister, fit for our Occasion; it is agreed to intreat Mr. *Humfrey* to ride presently to *Leicester*: and if Mr. *Higginson* can conveniently go this present Voyage, to deal with Him, first if his Remove may be without Scandal to that People, and approv'd by some of the best affected among them, with the Approbation

[59] Mr. *Hubbard* mistakes (1) in thinking Mr. *Cradock* now chosen Governor, (2) in omitting Mr. *Nowell* among the 11 *Assistants* sworn, and (3) in writing that Mr. *Harwood* is sworn *Treasurer* on April 6.

K. of France	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain
1629. Lewis XIII.	† Charles I.	† Philip IV

probation of [the R^ev. and Famous] Mr *Hilder sham* of *Abley, de la Zouch.* (*Mcr*) [60]

Mr. *Higginson* being address'd both by Mr. *Humfrey* and *White*, He looks upon it as a Call from God: and in a few Weeks, is with his Family, ready to take his Flight into this Savage Desert. (*H*)

Apr. 8. At another Meeting of the *Massachusetts Company* in *London*; Mr. FRANCIS || HIGGINSON, Mr. SAMUEL SKELTON, (*Mcr*) another Nonconformist Minister of *Lincolnshire*, (*H*) and Mr. FRANCIS BRIGHT entertain'd by said Company as *Ministers* for the Plantation, to labour both among the *English* and *Indians*: Mr. *Higginson* having 8 *Children*, is to have 10*l.* a Year more than the others: Mr. RALPH SMITH a *Minister*, is also to be accommodated in his Passage thither. (*Mcr*)

Apr. 16. Sixty *Women* and *Mails*, 26 *Children*, and 300 *Men* with *Victuals*, *Arms*, *Apparel*, *Tools*, 140 *Head* of *Cattle*, &c, in the Lord Treasurer's Warrant [to go to *New England*] (*Mcr*) [61]

Apr

[60] Mr *John Davenport* first time mention'd as Present at this Meeting: He is also at the Meetings of *March 30* *April 8*, *Aug. 28 & 29*, *Oct. 15, 19* and *20*, *Nov. 25*, and *Dec. 15* following: In that of *Oct. 20*, He is stiled *Clerk*, and of *Dec. 15*, *Minister.* (*Mcr*) By which I conclude He is the same who afterwards comes over and becomes the famous Minister both of *New Haven* and of *Boston* in *NEW ENGLAND*.

|| Mr. *Hubbard* happens by mistake to call him *John*.

[61] Dep. Governor *Dudley* therefore seems too short in saying about 300 *People*, with some *Cows*, *Goats* and *Horses.* (*dd*)

K. of France	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain
1629. Lewis XIII.	† Charles I.	† Philip IV.

Apr. 17. The said *Company's* Committee Date their Letter at *Gravesend* to Mr. *Endicot* ; wherein they say,——‘For that *the Propagating of the Gospel* is the thing we profess above all, in settling this Plantation, we have been careful to make plentiful Provision of *Godly Ministers* viz. Mr. SKELTON, in the *George Bonaventure*. Mr. HIGGINSON, in the *Talbot* ; and in the *Lyon's Whelp*, Mr. BRIGHT, trained up under Mr. *Davenport* : And as the Ministers have declar'd themselves to us to be of *one Judgment*, and to be *fully agreed* in the manner how to exercise their Ministry ; we have good Hopes of their Love and unanimous Agreement, &c (*scr*) [62]

Apr. 21. The *George* now rides at the *Hope* ; the *Talbot* and *Lyon's Whelp* at *Blackwall* (*scr*)

Apr. 30. [63] At a *General Court* of the *Massachusetts Company* in *London*. There are 3 *Ships* now to go to *NEW ENGLAND*.—And the *Company* order that 13 in their Plantation shall have the sole Ordering of the Affairs and Government There, by the Name of the *Governor and Council*

scr. Suffolk County Records.

[62] By this it appears, Mr. BRIGHT was a *Puritan* ; and Mr. *Hubbard* seems mistaken in supposing Him a *Conformist*, unless He means in the same Sense as were many *Puritans* in those Days ; who by particular Favour omitted the more offensive Ceremonies and Parts in the Common Prayer ; while for the Unity and Peace of the Church, and in Hopes of a farther Reformation, they used the other.

[63] Mr. *Hubbard* mistakes *April 10* for *April 30*.

K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain:
1629. Lewis XIII.	† Charles I.	† Philip IV.

cil of LONDON'S PLANTATION in the MASSACHUSETTS BAY in NEW ENGLAND: Elect Mr. ENDICOT Governor, and Mr. Higginson, Skelton, Bright, John and Samuel Brown, Thomas Graves and Samuel Sharp to be of the Council: the said Governor and Council may chuse 3 others; the Planters chuse 2 more: of which 12 Councillors, the Governor and major Part may chuse a Deputy Governor and Secretary: that they all continue a Year, or till this Court appoint others: that the Governor or in his Absence the Deputy may call Courts at Discretion; and therein, the greater Number whereof of the Governor or Deputy to be always one, have Power to make Laws not repugnant to the Laws of England: Order Copies of this Act be sent by the first Conveyance (*Mcr*) and a Commission is accordingly sent to Mr. Endicot, &c. (*H*)

May 4. The *George Bonaventure* sails from the *Ile of Whight*: May 11, sail from Thence the *Lyon's Whelp* and *Talbot* (*scr*) Being all 3 full of Godly Passengers (*cm*) with the 4 Ministers, for the *Massachusetts*: (*Mcr. H*) the Planters in the *Lyon's Whelp* go from *Somerset* and *Dorset* (*cfr*) and within a Month (*cm*) are 3 more Ships to follow. (*Mcr*)

May 10. Lord's Day; PEACE between GREAT BRITAIN and FRANCE Proclaim'd at London (*bs*) [64]

Dr

cm. Dr. Cotton Mather's Life of Mr. Higginson.

[64] Pointer mistakes in saying March 20: and Salmon in saying May 20.

K of France.	K of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1629. Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	‡ Philip IV.

Dr. Fuller of *Plimouth* being well vers'd in the Discipline of Mr. *Robinson's* Church, and acquainting Mr. *Endicot* therewith ; on

May 11. Governor *Endicot* writes a most grateful and Christian Letter to Gov. *Bradford* ; wherein He says. — *I acknowledge my self much bound to you for your kind Love and Care in sending Mr. Fuller among us : and rejoice much that I am by Him satisfied touching your Judgments of the outward Form of GOD'S WORSHIP. It is as far as I can yet gather no other th in is warranted by the Evidence of Truth : and the same which I have professed and maintained ever since the LORD in mercy reveal'd Himself unto me : being far from the common Report that hath been spread of you touching that Particular : but GOD'S Children must not look for less here below, &c (B)[65]* And as this is the Beginning of their Acquaintance and closing in the Truth and Ways of GOD, (B) 'tis the Foundation of the future Christian Love & Correspondence which are ever after maintain'd between the 2 Governors and their respective Colonies. (H)

May 13. At a General Court of the *Massachusetts Company* in London, Mr. CRADOCK (Mer) a prudent and wealthy Citizen (H) chosen Governor ; Mr. GOFF, Deputy ; Mr. HARWOOD, Treasurer ; Mr. WM BURGESS, Secretary, for the Year ensuing : and the same Assistants ; only Mr. *Endicot* and Mr. *John Brown* being out of the Land,

[65] Mr. *Hubbard* mistakes in thinking this Letter wrote to obtain the Doctor's Help ; when it plainly appears a Letter of Thanks for his Help received.

K. of France. K. of Great Britain. K. of Spain.
1629. Lewis XIII. || Charles I. † Philip IV.

Land, Mr. *John Pocock* and Mr. *Chr. Coulson* are chose in their Room. (*Mr*) [66]

May 21. At a Court of *Assistants* of the *Massachusetts Company* in *London*: For the present Accommodation of the People lately gone to the *London Plantation* in *NEW ENGLAND*; ordered that the Governor, Dep. and Council There, allot *Half an Acre* within the Plat of the Town and 200 *Acres* more to every 50 l. Adventurers in the common Stock, and so in Proportion: that for every Servant or others they carry, the Master shall have 50 *Acres* more to Himself: and those who are not Adventurers in the common Stock, shall have 50 *Acres* for themselves or more, as the Governor and Council There think necessary. (*Mr*) [67]

May 25 Mr. *Sberley* writes from *London* to Governor *Bradford*—‘Here are now many of your and our Friends from *Leyden* coming over--A good Part of that End obtain’d, which was aimed at (by us) and has been so strongly oppos’d by some of our former Adventurers-- With them we have also sent some Servants in the *Talbot* that went Hence lately: but these come in the *May Flower*. (*B*)

June 3. The Committee of the *Massachusetts Company* at *London*, write from *Gravesend*, to Gov. *Endicot* and say—‘We now send 3 *Ships*; the *May Flower*,

[66] Mr. *Hubbard* styles This the second Court of Election; when by the *Royal Charter*, it is the first: tho’ by Virtue of the former Patent from the *New England Council*, it seems the Company had chosen a Gov. &c the Year before.

[67] Mr. *Hubbard* mistakes in placing this on *May 13*.

	K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1629.	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	‡ Philip IV.

' *May-Flower, Four Sisters*, and *Pilgrim* - The
' Charge of their Freight, Men and Victuals
' stand us in 2400 l, &c. (*scr*) and they sail from
' *England* before Mr. *Allerton* can get ready to
' come away (*B*)

June 24 Mr. *Higginson* (*cm*) & [either the same Day, or] some time this Month (*mn*) the other Ministers with the People in the 3 first *Ships*, arrive at *Naumkeak*, which they now name *SALEM*, from that in *Psal. lxxvi. 2.* (*H*)

Mr. *Graves*, with some of the Company's Servants under his Care, and some others, remove to *Misparuum*; to which with Gov. *Endicor's* Consent, they give the Name of *CHARLESTOWN*. Mr. *Graves* lays out the Town in two *Acre Lots* to each Inhabitant; and [after] builds the *Great House* for such of the Company as are shortly to come over; which becomes the House of *Publick Worship.* (*scr*) [68]

Of the 4 Ministers, *Salem* needing but 2; (*H*) Mr. *Smith* goes with his Family to some straggling People at *Natasco*; (*B*) but Mr. *Bright* disagreeing in Judgment with the other two, removes to *Charlestown*: where he stays above a Year. (*H*)

Some *Plymouth* People putting in with a Boat at *Natasco*, find Mr. *Smith* in a poor House that
wou'd

[68] The *Charlestown* Records Here mistake in placing this in 1628; for Mr. *Graves* comes not over till *June* 1629 (*scr*) And as by Dep. Governor *Dudley's* Letter, there was a great *Mortality* among the *Engish* at the *Massachusetts* Colony, in the *Winter* 1629, 30; so by Capt *Clap's* Account, there was but one House and some few *Engish* at *Charlestown* in *June* succeeding.

K. of France. K. of Great Britain. K. of Spain.
 1629. Lewis XIII. || Charles I. † Philip IV.

wou'd not keep him dry: He desires them to carry Him to *Plimouth*: and seeing Him to be a grave Man, and understanding he had been a *Minister*, they bring Him Hither; where we kindly entertain Him, send for his Goods and Servants, desire Him to exercise his Gifts among us; afterwards *chuse* Him into the *Ministry*; wherein He remains for sundry Years. (B)

July 20. Governor *Endicot* at *Salem* sets apart *this Day* for solemn *Prayer with Fasting*, and the *Trial and Choice* of a *Pastor and Teacher*: the *Forenoon* they spend in *Prayer and Teaching*: the *Afternoon*, about their *Trial and Election*: *chusing* Mr *Skelton* *Pastor*, Mr *Higginson* *Teacher*: and they accepting; Mr. *Higginson*, with 3 or 4 more of the gravest Members of the Church lay their Hands on Mr. *Skelton* with solemn *Prayer*: then Mr. *Skelton*, &c the like upon Mr. *Higginson*: & *Thursday* Aug 6, is appointed another *Day* of *Prayer and Fasting*, for the *Choice of Elders and Deacons*, and *Ordaining* them. (B) [69]

July 28. *Tuesday*, at a *General Court* of the *Massachusetts Company* at *London*; Governor *Cradock* reads certain *Proposals* conceiv'd by Himself; viz *That for the Advancement of the Plantation, the inducing Persons of Worth and Quality to transplant themselves and Families Thither, and*
other

[69] This Article is no where found, but in a Letter from Mr. *Charles Gott*, Dated, *Salem*, July 30 1629, and preserved in *Gov. Bradford*: and it being wrote between July 20 and Aug. 6, must be an undoubted Record of past Matter of Fact on July 20.

K. of France. K. of Great Britain. K. of Spain
1629. Lewis XIII. || Charles I. † Philip IV.

other weighty Reasons mention'd; To Transferr the Government to Those who shall inhabit There, and not continue the same subordinate to the Company Here This occasions some Debate: but Defer the Consideration and Conclusion to the next General Meeting: and agree to carry the Matter secret, that it be not divulged (Mr)

The Religious People at Salem, desiring to settle in a Church State, as near as they can to the Rules of the Gospel, apprehend it needfull for the 30 who Begin the Church, to enter solemnly into COVENANT one with another in the Presence of GOD, to walk together before Him according to his Holy Word, and then Ordain their Ministers to the several Offices to which they had been chosen. Mr Higginson being desired, draws up a Confession of Faith and Church Covenant according to Scripture: thirty Copies are written, one delivered to every Member: and the Church at Plymouth invited to the Solemnity, (mn. H) that the Church at Salem may have the Approbation and Concurrence if not Direction and Assistance of the other. (H)

Aug 6 (B. mn) [70] Being Thursday (B) the appointed Day being come, after the Prayers and Sermons of the two Ministers; in the End of the Day (mn) the said Confession and Covenant being read in the Publick Assembly, are solemnly consented to: and they immediately proceed to Ordain their Ministers; (mn. H) as also Mr. Houghbron a Ruling Elder; being seperated to their

1629. K. of France. Lewis XIII. || K. of Great Britain. Charles I † || K. of Spain. Philip IV.

their several Offices by the Imposition of the Hands of some of the Brethren appointed by the Church thereto; [71] (*msl*) Gov. Bradford and others, as Messengers from the Church of Plymouth, being by cross Winds hindered from being present in the former Part of the Service; come time enough to give them the *Right Hand of Fellowship*, wishing all Prosperity to these hopeful Beginnings. (*mn. H*)

But two of the Passengers observing the Ministers used not the *Common Prayer* nor *Ceremonies*, but professed to exercise *Discipline* upon scandalous Persons, and that some scandalous Ones were denied *Admission* into the Church; begin to raise some Trouble, to gather a separate Company & read *Common Prayer*. Upon which the Governor convents the 2 Ringleaders before Him: and finding their Speeches and Practices tend to Mutiny and Faction; send those two back to England at the Return of the Ships the same Year, and the Disturbance ceases. (*mn*)

Aug. 28. At a General Court of the Massachusetts Company at London; ordered that Mr. Wright, Eaton, Adams, Spurstow, with others they think fit,

[71] As Mr. Skelton and Higginson had been Ministers Ordained by Bishops in the Church of England; this Ordination was only to the Care of this Particular Flock, founded on their free Election. But as there seems to be a repeated Imposition of Hands; the Former on July 20, may only signify their previous Separation for their solemn Charge; and this Latter of Aug. 6, their actual Investiture therein.

K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1629. Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	‡ Philip IV.

fit, consider Arguments *against* Removing the chief Government of the Company to NEW ENGLAND; and that Sir R. Saltonstall, Mr. Johnson, Capt. Ven, with others they think fit, prepare Arguments *for* the Removal; that both Sides meet to *morrow Morning* at 7, confer and weigh their Arguments, and at 9, make Report to the whole Company. (Mcr)

Aug. 29. The said Committee's Meeting and making Report; the Generality of the Company VOTE, *That the Patent & Government of the Plantation be Transfer'd to NEW ENGLAND.* (Mcr)

Aug.—*Thirty five* of our Friends with their Families from Leyden arrive at NewPlimouth. They were shipped at London in May with the Ships that came to Salem: which bring over many Pious People to Begin the Churches There and in the Massachusetts Bay. So their being thus long kept back is now recompenc'd by Heaven with a double Blessing: in that we not only enjoy them beyond our late Expectation, when all Hope seem'd to be cut off; but with them many more Godly Friends and Christian Brethren, as the Beginning of a larger Harvest to CHRIST, in the Increase of his People and Churches in these Parts of the Earth, to the Admiration of many and almost Wonder of the World. (B)

The Charge of our Leyden Friends is reckon'd on the several Families: some 50*l.* some 40*l.* some 30*l.* as their Number & Expences were: which our Undertakers Pay for *Gratis*; besides giving them Houses, preparing them Grounds to Plant on, and maintain them with Corn &c above 13

K. of France	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1629: Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	† Philip IV.

or 14 Months before they have a Harvest of their own Production. (B)

An infectious Sickness grew at Sea among the Salem Passengers; which spread among those ashore, whereof many Died; some of the Scurvy, others of an infectious Feaver; which continued some time among them; while the Leyden People thro' the Goodness of God escaped it. (B)

Mr. Allerton returns without accomplishing the Enlargement and Confirmation of our *Plimouth Patent* But gives great and just Offence *this Year*, in bringing over *Morrison*, using Him as his Scribe, till caus'd to pack Him away: upon which He goes to his old Nest at *Merry Mount*. (B)

This Year [and I suppose *this Fall*] we send Mr. Allerton again for *England*, to conclude our *Patent*, &c. and Mr *Rodgers*, the *Minister* which Mr. Allerton brought over *last Year*, proving craz'd in his Brain, we are forc'd to be at further Charge to send Him back *this Year*, and loose all the Cost expended in bringing Him over; which was not small, in Provision, Apparel, Bedding, &c (B)

Sept. 19. At a General Court of the *Massachusetts Company* at *London*; Letters read from Capt *Endicott*, & others---by the *Lyon's Whelp & Talbot*, now come laden from NEW ENGLAND. (Mcr)

Sept. 29 *Tuesday*, at a General Court of the *Massachusetts Company* in *London*---Desire the Governor to buy the Ship *Eagle* of 400 Tuns, for the Safety, Honour and Benefit of the Plantation. (Mcr)

K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1629. Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	† Philip IV.

- Octob. 15. *Thursday*, at a *General Court* of the *Massachusetts Company* in *London*—Agree that the Charge of *Ministers* and Building convenient *Churches* [72] be born, Half by the joint Stock for 7 Years, and Half by the *Planters*. (*Mcr*) [73]
- Octob. 19. *Monday*, at a Meeting at the *Dep. Gov's* House—Agree, that at the *General Court* tomorrow, the *Governor* and *Assistants* be chosen for the *Government* [of the *Massachusetts Colony*] in *NEW ENGLAND*. (*Mcr*) [74]
- Octob. 20. *Tuesday*, at a *General Court* of the *Massachusetts Company* at *London*, chuse a *Committee* for the *Planters*, another for the *Adventurers*, to draw up *Articles* between them; and Mr. *White* of *Dorchester* with Mr. *Davenport* to be *Umpires* between them. [75] And the *Governor* representing, the special Occasion of summoning this Court, was for the *Election* of a *New Governor, Deputy, and Assistants*, the *Government* being to be *Transferred* to *NEW ENGLAND*; the Court having receiv'd extraordinary great *Commendation* of Mr. *JOHN WINTHROP*, both
for

[72] Thus *Houses of Publick Worship* are also called *Churches* in the Record of *Feb. 10* succeeding. (*Mcr*)

[73] Mr. *Dudley* and *Winthrop* the first time mentioned at this Meeting: (*Mcr*) and Mr. *Dudley* says, that 'Mr. *Winthrop* of *Suffolk*, well known for his *Piety, Liberality, Wisdom* and *Gravity*, coming in to us, we come to such Resolution as to sail from *England* in *Apr. 1630*. (*dd*)

[74] Mr. *Davenport*, Mr. *White* the *Preacher*, Mr. *White* the *Counsellor*, Mr. *Winthrop*, *Dudley*, &c. present at this Meeting. (*Mcr*)

[75] Mr. *White* and *Davenport* are Present, and entituled *Clerks* in the List of *Members* (*Mcr*)

K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
629. Lewis XIII.	Charles-I.	‡ Philip IV.

for his Integrity and Sufficiency, as being One very well fitted for the Place ; with a full Consent chuse Him *Governor* for the ensuing Year, to Begin this Day , who is pleased to accept thereof : with the like full Consent chuse Mr. HUMPHREY *Dep. Governor* : and for *Assistants*, Sir R. Saltonstall, Mr. Johnson, Dudley, Endicot, Nowel, W. Vassal, Pinchon, Samuel Sharp, Edward Rossiter, Thomas Sharp, John Revell, Cradock, Giff, Aldersey, Venn, Wright, Eaton, Adams. Mr. Harwood still *Treasurer*, (*Mer*) [and by the same kind of Writing I suppose Mr. Burgess's *Secretary*]

Nov. 20. *Friday*, at a *Court of Assistants* of the *Massachusetts Company* in *London*—Mr. Cradock informing of 1200 *l.* still owing for *Mariners Wages* and *Freight* on the *Ships*, *Talbot*, *May-Flower*, and *Four Sisters* ; order it to be Paid before other *Debts.* (*Mer*) [By which it seems that all those *Ships* are now returned to *England.*]

Nov. 25. *Wednesday*, at a *General Court* of the *Massachusetts Company* at *London*—Read a *Letter of Sept, 5*, from *Governor Endicot* and others in *NEW ENGLAND.* Mr. *White* moving, that the *Business* may be proceeded in with the *first Intention*, which was chiefly the *Glory of GOD* ; and to this Purpose that their Meeting may be sanctified by the *Prayers* of some faithful *Ministers* resident in *London*, whose *Advice* wou'd be likewise requisite on many *Occasions* ; the *Court* admits into the *Freedom* of this *Company*, Mr. *Jo. Archer* and Mr. *Philip Nye*, *Ministers* in *London* : who being present, kindly accept thereof. Mr. *White* also recommends to them, Mr. *Nathaniel Ward* of *Standon.* (*Mer*)

	K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain
1629.	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	† Philip IV.

Dec. 1. The General Court of the Massachusetts Company in London, chuse 10 Undertakers; who with much Intreaty accept the Charge of the sole Management of the Joint Stock for 7 Years; Mr. Aldersey to be their Treasurer: and order them to Provide a sufficient Number of Ships of good Force for Transporting Passengers, at 5 l. a Person, & Goods at 4 l. a Tun, to be ready to sail from London by the 1st of March: that sucking Children shall not be reckon'd; those under 4 Years old, 3 for 1 Person; under 8, 2 for one; under 12, 3 for 2: that a Ship of 200 Tun shall not carry above 120 Passengers compleat, & others in like Proportion: that for Goods Homeward, the Freight shall be; for Furr, 3 l. a Tun; for other Commodities, 40 s. a Tun; for Assurance, 5 l. per Cent: that the Undertakers furnish the Plantation with all Commodities they send for, at 25 per Cent above all Charges: but the Planters are free to dispose their Half Part of the Furr, and to fetch or send for any Commodities as they please, so as they Trade not with Interlopers. (Mcr)

☞ This Year, the Inhabitants on PISCATAQUA RIVER enter into a Combination for the Erecting a Government among themselves. (msl) [76]

1630.

Jan. 13. THE Council for NEW ENGLAND, in consideration that WILLIAM BRADFORD and his Associates have for these nine Years lived

[76] So says the Msl: but being uncertain from what Authority; I therefore rather adhere to their Combination in 1640.

K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1630. Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	‡ Philip IV.

lived in NEW ENGLAND; and have there Planted a TOWN called NEW PLIMOUTH at their own Charges; and now seeing by the special Providence of GOD and their extraordinary Care and Industry, they have increased their Plantations to near 300 People, and are on all Occasions able to relieve any new Planters or others of his Majesty's Subjects who may fall on that Coast; therefore seal a PATENT to the said *William Bradford*, his *Heirs*, *Associates* and *Assigns* of all that Part of NEW ENGLAND between *Cohasset Rivulet* towards the North, & *Narragansett River* towards the South, the *Western Ocean* towards the East, & between a *straight Line* directly extending up into the main Land towards the West from the *Mouth of Narragansett River* to the *utmost Bounds* of a Country in NEW ENGLAND called *Pacanokit* alias *Sawamsset* Westward, and *another like straight Line* extending directly from the *Mouth of Cohasset River* towards the West so far into the main Land Westward as the *utmost Limits* of the said *Pacanokit* or *Sawamsset* extend: as also all that Part of NEW ENGLAND between the *utmost Limits* of *Capersecont* or *Comascecont* which adjoineth to the *River Kennebeck*, and the *Falls of Negumke*, with the said *River it self* and the space of 15 Miles on each Side between the Bounds above said: with all Prerogatives, Rights, Royalties, Jurisdictions, Privileges, Franchises, Liberties and Immunities, and also marine Liberties, with the Escheats and Casualties thereof (the Admiralty Jurisdiction excepted) with all the Interest, Right, &c. which the

K. of France	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1630. Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	‡ Philip IV.

the said Council have or ought to have thereto ; with Liberty to Trade with the Natives and Fish on the Seas adjoining ; & it shall be lawful for them to INCORPORATE themselves or the People there inhabiting, by some fit Name or Title ; with Liberty to them & their Successors to make Orders, Ordinances and Constitutions, not contrary to the Laws of England for their better Government, and put the same in Execution by such Officers as He and they shall authorize and depute ; and for their Safety and Defence, to encounter by Force of Arms by all Means by Land and Sea, Seize and make Prize of all who attempt to inhabit or trade with the Savages within the Limits of their Plantations or attempt Invasion, Detriment or Annoyance to their said Plantations, &c (bc) [77]

Feb. 10. *Wednesday*, at a *General Court* of the *Massachusetts Company* at *London*—Forasmuch as the Furtherance of the Plantation will require a great and continual Charge that cannot be defrayed out of the *Joint Stock*, which is order'd for

[77] Mr. Hubbard says that in 1629 [i.e. according to the odd Account, but in the Julian Year, 1630] the *Plimouth People* obtain another PATENT by the *Earl of Warwick* and *Sir F. Gorges Act* ; and a GRANT from the King for the Confirmation thereof, to make them a Corporation in as ample Manner as the *Massachusetts*. (H) Now This is the Patent ; but the King's Grant miscarries. Deputy Governor *Dudley* also mistakes in thinking the *Plimouth People* had obtained successive Patents from King *James* and *Charles* ; their Patents being only from the Council for NEW ENGLAND, as before.

K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1630 Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	‡ Philip IV.

for the Maintenance of Trade; it is propounded that another common Stock be rais'd from such as bare good Affection to the Colony and the Propagation thereof; to be employed in Defrayment of Publick Charges, as maintaining Ministers, transporting poor Families, Building Churches & Fortifications, and all other Publick and necessary Occasions of the Colony: order'd that 200 Acres of Land be allotted for every 50 Pounds, and so proportionably for what Sums shall come in for this Purpose: and Mr Harwood chosen Treasurer for this Account. Mr Roger Ludlow now also chosen and sworn Assistant, in the Room of Mr. S. Sharp, who by reason of Absence had not taken the Oath (Mer) [78]

Feb. e. Here is [i. e. in England] a Fleet of 14 Sail furnish'd with Men, Women, Children, all Necessaries, Men of Handicrafts; & others of good Condition, Wealth and Quality, to make a firm Plantation in NEW ENGLAND, between 42 and 48, North Latitude: but stay at South Hampton and thereabouts till May, to take 260 Kine with other liv: Cattle, &c. (hs) [79]

The

[78] This is their last General Court in England (Mer)
 [79] Dep Governor Dudley says, that 1 Ship sail'd in Feb [which I suppose is Mr. Wm. Pierce from Bristol] that another sail'd in March [which I conclude is Capt. Squibb from Plymouth] that 4 sail'd in April, 8 in May, 1 in June, and 1 in Aug. besides another set out by a Private Merchant, 17 in all. (dd) The 14 former seem to be meant by Hewes.

K. of France. K. of Great Britain. K. of Spain.
1630. Lewis XIII. || Charles I. † Philip IV.

The latter End of 1629 [80] a Congregational Church (*mfl*) is by a Pious People (*etc*) Gathered (*mfl*) in the New Hospital at *Plimouth* in *Eng-land*: when they keep a Day of solemn Prayer and Fasting; that worthy Man of God, the Rev. Mr. *White* of *Dorchester* being present Preaches in the Fore Part of the Day; and in the After Part the People solemnly chuse and call those Godly Ministers the Rev. Mr. *John Warham* a famous Preacher at *Exeter*, and the Rev. Mr. *John Maverick* a Minister who lived 40 Miles from *Exeter*, to be their Officers: who expressing their Acceptance (*etc*) are at the same time ordain'd their Ministers. (*mfl*) [81]

This Winter Die in the *Massachusetts Colony* above 80 *English* (*dd*) and among the rest, Mr. *Houghton* a Ruling Elder of the Church of *Salem*: But Mr. *Samuel Sharp* chosen Ruling Elder There, serves in the Office till about 1657, 8. (*mfl*) [82]

Mar. 8.

[80] The latter End of 1629 according to the odd way of Reckoning is the Beginning of 1630 in the Julian Year: And by Capt. *Clap*'s Account; this Transaction seems but just before their *New England* Voyage, & preparatory to it. *etc.* Capt. *Roger Clap*'s Memoirs in Manuscript.

[81] These had also been ordained Ministers by Bishops in the Church of *England*: and they are now only seperated to the special Care of this People.

[82] He was a Person of Note in the first Settlement (*mfl*) and I conclude is the same who was chosen Assistant, Apr. 30. and Oct. 20. 1629. But whether chosen Ruling Elder at the same Time with Mr. *Houghton*, or after his Decease seems uncertain.

K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1630. Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	† Philip IV.

Mar. 8 Mr. Sberley at London, writes to Gov. Bradford, &c. 'Those who came in May, and these now sent, must some while be chargeable both to you and us.' This is another Company of our Leyden Friends, who are ship'd in the Beginning of March, & arrive [in NEW ENGLAND] the latter End of May: and the Charge of this last Company comes to above 550 l. i. e. of transporting them from Holland to England, their lying There, with Cloathing and Passage Hither; besides the fetching them from Salem and the Bay, where they and their Goods are landed: all which the New Plymouth Undertakers Pay Gratis; besides the providing them Housing, preparing them Ground, and maintaining them with Food for 16 or 18 Months before they have a Harvest of their own; which comes to near as much more—A rare Example of Brotherly Love and Christian Care in performing their Promises to their Brethren, even beyond their Power. (B)

Mar. 18. A Meeting of the Massachusetts Assistants at South Hampton—Present the Governor, Sir R Saltonstall. Mr. Johnson, Dudley, Humfrey Nowell, Pinchon, Giff; they chuse Sir Brian Fanson, Wm Collington and Simon Bradstreet Gentlemen, to be Assistants in the Room of Mr Eaton and Giff of London, and Mr Wright, all Merchants: and Sir Brian is accordingly sworn this Day. (Mr) (83)

Mar. 19

[83] Mr. Hubbard is mistaken in supposing these not chosen till March 23.

	K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1630.	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	‡ Philip IV.

Mar 19. Mr. *Sherley* [at *Bristol*] writes to Governour *Bradford*, &c... That Mr. *Allerton* got Granted from the *Earl of Warwick* and Sir *F. Gorges*, all that Mr. *Winslow* desir'd in his Letters and more : then sued to the KING to Confirm their Grant and make you a Corporation, and so enable you to make and execute Laws in such ample manner as the *Massachusetts* : which the King Granted, referring the *Lord Keeper* to order the *Sollicitor* to draw it up : the *Lord Keeper* further'd it all He cou'd and so the *Sollicitor* : But as *Festus* said to *Paul*, *With no small Sum I obtain'd this Freedom* ; many Riddles must be resolv'd, and many Locks must be opened with the Silver, nay the Golden Key : For when it came to the *Lord Treasurer* for his Warrant to Free the *Custom* for 7 Years inward and 21 outward, He refus'd, but refer'd it to the *Council Table* : and there Mr. *Allerton* attended Day by Day when they sat but cou'd not get his *Petition* Read : and because of Mr. *Pierce's* staying at *Bristol* with all the *Passengers*, He was forc'd to leave the Prosecution of it to a *Sollicitor* : but 'twill be needful He shou'd return by the first Ship from NEW ENGLAND. N B. The Clause about the *Customs* was not tho't of by the Colony, nor much regarded, but unhappily put in by Mr. *Allerton* and *Sherley's* Device : [84] or the *Charter* without all Question had been then finished, having pass'd the King's Hand : but by that

[84] I suppose they took the Hint from the like Advantage given in the *Massachusetts* Colony Charter.

K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain
1630. Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	† Philip IV.

that means this Opportunity being Lost, it was never accomplished, but above 500 *l.* vainly and lavishly cast away about it. (B)

Mar. 19. Mr. *Sherley* and *Hatherly* at *Bristol*, write to the *Plimouth Undertakers*, ' That they two
' with Mr. *Andrews* and *Beauchamp* of *London*,
' have taken a PATENT for PENOBSCUT, to
' carry on a Trade with the Natives There ;
' that they employed Mr. *Edward Asbley* a
' young Man to manage it, and furnish'd Him
' with large Provisions ; that Mr. *Wm Pierce* is
' joined with them, because of Landing *Asbley*
' and his Goods There, & will bend his Course
' accordingly ; with 4 or 5 stout Fellows, one of
' them a Carpenter, with a new Boat & Boards
' to make another ; and moving us to join
' them. (B)

Mr. *Allerton* accordingly returns (*this Spring*) to NEW ENGLAND: and as soon as *Asbley* lands at *Penobscut*, about 80 Leagues (North East) of *Plimouth*, *Asbley* writes, and after comes to be supplied with *Wampameag* & *Corn* against *Winter*: so with much Regret we join, and give 'em Supplies to our great Prejudice: but with *Asbley* we consort *Thomas Willet*, a discreet honest young Man come from *Leyden*, in whom we can confide. (B) [85]

Mar. 20

[85] Dep. Governor *Dudley* telling of a *Ship* that sail'd from *England* for NEW ENGLAND in *Feb* 1629,30. It seems to be this Capt. *Wm. Pierce* with Mr. *Allerton*, *Asbley*, &c. But Gov. *Bradford* beginning 1630 on the 25 of *March*, draws all this Account of the Charter, *Allerton*, *Asbley*, &c. into 1629.

	K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1630.	Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	† Philip IV.

- Mar. 20. The Rev. Mr. *Warham* and *Maverick*, with many Godly Families and People under their Care (*crc*) from *Devonshire*, *Dorsetshire* and *Somersetshire* (*msl*) with Mr. *Ressiter* and *Ludlow*, two Assistants of the *Massachusetts Company* (*crc*. *H*) and Mr. *Roger Clap*, *Æt* 21 [afterwards Capt. of the Castle in *Boston-Harbour*] this Day sail from *Plimouth* in *England* (*crc*) in the *Mary* and *John* (*H*) a Ship of 400 Tuns, one *Squeb* Master, for the *Massachusetts* (*crc*)
- Mar. 23. Mr. *Coddington*, *Bradstreet* and *T Sharp*, formerly chosen Assistants of the *Massachusetts Colony*, now take their Oath [at *Southampton*] And this Day, at a Court of Assistants on Board the *Arbella*; Present, Gov. *Wintthrop*, Sir *R. Saltonstall*. Mr. *Johnson*; *Dudley*, *Coddington*, *T. Sharp*, *W. Vassall*, & *Bradstreet*; Mr. *Humsfrey* being to stay behind, is discharged of his Deputyship, and in his Place Mr. *DUDLEY* chosen Deputy Governor. (*Mr*) [86]
- Mar. 29 Monday, the 4 Principal Ships; viz the *Arbella* of 350 Tuns, 28 Guns, 52 Seamen. [87] the *Talbot*, the *Ambrose*, and the *Jewel*, now riding at *Cowes*, and ready to sail; Mr. *Craddock* this Morning being aboard the *Arbella*, advises them to sail; the *Rest* viz. the *May Flower*, the *Whale*, the *William & Francis*, the *Tryal*,

[86] This is the last Record of the *Massachusetts Company* in *England*.

[87.] *Johnson* says this 'was the *Eagle*, now nam'd *Arbella* in Honour of the *Lady Arbella*, Wife to that pious Gentleman *Isaac Johnson*, Esq; and the *Massachusetts Colony* Records say, she was of 400 Tuns.

K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1630. Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	‡ Philip IV.

Trial, the Charles, the Success & the Hopewell, being at *Hampton* not yet Ready; and takes Leave of his Friends: At 10 they weigh (H) [and get to *Yarmouth* in the *Ile of Wight*]

Apr. 7. Gov. *Winthrop*, Dep. Gov. *Dudley*, Sir *R. Saltonstall*, *J. Johnson*, *W. Coddington*, *Charles Fines*, Esquires, with the Rev. Mr *George Phillips*, on board the *Arbella* at *Yarmouth*, sign an Humble Request of His Majesty's Loyal Subjects the Governor and Company late gone for NEW ENGLAND to the Rest of their Brethren in and of the CHURCH of ENGLAND; for the Obtaining of their Prayers, and the Removal of Suspensions and Misconstructions of their Intentions: Printed in 4to London, 1630.

This is commonly said to be drawn up by that Learned, Holy, Rev. and Famous Mr. *White* of *Dorchester*, (H) [and having sign'd this, they set sail again] But having been told at the *Ile of Wight*, that 10 Ships at *Dunkirk* [which then belong'd to *Spain*] with Brass Guns, the least of which had 30, were waiting for us; we on

Apr. 10 Discover several sail of Ships bearing towards us, and provide to Fight 'em: [88] but drawing nearer, find them to be the rest of our Fleet, with whom we clear the Channel on the 12th of

[88] *Johnson* writes but of 4 Men of War of *Dunkirk* who were said to lie in wait for their sailing; and but of 4 Ships that now appeared to pursue 'em. But as *Hubbard* writes of 10 Ships at *Dunkirk*; so by his Account there seem to be 7 now bearing towards them.

K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1630 Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	‡ Philip IV.

of *April*: [89] and the *Arbella* being *Admiral*, steer our Course for the *Massachusetts*, (*H*) but make a very troublesome and costly Voyage: For as they had been Wind bound long in *England*; so after they had set sail, are hindred with cross Winds, and so scattered with Mists and Tempests that few of them arrive together (*dd*)

About *April* and *May*, is a Great Conspiracy of the *Indians* in all Parts from the *Narragansetts* round about to the *Eastward*, to cut off the *English*; which *John Sagamore*, who always lov'd us, reveal'd to the Inhabitants of *Charlestown*. Their Design was chiefly laid against *Plimouth*, not regarding our Paucity at the *Massachusetts*: to be effected under Colour of having some Sport at *Plimouth*, which the Gov refusing them, they told him, *If they might not come with Leave, they wou'd without*: upon this He sends their Flat-bottom'd Boat which is all they have to *Salem* for Shot and Powder. At this time the People of *Charlestown* agree to make a small *Fort* with Pallizadoes & Flankers on the Top of the *Town Hill*, which is perform'd at the Direction of Mr. *Graves*, by all Hands, viz. of Men, Women and Children, who labour in digging and building till the Work is done. But the People at *Salem* shoot off their Great Guns to clear them, the
Report

[89] It seems strange that Dep. Governor *Dudley* shou'd not only be wholly silent in this Article, but also write of no more than 4 *Ships* sailing in *April*, & of the next 8 in *May*: But in Mr. *Johnson* & *Hubbard* we have two Witnesses.

K. of France	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1630. Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	‡ Philip IV.

Report so terrifies the *Indians*, that they disperse and run away : their Design breaks up : and tho' they come flattering afterwards and call themselves our good Friends ; yet this Plot obliges us to be in continual Arms. (*ctr*) [90]

[May, *Latter End*] the *Lyon*; *Wm. Pierce*, Master, arrives in *Salem Harbour*, though none of the Fleet expected. (*H*) [91]

May 29. *Saturday*, Prince CHARLES BORN, (*bs*) [afterwards King *Charles II.*]

May 30. [*Lord's-Day*] Mr. *Warbam*, *Maverick*, *Rositer* and *Ludlow*, arrive at *Nantasket*. Captain *Squeb* [I suppose on *Monday*, &c.] puts Them and their Goods on Shore at *Nantasket Point*, and leaves them to shift for themselves. But getting a Boat of some old Planters, they lade Her with Goods, & some able Men well arm'd go up to *Charlestown* ; where we find some *Wigwams*, some few *English*, and one *House*, with an old Planter who can speak *Indian*. We go up *Charles River* till it grows narrow and shallow

[90] This Account is no where found but in *Charlestown Records* : and tho' they place this History in *April* and *May* 1629 ; yet inasmuch as Mr. *Graves* comes not thither till *July* 1629, I therefore place it in the *April* and *May* succeeding.

[91] I Place his Arrival at this Time (1) Because Mr. *Hubbard* says He arrived in *Salem-Harbour* some Days before *June 12.* (2) Because this seems to be the same *Ship* mention'd under *March 8* last, which Gov. *Bradford* says arrives the *latter End of May* ; and I suppose He had now Landed *Ashley* at *Penobscut*.

K. of France.	! K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1630. Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	‡ Philip IV.

low ; There with much Labour land our Goods
the Bank being steep. At *Night* we are told
of 300 *Indians* hard by : but our Planter going
and desiring them not to come near us, they
comply. Our Capt. is Mr. *Southcot* a brave Low
Country Soldier, but we not above 10 in Num-
ber. In the *Morning*, some of the *Natives* stand
at a Distance looking at us, but come not near
till they had been a while in view : and then
one of 'em holding out a *Bass* towards us, we
send a Man with a *Bisket* and change 'em. After
which they supply us with *Bass*, giving a *Bass*
for a *Bisket*, and are very friendly. And by
our Diligence we get up a *Shelter* to save our
Goods. But are not there many Days before
we have Order to come away from this Place,
which is after called *Watertown*, to *Matapan*,
because there's a Neck fit to keep our Cattle
on ; so we remove to *Matapan* (*etc*) Begin the
Town, name it *Dorchester*, (*msl*) and Here the
Natives are also kind to us. (*etc*) [92]

June 12. [93] *Saturday*, at 2 in the *Morning*, the
Arbella, Admiral of the NEW ENGLAND Fleet,
finding

[92] By this Means *Dorchester* becomes the first settled
Church and Town in the County of *Suffolk* : and in all
Military Musters or Civil Assemblies where Dignity is
regarded, us'd to have the Precedency (*msl*) and by
this it appears that *Johnson* and others are mistaken, who
place the *beginning* of *Dorchester* Church and Town in
1631. But the Manuscript Letter is mistaken in sup-
posing that this People remov'd to *Matapan* in the *be-*
ginning of *June*.

[93] *Johnson* mistakes in saying *July* 12, instead of *June* 12
and several Manuscript Letters mistake *July* for *June*.

K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain:
1630. Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	† Philip IV.

finding her Port near, shoots off 2 Pieces of Ordnance: and descrying the *Lyon*, *Wm. Pierce* Master, who had arrived there some Days before, sends the Skiff aboard; stands in towards the Harbour: and some Shallops coming, by their Help she passes thro' the narrow Strait between *Baker's Island* & another *Little Island*, and comes to an Anchor a little way within said Island. Mr. *Pierce* comes presently to us, but returns to fetch Mr. *Endicot*, who with Mr. *Skelton* and Capt. *Levit*, come aboard us about two a Clock. And with them, this *Afternoon*, the *Governor* with those *Assistants* on board the *Admiral*, and some other *Gentlemen* and *Gentlewomen*, go ashore to their Friends at *Salem*: many of the other People also landing on the Eastern Side of the Harbour, regale themselves with Strawberries, wherewith the Woods are every where in these times replenished. (H)

Next Morning, *MASCONOMO*, the *Sagamore* or Lord Proprietor of that Side of the Country towards *Cape Ann*, with one of his Men, comes on board the *Admiral* to bid Him welcome, stays all Day: and in the *Afternoon* arrives the *Jewel*. (H)

June 14. [Monday] Morning, the *Admiral* weighs, is warped into the inner Harbour: and this *Afternoon*, most of the Passengers go ashore. (H) But find the *Colony* in an unexpected and sad Condition: above 80 of 'em being *Dead* the *Winter* before; many of those alive, *Weak* and *Sick*; all the *Corn* among 'em hardly sufficient to feed 'em a *Fortnight*: so that the *Remains* of 180 *Servants* we had sent over the *two Years* before,

K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1630. Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	‡ Philip IV.

coming to us for Victuals, we find ourselves unable to feed 'em, by Reason that those we trusted to ship their Provisions fail'd and left them behind: whereupon Necessity forc'd us to give them all *Liberty* to our extream L^{ies}, who had cost us 16 or 20 l. a Person, furnishing and sending over. (dd)

June 17. *Thursday*, the Governor with the chief of the Gentlemen travel to the *Massachusetts*, to find out a Place for Settlement: but return on *Saturday*; taking *Nantasket* in their Way; where they met the *Mary* and *John*, the Ship that sail'd from the *West-Country*, and brought Mr. *Rossiter* and *Ludlow* with other Passengers; who missing *Salem*, needed the Help of the Governor and other *Assistants*, to make up the Difference between the Master & other Gentlemen, which was compos'd on this Occasion. (H)

The *Ambrose* arrives at *Salem* before the Governor and Company returned from the *Massachusetts*. (H)

July 1. Arrive the *May Flower* and *Whale* in the Harbour of *Charlestown*: the Passengers all in Health; but most of their Cattle Dead. July 2, comes in the *Talbot*: which had been sore visited with the *Small Pox*, whereof 14 Died at Sea. In one of these Ships came Mr. *Henry Winthrop*, the Governor's second Son, a sprightly and hopeful young Gentleman; who was unhappily drowned in a small Creek on July 2. the very next Day after his Landing, to the no small Grief of his Friends and the rest of the Company. (H)

July 3. Arrive the *William* and *Francis*: July 5, the *Tryal* and the *Charles*: and July 6, the *Succes*.

K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain:
1630. Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	‡ Philip IV.

Success. So as now the WHOLE Fleet being safely come to Port; they on July 8. [Thursday] keep a PUBLICK DAY OF THANKSGIVING thro' all their Plantations, to Praise Almighty God for all his Goodness and wonderful Works towards them. (H)

[By this it seems as if the *Hoperwell* also were now arriv'd, tho' not mentioned; or at least that She arriv'd before July 11 by the following Passage in Mr. *Hubbard*---] 'There were 'no less than 10 or 11 *Ships* employ'd to transport the Governor and Company with other 'Planters at this Time to NEW ENGLAND: 'some of 'em *Ships* of good Burthen, that carried over about 200 *Passengers* a Piece: who 'all by the good Providence of God arrive at 'their desired Port before the 11th of July, '1630. (H)

[By the 10 or 11 *Ships* Mr. *Hubbard* must mean only Those which came from *South Hampton* and that arrived at the *Massachusetts* before July 11: and if the *Hoperwell* was not then arriv'd, there were 10; but if She was---there were 11.]

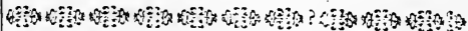
These *Ships* are filled with *Passengers* of all Occupations, skill'd in all kinds of Faculties needful for Planting a new Colony. Some set forth from the *West of England*: but the greatest Number came from about *London*; tho' *South Hampton* was the Place of Rendevouz where they took Ship. The 3 *biggest* bro't over the Patentees and Persons of greatest Quality; with Governor WINTHROP that famous Pattern of Piety, Wisdom, Justice and Liberality; which advanced Him so often to the Place of Govern

K. of France. K. of Great Britain. K. of Spain.
 1630. Lewis XIII. || Charles I. † Philip IV.

ment by the annual Choice of the People ; and Deputy Governor DUDLEY, a Gentleman, who by reason of his Experience, & Travels abroad, as his other natural and acquired Abilities, qualified Him next above others for the chief Place of Government. (H)

With these in the same Fleet there came several other Gentlemen of Note and Quality ; (H) as Sir R. Saltonstall, Mr. Ludlow, Rossiter, Nowel, T. Sharp, Pynchon, S. Bradstreet, [whom I find at the first Court in Charlestown, Aug. 23.] as also Mr. Johnson and Coddington [whom with Mr. Endicor I find at the second Court There. Sept. 7.] (Mcr) [93] with other Gentlemen of the Civil Order; As also some eminent and noted MINISTERS : as Mr. [JOHN] WILSON, who had formerly been a Minister of one of the Parish Churches in *Sudbury* in the County of *Suffolk*; Mr. GEORGE PHILLIPS, who had been Minister of *Bocksted* in *Essex*; with [the aforesaid] Mr. JOHN MAVERICK & Mr. [JOHN] WARHAM, who had been Ministers in the *West Country*. (H) These were they who first came to set up *Christian Churches* in this *Heathen Wilderness*, and to lay the Foundation of this renowned Colony.

[93] Mr. Hubbard also mentions Mr. *W. Vassal* : But tho' one of the Patentees and Assistants this Year, yet neither in all the Lists of the Courts nor any where else in the *Massachusetts Colony Records*, can I find his Name mentioned after their Departure from *England*.



S E C T. II.

From the Beginning of the Settlement of the MASSACHUSETTS or *second Colony*, to the Settlement of the *seventh and last*, by the Combination of *Forty-one* Persons into a Form of Government, on *Piscataqua River*, Octob. 22 1640, afterwards called the PROVINCE OF NEW HAMPSHIRE.

BEING now arriv'd from *England* with another *Colony* of Pious People and on the known Account of Religion only ; for the Information of the present Age as well as Posterity, we must here observe, They were of a Denomination somewhat different in those early Times from them of *Plimouth* : Those of *Plimouth* being then called *Separatists* ; these of the *Massachusetts*, with the following *Colonies* issuing from them, — *Puritans*. The former having about 28 Years before, separated from the *Church of England* ; as what, on the Account of the impure Mixture of unscriptural Inventions in Religious Worship, as well as the Admission of the scandalous to the Sacraments of Baptism and the Lord's Supper, with the almost intire Refusal of Discipline, they cou'd not therefore in Conscience join with : but the latter were till now *professed Members* of the *Church of England*.

But that the Reader may more clearly see the Difference then between them, with the Occasional Causes of their Transmigrations ; we must retrace them to their Origine

in England, and take a summary View of their gradual Progress to *this memorable Period*. And tho' I might spare much Labour by citing only out of Dr. *E. Calamy*, Mr. *Pierce*, *Bennet*, *Neal*, &c; yet to avoid Exception, I rather chiefly use those noted Church of England Writers, *Fox*, *Cambden*, *Fuller*, *Burnet*, *Strype* and *Eachard*: which I have taken no small Pains in searching and comparing.

' On June 9. 1536, [1] as *Fuller* says, Begins the first Reformed Convocation of the Clergy in England; in which the Lord *Cromwell* prime Secretary, sets in State above all the *Bishops*, as the King's *Vicar*, or *Vice-Gerent* General in all Spiritual Matters: and Bp. *Burnet* tells us, That by King *Henry's* Order, He declares, *It was the King's Pleasure that the Rites and Ceremonies of the Church shou'd be Reformed by the Rules of SCRIPTURE, & that nothing was to be maintained which did not rest upon that Authority.*

Now this is the *Grand Principle of Puritanism*: Upon this, as the Scriptures were more searched and known, the Reformation gradually went on to the Death of *K. Edward VI* and had the Governors of the Church adhered strictly to this one Principle, kept close to the *Scriptures* & reformed the *Worship* as well as the *Doctrine* by them; i. e. purged out of the Church whatever they themselves acknowledge is not prescribed in Scripture; the whole Church had then been *Puritan*, and had never driven such Multitudes from her Communion.

Fuller also tells us, that ' Mr. *JOHN ROGERS* and Mr. *JOHN HOOPER* were the *Heads* of those Reformers called *Puritans*.' Mr. *Eachard*, that highflying Writer, calls Mr. *ROGERS* ' A learned Man and Prebendary of *St Paul's London*.' Bp. *Burnet* calls Mr. *HOOPER* ' A pious, zealous and learned Man, first Bishop of *Glocester* and then of *Worcester*.' *Fuller* says, ' He was bred at *Oxford*, well skili'd in *Latin*, *Greek* and *Hebrew*.' And *K. Edward* in his Letter to *Cranmer* of *Aug. 5. 1550*, writes, *We by the Advice of our Council have chosen our right well beloved and well worthy*

[1] *Fuller's* Printer wrongly places this indeed under 1535: But *Kettle* and *Burnet* assure us it was in 1536.

worthy Mr. JOHN HOOPER, Professor of Divinity, to be our BP. of Gloucester; as well for his great Knowledge, deep Judgment and long Study, both in the Scriptures and profane Learning, as also for his good Discretion, ready Utterance and honest Life for that kind of Vocation. [2] These two led the Van of the Martyrs under Queen Mary I; Mr Rogers being the first who Died at the Stake, and Mr Hooper the first Bishop Burnt in her Reign, if not the first Bishop that was ever Burnt in the World. And from Fuller and Burnet we learn that in 1550, under the Reign of Edward VI, we must Begin the ÆRA of the English Puritans: and not in 1554, among the Exiles at Franckfort; and much less lower down in Queen Elizabeth's Reign, as Eachard and others place it; who seem to write as if they had not a very exact Acquaintance with the Religious History of England.

For Bishop Burnet tells us, — ' That on April 1. 1550, Ridley was made Bishop of London, orders Altars to be pulled down and turned to Communion Tables; and that this Change was universally made in England this Year: that on July 3 ensuing, King Edward appointed HOOPER to be Bishop of Gloucester; who refuses on these two Accounts, (1) The last 6 Words in the Oath of Supremacy—so Help me God, all Saints and the holy Evangelists; which all the Bishops had sworn by before. (2) The Popish Habits [such as Rochet, Chimere, Square Cap, &c (Fox & Fuller)] still requir'd by Law. Upon this Hooper is cited before the King in Council, who sees so much of the Reasonableness of his Objections, that (1) He strikes those six Words out of the Oath with his own Hand. (2) The Law threatening a *Premunure*, He writes a Warrant to Arch Bp. Crammer to consecrate Him without the Habits: that Crammer was willing to yield: that Cox the King's Preceptor, writes to Bullinger, ' I think all Things in the Church ought to be pure and simple, removed at the greatest Distance from the Pomps and Elements of this World; but in this our Church what can I do in so low a Station? ' That the famous Professors of Divinity, Bucer in Cambridge, and

[2] The Letter is intire in Fox and Fuller.

' *Martyr* in *Oxford* being consulted, exprefs their Dislike of
 ' the Habits, and wish them remov'd by Law, though till
 ' then advise to use them: that *Ridley* was very earnest
 ' *Hooper* shou'd be made a *Bishop*; and that both *Ridley* and
 ' *Goodrick* Bishop of *Ely* with the Habits abolished; but think
 ' the breaking thro' the Law, so had a Præcedent and may
 ' have such ill Consequences, they cannot consent: that
 ' *Hooper* declaring himself for another Way of Ordination
 ' is committed to the Fleet [Prison] *Jan. 27*, but is at length
 ' prevail'd upon and consecrated in *March* ensuing; upon
 ' Allowance of *Liberty to lay by the Habits on common Occasi-*
 ' *ons, tho' to ware them when He Preach'd in Publick.*' And
 the *Treatise of the Troubles at Franford*, Printed in 1575,
 says, *This was to the common Grief of all Godly Minds.*

Burnet also says, that 'In 1551, the *Common Prayer*
Book was a second time revised and corrected; and
 in 1552, authoriz'd by Parliament: But *Pointer* and *Eac-*
hard, that therein was neither *Confession* nor *Absolution*: *Dr.*
Layton, that it thus expressly spake concerning the Ceremo-
 nies—*As for Kneeling, the Sign of the Cross, the lifting up of*
the Hand, smiting of the Breast, and Gestures of the like Nature;
It shall be left free for every one to do as He list: And Dr.
E. Calamy, 'That in the Days of King *Edward VI*, the *Liturgy*
was for the most part used, and what was Matter of Scruple
omitted, without Molestation; nor cou'd he find any Subscription
required to the Book of Common Prayer, the Articles of Religion,
or any Thing else.

Thus the *Puritans* continued, and both They and the Re-
 formation grew in the Church till the Decease of *K. Edward*
VI, on *June 6. 1553*: by which time Arch Bishop *Cranmer*,
3p. Ridley, *Bp. Latimer*, *Dr. Taylor*, *Mr. Philpot*, *Bradford*,
 and other glorious Martyrs, as *Mr. Neal* from *Fox* and *Hey*
in observes, came into the same Sentiments with *Hooper* about
 the *Papish Habits*; and the four first treated them with great
 Contempt at their Degradations. Nor were they *Puritan*
 only in respect to the *Papish Habits*, but also in removing
Crosses Copes and Altars, as well as *Images and Pictures* out of
Churches, and setting *Communion Tables* in convenient Place. [3]

But Queen *Mary* I succeeding, soon reduc'd the Church to *Papery*, and Burnt to Death those most eminent and zealous Reformers. Then *Fox* and *Burnet* tell us, *Ridley* in Prison wrote to *Hooper*; 'That He was intirely knit to Him, tho' in some Circumstances of Religion, they had formerly jarr'd a little: It was *Hooper's* Wisdom and his own Simplicity that had made the Difference.' And *Fox* informs us, 'That when they came to be Degraded, they were forc'd to be cloathed with the *Papish Habits* in order to be stript, as a Token of their being Depriv'd of their Offices: that then *RIDLEY* did vehemently inveigh against all that Foolish Apparel, calling the Apparel foolish and abominable, yet too fond for a Vice in a Play: that when they were put on *TAYLOR*, He walked up and down and said to *Bonner*—
 'How say you my Lord, am not I a goodly Fool?—If I were in Cheap [Side] shou'd I not have Boys enough to laugh at these apish Toys and toying Trumpery?—' That *CRANMER* said, at his Cloathing and Stripping, *All this needed not; I had my self done with this Gear long ago:* And *Neal* from *Fox* in *Latin*, which I have not seen, says 'That *LATIMER* at his Degradation also derided the Garments; for when they pull'd off his Surplice—Now, says He, *I can make no more Holy Water.*

And then the *Treatise of the Troubles at Francfort* tells us, That *Mr. Wm. Whittingham* and other [famous Puritans] with their Company flying the Kingdom; they on *June* 27. 1554, enter *Francfort* in *Germany*, being the first *Englishmen* that There arriv'd to remain. *July* 8, They apply'd to the Magistrates for a Church wherein they might have God's Word truly Preached and the Sacraments sincerely [i. e. purely] ministred in their natural Tongue. *July* 14, They obtained their Request: and then [forming themselves into an Independent Church] consult what Order of Service to use: and the *English Order* being perus'd, they by general Consent conclude, that the answering aloud after the Minister shou'd not be used, that the *Litany*, *Surplice* and many other Things be omitted, that in the Sacraments also sundry Things be omitted, as *Superstitious* and *Superfluous*: And having chosen their Ministers and Deacons, they enter their Church on [Lord's day] *July* 29: and thus continue, till [Wednesday] *March* 13 following

following, when Dr. Cox and others with Him come to Francfort out of England, and begin to break their Order: On the Lord's Day following, one of his Company without the Consent and Knowledge of the Congregation, getting up suddenly into the Pulpit reads the Litany, and Dr. Cox with his Company answer aloud after the Minister, contrary to the Church's Determination: and being admonish'd by the Seniors of the Congregation, He with the rest who came with Him answer, *They wou'd do as they had done in England, &c.* (1f)

Upon this, there rises a grievous Controversy about the Ceremonies, which broke the Church to pieces, and drove many of the Puritans, viz. Fox [the Martyrologist] with some to Basil, and Knox [the famous Scotch Reformer] with Mr Christopher Goodman, Whittingham and others to Geneva; where they form 2 other Churches. In the mean while, Cox with those who are for the Common Prayer & Ceremonies, staying at Francfort, form a second [Independent] Church, and chuse Mr. David Wilitheal, Bishop or Superintendent; to whom at length they agree to give the Title of Pastor, with 2 Ministers, 4 Seniors or Elders and 2 Deacons: the Pastor to Preach in Preaching, ministering the Sacraments, Example of good Life, in Exhorting, Admonishing, Rebuking, and as the chief Mouth of the Church to declare all Orders taken by Him and the Elders; the 2 Ministers to assist the Pastor in Preaching and Administering the Sacraments; the Elders to assist the Pastor in Oversight and Discipline; and the Deacons, to care for the Poor, visit the Sick, and if requir'd to assist in Catechizing. (1f)

Other Exiles out of England, set up another [Independent] Church at Embden in East Friesland, whereof Bishop Scory was the Superintendent. (1f) Others form another [Independent] Church at Wesel in Westphalia, to which Bp Coverdale Preaches: but he being call'd away; they remove to Arrow in Switzerland, under the Conduct of Mr. Thomas Leaver: [4] Others settle

1f. Treatise of the Troubles at Francfort. 1f. Fuller.

[4] I call 'em all Independent Churches: For tho' their Historians give them not this Title, yet they were plainly such in Reality.

settle at Zurich, Strasburgh, Worms, Manheim, and Doefburgh (if) But whether at all these Places---in a Church State, seems uncertain.

But I must now surprize the Reader with some Observations of matter of Fact which have been overlook'd by our Historians both Conformists and Nonconformists; and which have opened clearly to me upon my nicely Examining the aforesaid Authors and comparing them together.

For in the *Francfort Tract* I find ' That on further Consultation, even the *second Church* There, under the Conduct of Mr. *Whithead*, *A. Nowel* and others, in a little while became also *Puritan*, agreed on a pure Scheme of Discipline; and tho' they kept the Form and Order of Ministration of the Sacraments and Common Prayer as set forth in King EDWARD's last Boock, yet they left out certain Rites and Ceremonies in it: That towards the End of Q. *Mary's* Reign, the Grudge between these and those of the first Church who removed to Geneva, seem'd to be almost quite forgotten: That both before and after Queen *Elizabeth's* Accession, mutual Letters of Christian Love pass'd between them---That in one before, those of the said second Church Promised to forget all Displeasures afore conceiv'd; and in another, of Jan. 3, 1558, 9, six Weeks after her Accession, they proceed to say --- We trust that true Religion shall be Restored, and that we shall not be burthened with unprofitable Ceremonies --- And if any shall be obtruded that shall be offensive; at our Meeting with you [i. e. you of Geneva] in England, which we trust will be shortly, we will brotherly join with you to be Suters for the Reformation and Abolishing of the same. (if) And by comparing this Tract with *Styve*, I find that soon Returning to England, they were as good as their Word.

For *Styve* informs us, that Queen *Elizabeth* ascending the Throne on Nov. 17. 1558, her first Parliament meets on Jan. 25. 1558, 9, her first Convocation of the Clergy on the next Day, and they both hold to May following: that the Convocation being intirely *Papists*, vote for Transubstantiation, the Sacrifice of the Mass, with the *Pope's* Supremacy; and yet the Parliament passed the Acts of the *Queen's* Supremacy and of *Uniformity*, which last restored King *Edward's* Liturgy with some Alterations, before one Protestant was made a Bishop, and while all the Bishops in Parliament were Ro-

man

man Catholicks : That in *May*, 1559, all the Bishops except *Kitchin* of *Landoff*, refusing the Oath of Supremacy, are in a short time after expuls'd their Bishopricks : And that the Act of *Uniformity* taking place on *June 24*, the Queen's Commissioners soon after, visited the Kingdom to administer the Oath and see the Order for *Unitormity* observed ; when several of the Popish Clergy refusing, were depriv'd, and so made Way for Protestants to take their Places. Then, *Neal* informs us, that those famous Puritans, Mr. *Wilthead* was offered the Arch Bishoprick of *Canterbury* ; Bishop *Coverdale* to be restored, and Mr. *Knox*, *Sampson* and others were offered Bishopricks ; but refused on the Account of the Popish Habits and Ceremonies. And *Strype*, --- That on *Dec 17*, was *Matthew Parker* Queen *Elizabeth's* first Protestant Bishop, Consecrated : and that by *April 19*, 1562, were Consecrated 22 Bishops more : of which says *Neal*, that *Grindal*, *Parkhurst*, *Sandys*, *Pilkington* and others, accepted their Bishopricks with Trembling, in Hopes to obtain an Amendment in the Constitution : and from *Burnet*, *Pierce* and *Strype*, [5] that both Arch Bishop *Parker*, with the Bishops, *Horn*, *Jewel*, *Grindal*, *Pilkington*, *Gust* and *Sandys*, were at first against the Habits, and cites their Writings. And *Strype* expressly says --- ' *The first Bishops made by Queen Elizabeth, as Cox, Grindal, Horn, Sandys, Jewel, Parkhurst, Ben-*
' *tham, upon their Return, labour'd all they cou'd against receiv-*
' *ing into the Church the Papistical Habits, and that all the*
' *Ceremonies shou'd be clean laid aside ; but they cou'd not*
' *obtain it from the Queen and Parliament.*

Strype also says, That on *Jan. 12*. 1562, 3, Q. *Elizabeth's* first Protestant Convocation met, [*] which agreed on the 39 *Articles* : but the Beginning of the 20th *Article* being this, That the Church hath Power to Decree Rites and Ceremonies, and Authority in Controversies of Faith ; *Fuller* tells us,

[5] See *Burnet*, Vol. III, and *Strype*, Vol. I, under 1559 and 1560.

[*] In *Burnet* and *Strype* we find that Mr. *Alexander Nowel*, that famous Puritan and Dean of *St. Paul's*, *London*, was chosen and approved PROLOCUTOR of the *Lower House*: But *Burnet* mistakes *Jan. 13* for *Jan. 12*.

us, That both the English and Latin Articles set forth in 1571, when they were first ratified by Act of Parliament, in Arch Bishop *Parker's* Time, are without this Passage; and this Published Book being just before the Act confirming it, must be the Book confirm'd, and not the private Manuscript attested only by a Publick Notary. [6] He also says this Passage appears in the Editions of 1593 in *Whitgift's* Time, of 1605 in *Bancroft's* Time, & of 1612 in the Beginning of *Abbot's* Time; tho' Dr. *Mocket*, Chaplain to Arch Bishop *Abbot*, left it out of his Latin Translation of 1617: And *Fuller* leaves the Matter undecided. Yet *Strype* says, the Clause appears in two Copies Printed in 1563; but these were in *Latin*, & there's nothing of it in the *Original Manuscript* itself subscrib'd by the Convocation, and now in *Bennet College Library*: by which he seems to decide the Matter and make it a Forgery.

Having finished the Articles of Faith, *Strype* says, the Convocation proceeded to the Reformation of Ceremonies in the Publick Liturgy: That Bishop *Sandys* advised (1) That Private Baptism may be taken out of the Common Prayer, which has respect to Women, who by the Word of God, cannot be Ministers of the Sacraments. (2) That the Collect for Crossing the Infant at Baptism may be blotted out as Needless and very Superstitious: And that 33 [†] of the Lower House Sign'd a Request, (1) That Playing with Organs may be remov'd. (2) That none but Ministers may be allow'd to baptize, and may leave off the Sign of the Cross in Baptism. (3) That Kneeling at the Communion may be left indifferent to the Discretion of the Ordinary. (4) That the Use of Copes and Surplices may be taken away, and that Ministers use a comely Side-Garment, as they commonly do in Preaching. (5) That Ministers be not compelled to wear such Gowns and Caps, as the Enemies of Christ's Gospels have chose to be the special Array of their Priesthood. (6) That in the 33d Article [‡] the Clause about Traditions & Ceremonies may be left out, &c.

(7)

[6] And yet the Act of Parliament confirms not all the Articles, but those which only concern the Confession of the true Christian Faith and the Doctrine of the Sacraments: the very Words of the Act in Kieble.

[†] Tho' *Strype* says 33, He gives the Names of but 32

[‡] i. e. K. *Edward's* 33d, but Q. *Elizabeth's* 34th.

(7) That all Saints Holy Days, as tending to Superstition, be clearly abrogated. And to these subscribed

Deans.

- 1 Dodds Gregory, Dean of Exeter.
- 2 Ellis or Ellys John, Dean of Hereford.
- f 3 Nowel Alexander, Dean of St. Paul's London, Prolocutor.
- f 4 Nowel Lawrence, Dean of Litchfield.
- 5 Sampson Thomas, Dean of Christ's Church, Oxford.
- 1 Dey or Day William, Provost of Eaton College.

Arch Deacons.

- z 1 Bemont Robert, Arch Deacon of Huntingdon.
- f 2 Croley Robert, Arch Deacon of Hereford.
- s 3 Heton [or Eaton] Guido, Arch Deacon of Gloucester.
- 4 Kemp David, Arch Deacon of St. Albans.
- z 5 Lower Thomas, Arch Deacon of Coventry.
- 6 Longland John, Arch Deacon of Bucks.
- f 7 Mullins John, Arch Deacon of London.
- 8 Prat John, Arch Deacon of St. David's.
- g 9 Pullan John, Arch Deacon of Colchester.
- f 10 Rogers Richard, Arch Deacon of St. Asaph.
- z 11 Spencer Thomas, Arch Deacon of Chichester.
- f 12 Watts Thomas, Arch Deacon of Middlesex.

Proctors [or Representatives.]

- 1 Avis Robert, Proctor of the Church of Worcester.
 - 2 Bonner W, Proctor of the Clergy of Somerset.
 - 3 Calfbil James, Proctor of the Church of Oxford.
 - 4 Hill or Hills John, Proctor of the Clergy of Oxford.
 - 5 Nezynsen Steven, Proctor of the Clergy of Canterbury.
 - 6 Reeve Richard, P. of the Dean & Chap. of Westminster.
 - s 7 Remyger Michael, P. of the Dean & Chap. of Winchester.
 - 8 Roberts Thomas, Proctor of the Clergy of Norwich.
 - 9 Savage George, Proctor of the Clergy of Gloucester.
 - f 10 Saul Arthur, Proctor of the Dean & Chap. of Gloucester.
 - 11 Tremoyne Richard, Proctor of the Clergy of Exeter.
 - 12 Walker John, Proctor of the Clergy of Suffolk.
 - 13 Wiburne Percival, Proctor of the Church of Rochester.
 - f 14 Wilson or Wyson Tho. P. of the Church of Worcester.
- Stype and Burnet also tell us, ' That on Feb. 13, the six following Articles were bro't into the Lower House, the Determination whereof depended on a narrow Scrutiny.
- (1) That all Sundays and principal Feasts of Christ be kept Holy Days

Days, and all other Holy Days, abrogated. (2) That the Minister in common Prayer turn his Face to the People and distinctly read the Service. (3) That in Baptism, the Ceremony of making the Cross on the Child's Forehead may be omitted, as tending to Superstition. (4) That at the Communion Kneeling may be left to the Discretion of the Ordinary. (5) That it be sufficient in Time of saying Divine Service and ministering the Sacraments, to use a Surplice, and none to say Divine Service, or minister the Sacraments but in a comely Garment. (6) That the Use of Organs be removed.

That upon this arose a great Contest: and when they came to Vote, Those who were against the Articles carried it, tho' with great Difficulty; there being 43 for them and 35 against them: yet the 43 producing but 13 Proxies, and the 35 producing 24 Proxies; the latter carried it but by a single Proxy [of a Person absent who had no Opportunity of being enlightened by the Consultation: [7] The 4 in the List above in Roman Character, happening then to be absent; the 43 Approvers were the 28 There Printed in Italica, with these 15 below. —————

- f. 1. *Pedder John*, Dean of *Worcester*.
 1. *Bradbridg William*, Chancellor of *Chichester*.
 1. *Lancaster Tho.* Treasurer of *Sarum*.
 1. *Tod William*, Arch Deacon of *Bedford*.
 2. *Weston Ed.* Arch Deacon of *Lewis*.
 f. 3. *Wisdom Robert*, Arch Deacon of *Eli*.
 f. 1. *Besely Richard*, Proctor of the Clergy of *Cant*.
 2. *Bowre Gualter*, Proctor of the Clergy of *Somerset*.
 3. *Coccrel Ra.* Proctor of *Surrey*
 4. *Ebden John*, Proctor of *Winchester*.
 5. *Godwin Tho.* Proctor of the Clergy of *Lincoln*.
 6. *Proctor James*, [Proctor] of the Clergy of *Suffex*.
 f. 7. *Soreby Tho.* Proctor of the Clergy of *Chichester*.
 1. *Becon Thomas*, [I suppose of *Canterbury*]
 2. *Burton*, [uncertain]

THESE were some of the Principal Fathers of the English Low Church & Puritans: & in this Company I observe, (1) There were

[7] A Proxy is a Power of Voting for an absent Person.

were 6 Deans, 1 Provost, 1 Chancellor, 1 Treasurer, 15 Archdeacons, 21 Proctors, & 2 uncertain. (2) I find but 1 of the English Church of Geneva, marked g. (3) There were 12 of the second Church at Francfort, marked f; 3 of Zurich, marked z; and 2 of Strasburgh, marked s; which 17 were all for K. Edward's Book in Germany, (tf) but yet for removing the Ceremonies and promoting a further Reformation. Hence see how much those Writers are mistaken who pouring out their Spleen against Geneva, tho't they were only or chiefly the Exiles returning Thence, who were for a further Reformation than Q. Elizabeth's first Parliament Began while there was not one Protestant Bishop in it (4) Of many of those in the Lists above who were for Removing the Ceremonies, Strype gives great Characters for Learning, Piety and Usefulness.

Of the 35 OPPOSERS; I observe, (1) There were but 4 Deans, 14 Arch Deacons, 10 Proctors, and 7 uncertain. (2) I find not one of the Church of Geneva, nor of the 1st or 2d Church of Francfort, nor of Strasburgh, nor Zurich. (3) Of the most of the Opposers, Strype gives indifferent or no Characters. (4) He informs us, ' That two of the Deans viz. Pern and Turnbull, and 2 Arch Deacons, viz. White and Cotterel had complied with the Popish Religion, were in Place and Dignity under Q. Mary, and even adher'd to Popery till June 24. 1559, when they were oblig'd to leave it or loose their Places: That another, i. e. Bridgwater, afterwards went over Sea, carried several young Men with Him, and turned Papist: that Pern was Q. Mary's Chaplain, and had been named by her to the Pope, to be Bishop of Sarum a little before her Death: that White is mention'd in a Letter of Bishop Grindal's, wrote to the Secretary soon after the Synod, as a Great Papist; but yet in the Convocation, and was afterwards reprov'd by a Popish Writer as dissembling in Religion against his Conscience: that Bridgwater produc'd 1 Proxy and Cotterel 3'. [And these were they who help'd to stop the Reformation and retain the Popish Ceremonies as a perpetual Fountain of Offence, Contention and Division to this very Day.] Yea Sampson & Humfrey in Burnet, write, That many Things were agreed to in this Convocation that wou'd have tended to the great Good of the Church, but were Suppressed, &c.

Strype also tells us, 'That besides these *Conforming Papists*, there were *divers others* in Convocation of the *same Character*;' [which he seems to have known and yet concealed. However by comparing *Cambden*, *Burnet*, *Strype* and *Eachard*, I think I have found 'em.]

For from the *Rise* of the *English Reformation*, there appeared two Sorts of People who divided the Church through the successive Changes, in the Reigns of *Henry VIII*, *Edward VI*, *Q. Mary I*, and *Q. Elizabeth*. (1) Those both *Protestants* and *Papists*, who were so *CONSCIENCIOUS* in their several Religions, as both to quit their Places, and either fly or suffer, when the Publick Alteration turn'd against them (2) Both *Protestants* and *Papists* IN *DISGUISE*, who rather than suffer or loose their Places, openly submitted to the Publick Changes while they inwardly retain'd their former Principles.

Of the *FORMER* Sort, the more *Consciencious Papists* refusing the Oath of *Supremacy*, lost their *Preferments* though no many; and some of them in *Henry VIII's* Time their *Lives*, tho' none at the Stake. Of the more *Consciencious Protestants*; many were burnt in the Reigns both of *Henry VIII* & *Mary I*; many conceal'd themselves in the Kingdom; & others fled as we observ'd before; but returning at *Q. Elizabeth's* Accession, were advanc'd in the Church; by *Disputing*, *Preaching*, good *Life* and *Writing*, greatly help'd her *Reformation*, and wou'd have thoroughly reformed Her, but were for ever hinder'd by the *Queen* and *Others*.

As to the *LATTER* Sort; *Eachard* says, upon *Henry VIII's* Beginning the *Reformation* 'All the *Bishops*, *Abbots* & *Priors* in *England*, except *Fisher* Bp. of *Rocheſter*, were so far satisfied, or so unwilling to leave their *Preferments* that they resolv'd to Comply with the Changes the *King* was resolv'd to make; and that the *Convocation*, the *Universities* and the *inferiour Clergy*, Renounc'd the *Pope's* and own'd the *King's* *Supremacy*. *Burnet* tells us, that in the farther *Reformation* of *Edward VI*, 'He cou'd not find one *Head* of a *College* in either *University* turn'd out: for tho' they generally lov'd the old *Superstition*, yet they lov'd their *Places* much better: and indeed the whole *Clergy* did so readily conform to every Change, that it was not easy to find *Colours* for turning out *BONNER* and *GARDINER*.'

Upon *Q. Mary's* Accession, *Burnet* says, 'All who adher'd to the Reformation were sure to be excluded all Favour; and that the reformed Bishops of *St. Davids, Exeter, and Gloucester,* [Who were *Farrar, Coverdale and Hooper*] with *Taylor, Philpot, Bradford, Crome, Sanders, Rogers & Lawrence,* in their Paper of *May 1554,* Declare, that the Universities were their open Enemies and condemn'd their Cause, contrary to the Word of GOD and the Determinations they had made in *K. Edward's Time.* Fuller says, that 'On *Octob. 18.* the Convocation meeting, there were found but 6 therein who oppos'd the Reduction of Popery—and that all the Bishops but 13 returned to it.' Arch Bishop *Parker,* in *Burnet* and *Eachard,* says, 'That of the 16000 Clergymen then in the Nation, about 12000 were turned out for being Married' By *Dr. Tanner's* Account in *Burnet,* 'There were not above 3000 for that Cause ejected.' [4000 then, or more of *K. Edward's* Clergy seem to keep their Places in *Q. Mary's* Reign, and the Vacancies of Others must needs be filled with the most zealous Papists.]

Upon *Q. Elizabeth's* being Proclaim'd in *London,* *Eachard* says, 'The Joy of the City was such as gave the melancholly Priests just Cause to fear a new Revolution in Religious Affairs—That the Priests were forc'd to vent their Grievs in private Corners.—And the Queen had Reason to expect the Clergy and those employ'd in the late Reign wou'd oppose the Change.' From *Strype,* we learn that her first Convocation meeting *Jan. 24. 1558, 9,* both Vote for Popery and beseech Her not to change it. *May 20. 1559,* *Cox* in *Burnet* writes, 'That the Clergy stand as stiff as a Rock, and not one of them is yet come over [i. e. from Popery to the reform'd Religion.] *May 22,* *Jewel* in *Burnet* writes—'Besides those who had been always our Enemies, the Deserters who left us in the former Reign are now our most bitter Enemies, and the Universities are universally corrupted. *June 24. Q. Elizabeth's* Act of Uniformity takes place; when the *English Common Prayer Book* is to be used thro' the Kingdom, upon Pain of Loss of Benefices and Promotions: the like Loss are they also subject to who Refuse the Oath of the *Queen's* Supremacy. (k)

And

And now !---the sudden Change ! For *Strype* informs us, That soon after this, the Queen's Commissioners go through the Kingdom to administer the *Oath* and see the Act of *Uniformity* observ'd : And then *Eachard* from *Cambden* and *Burnet*, tells us, ' The Oath of Supremacy was offered to the Popish Bishops and all other Ecclesiastical Persons : that as many as refus'd the Oath, were turn'd out of all their Preferments : and that of the 9400 *Benefices* then nam'd in *England*, 14 Bishops, [‡] 6 Abbots, 12 Deans, 12 Arch Deacons, 15 Heads of Colleges, 50 Prebendaries, and 80 Rectors of Parishes [but 189 in all] was the whole Number that were Depriv'd ;' Or as Bp *Burnet* expresses it, *Left their Benefices on the Account of Religion.* *Strype* says, That *D'Ew's* Journal reckons but 177, who left their Livings ; but that a Volumn in the *Cotton Library* reckons 13 Deans and 14 Arch Deacons ; and so 192 in all : And that a Book suppos'd to be Cardinal *Allen's*, reckons 12 Deans, 14 Arch Deacons, above 60 Canons, above 100 Priests, and 20 Doctors.

Now there being about 14 *Roman Catholick Arch Deacons* Depriv'd in 1559, and 15 *Protestant Arch Deacons* about three Years after in the List above, of those who were for Removing the Ceremonies and carrying the Reformation further ; of whom 10 at least had been famous Exiles : It seems that *most of the other Arch Deacons* in the Convocation with others among the *Proctors* in Proportion, who stiffly adher'd to the Ceremonies, were of the *Popish* Clergy *Cox* had written of, who stood like *Rocks* till *June 24* or *May 20*, 1559, and then came over to save their Places

To this Account, Mr. *Cambden* adds——' Most of the Popish Priests tho't it more behooveful for themselves and their Religion to sware Obedience to their Prince, renouncing the Pope's Authority, were it for nothing else but that they might shut the Protestants out of their Churches, and with all be able to relieve the Wants of those of their own Side who were thrust out : and this they tho't to be pious Wisdom and in a manner meritorious.' *Burnet*

[‡] *Cambden* numbers but 14 Bishops, and yet gives the Names of 15.

net adds, 'The Popish Clergy, when they saw no Appearance of any new Change, did generally comply with the Laws then made; but in so untoward a Manner that they made it very visible that what they did was against their Heart and Conscience: So compliant were the Papists generally: and indeed the Bishops after this time had the same Apprehension of the Danger into which Religion was bro't by the Juglings of the greatest Part of the Clergy, who retain'd their Affections to the old Superstition which thosè in K. *Edward's* Time had.' And *Eachard* adds, 'Twas strongly believ'd that the greatest Part complied against their Consciences and wou'd have been ready for another Turn if the Queen had Died while that Race of Incumbents liv'd, and the next Successor had been of another Religion

But every knowing Reader may likewise add, That as This is indeed agreeable to the common Practice of Mankind in Publick Changes of Religion, as well as the known Characters of that Race of Ministers who kept their Places in those Religious Revolutions: so if Preferments kept the Lovers of the Popish Superstition in the Church; for the same Reason these Preferments wou'd successively draw in their Relatives, Friends and others of the same Principles and Spirit, who wou'd be as averse as They to any further Reformation. And if we allow but 8000 Clergymen in England, which is but Half Arch Bishop *Parker's* Number; then 39 to 1 of those stiff Roman Catholicks, at that time conform'd to keep their Places. And These, with their Successors, were the Highflying Party in the Church of England, stiff Adherers to the old Popish Ceremonies, Opposers of a thorough Reformation, and Haters of those who laboured for it. It is therefore rather a Wonder that so many Reformers got into the Convocation of 1562, 3; and that so many joined with them in the Purity of Doctrin, as exprets'd in the Original of the 39 Articles.

But, as *Fuller* tells us, Tho' none of these Articles were ratified by Parliament till 9 Years after; yet the Bishops conceiving themselves empowered by their Canons, begin to show their Authority in urging the Clergy to subscribe to the Liturgy, Ceremonies and Discipline; and such as refuse are branded with the Name of PURITANS. And from this Time forward, the

Church divided into these two Parties, (1) The CONFORMITANS, who were for Retaining the unscriptural Ceremonies. (2) The PURITANS, who were for Rejecting them and carrying the Reformation to Perfection, conforming Her intirely to SCRIPTURE RULE, and reducing Her to the Apostolical Purity in *Discipline* and *Worship*, as well as *Doctrine*. Of the *Conformitans*, there were these two Subdivisions, (1) The *High-Flyers* were for retaining them as Things they tho't venerable for Antiquity, tho' not bro't into the Church in the Apostles Times, but after she declined from her primitive Simplicity; as also on the Account of their imagin'd Decency, they judged them expedient to be added to the Christian Institution (2) Others were more *Low* and *moderate*, as being of the same Opinion and Desire with the *Puritans*; but were for retaining them *at present* for Prudential Reasons only; partly to gain the *Papists*, of whom there were then great Numbers in the Kingdom, and partly in Submission to the *Queen*, who appeared fond and zealous for Pomp and Ceremony in Religious Matters; but were in Hopes of removing them afterwards: as appears from Bp. *Jewel*, Bp. *Horn* and Bp. *Grindal's* Latin Letters in *Strype* and *Burnet*. The *Puritans* therefore found themselves embarrassed not only with the *High-flying Party* in that and the following Reigns; but even the *QUEEN* herself and her Successors *JAMES I.* and *CHARLES I.* were their continual Prosecutors.

As to *Q. ELIZABETH*, *Cambden* tells us, 'That to seven Protestants she chose 13 others into her Privy Council, who were of *Q. MARY's* Council before and of the same Religion with Her: That she had no contemptuous [i. e. she had a high] Opinion of the Cross, of the Virgin Mary and the Saints [i. e. the Saints canoniz'd by Popes and worshiped by Papists] and wou'd not suffer others to speak unreverently of them.' *Jewel* in *Burnet* on April 10. 1559, laments, 'The want of Zeal in promoting the Reformation, that the Queen had sofin'd the Mass much, but there were many Things amiss left in it; and that she cou'd not be prevail'd upon to put the Crucifix out of her Chapel.' And *Eachard* says, 'She lov'd Magnificence in Religion, which made her inclinable to some former

former Ornaments, * and even Images in Churches. Yea she grew so superstitious, that when she was above 60 Years old and her decaying Nature required; yet she wou'd not eat a *Bit of Flesh* for the 40 Days of *Lent*, as being against the *Canons*, without a *solemn Licence* from her own Arch-Bp. *Whitgift*, [who depended wholly on Her for the Power to grant it] nor wou'd she be easy with one General Licence, but must have it renewed every Year for several Years before she Died: as we learn from *Fuller*. At first indeed she indulg'd the *Puritans* who were known to be her steady Friends: But on *Jan. 25. 1564, 5*, she began to grow severe upon 'em, and Arch Bishop *Parker*, with some other Bishops follow'd her Directions; yea when she and her Council flag'd, the *Arch Bishop* stir'd them up to give Him further Power to vex them.

The *Puritans* seem'd at first for retaining *Episcopacy* in the *Diocesan Form* in General: For they accepted of *Prebends*, *Arch Deaconries*, *Deaneries*, *Bishopricks*, and *Grindal* of *Arch-bishopricks*: tho' they knew these were not of Divine Appointment; yet they seem'd to judge 'em as Prudential Methods for preserving Order; and so interwoven with the national Constitution, they cou'd not well be sundred. But they insisted the *Hierarchy* ought to be Reformed: that the *Spiritual Courts*, the *Commissary Courts*, the *Courts of Faculties*, &c. invented in the Times of *Pöpery*, and manag'd according to the *Canon Laws*, which are the *Decrees of Popes*, almost infinite in Number, all with their *Processses* in *Latin*, and exceeding intricate; who for Money give out Licenses and Dispensations even from the said Laws themselves, and change the Penances of Crimes for Money, &c. that these Offences to pious People be removed: That *Nonresidence* of Ministers in their Parishes, with their *Pluralities* of benefices, be disallow'd; and that the *Godly Discipline* in the *Primitive Church* so often wish'd for in the *Common Prayer*, might be revived, and exercised not according to the *Popes Decrees*, but according to the *Scriptures only*: That *Ecclesiastical Censures* be merely
Spiritual,

* *Burnet* had call'd them some old *RITES* her Father had Retained: [which were *Crucifix's*, *Lights*, &c.] But *Eachard* gives them the finer Name of *Ornaments*.

Spiritual, & for none but Crimes condemn'd in Scripture: That the Power of *Chusing* Parish Ministers before they be *Presented* by the Patrons to the Bishops for *Ordination*, be restor'd to the *Parochial Churches*; and that their *Ministers* and *Church Wardens* be allow'd to admonish and suspend immoral Members from their Communion.

If now the *unscriptural Parts* of the *Common Prayer* had been removed, or the Ceremonies left indifferent, the *Papish Habits* chang'd for more comely Garments, the *Pope's Decrees*, with the *Inquisition Oath* call'd *Ex Officio*, abolished, [‡] and the *Hierarchy* thus reformed; the General Frame of *Diocesan Episcopacy* had no doubt remain'd untouched, and almost all the People of *England* had continued in it without Uneasiness. But the *Queen* with some of the *superiour Clergy* opposing such a Reformation, they employ their Power to crush the *Puritans*; by requiring their Ministers Subscription to the Habits, the Ceremonies in the *Common Prayer*, all the 39 Articles and the *Queen's Injunctions*; tho' the Parliament had yet appointed no Subscription.

Upon this, as *Strype* relates, Those 2 eminent Men of *Oxford* and Heads of the chief Colleges, *Dr. Sampson* Dean of *Christ's Church*, with *Dr. Humsfrey*, Præfident of *Magdalen College* & *Regius Professor* of Divinity, appear at the Head of the *Puritans*. In *March, 1564, 5*, *Dr. Sampson* is Deprived; and about 30 [Neal from *Strype's Life of Parker*, says 37] Ministers in *London* alone, are Suspended, and some of them Deprived. And thus the Severities on the *Puritans* begin: wherein some of the Ministers were Suspended; some Deprived; some are Fined; some Imprisoned; yea in 1566, *Sampson* and *Humsfrey* in *Burnet* write, that 'Many of the People are put in Prison, because they wou'd not provide Godfathers and Godmothers for Baptizing their Children.' But while the *Puritan Ministers* are Deprived, the *Papists* comply and triumph: and an Author who *Strype* supposes

G g. was

[‡] By the Oath *Ex Officio*, the Swearers were oblig'd on Oath before the Ecclesiastical Courts, to answer every Question propos'd, both against themselves and others, or go to Prison.

was Sir *T. Smith*, or Secretary *Cecil*, says, that ' In 1569 and before, Papists were frequent in Church, in Court, in Place; that Popish Priests still enjoy the great Ecclesiastical Livings, without Recantation or Penance; yea in Simoniack Heaps Cathedral Churches are stuffed with them; the very Spies and Promoters of *Q. Mary's* Time are cherished, &c.' Yea *Strype* informs us, That notwithstanding the repeated Risings of the *Papists* against the *Queen* in 1569 & 70, defacing and taring Bibles, &c; she on *June* 15. 1570 ' Declar'd in the Star Chamber, that she wou'd not have any of their Consciences unnecessarily sisted, to know what Affection they had to the old Religion

However, the more the *Puritans* suffer, the more the People search the *SCRIPTURE*, to which Appeals are made in these Religious Matters: and the more they grow acquainted with this inspired Rule of Worship; the more they discover of the Popish Superstitions, the more abhor them, the more prefer the Divine Institutions, the more pure they desire the Worship of the Church to be: And *Strype* informs us, ' That the *Puritans* grew both in City and Country, and not only among the lower Sort, but also in the *Universities*: that in *December* 1565, the Fellows and Schollars in *St. John's College* in *Cambridge*, with the Allowance of *Dr. Longworth* the Master, to the Number of near 300, threw off the Surplice with one Consent: that in *Trinity College*, all but 3, by *Mr. Cartwright's* [Influence] and many in other Colleges were ready to follow their Example.' And from *Fuller* and *Strype* we learn, ' That the *House of Commons* in the *Parliaments* of 1566, 1571, 1572, 1575, 1580, 1585, and 1587 labour'd earnestly for a further Reformation; but the *Queen* wou'd never allow it.

The only *Act* that establish'd the *Articles* in that and the two following Reigns was made in 1571; and yet this *Act* takes so much Care of the *Puritans*, as to require no more of *Ministers*, then to Declare their Assent before the *Bishop* of the *Diocess* to all the *Articles* of Religion which ONLY concern the Confession of the true Christian Faith, and the Doctrine of the Sacraments compriz'd in the *Book* imprinted entituled *Articles*, &c, and to subscribe the same. Yet now, *Fuller* says, The *Bishops* urge Subscription to the 39 *Articles* more severely than before: And *Strype*, that by Force of this *Act* many *Ministers* were depriv'd in

this and the following Years. The Puritan Ministers were indeed as ready as any to subscribe according to the said Act; i. e. To all the Articles of Religion which ONLY concern the Confession of the true Christian Faith and the Doctrine of the Sacraments: which are commonly called the Doctrinal Articles. Yet under Colour of this Act, the Bishops Deprive them for not subscribing to all the other without Exception.

But the Queen and Bishops growing more severe on the Puritans, it only alienates them more from the Hierarchy, as well as the Ceremonies, and turns their Minds to the Presbyterian Discipline. And tho' many of their Clergy were Depriv'd and Silenc'd; yet many others, by the Favour of several Great Men in Court and Council, [‡] stay in their Places upon using the less offensive Parts of the Liturgy, without Subscription. And now Bancroft & Cowell tell us, * that 'on Nov 20. 1572, This Puritan Part of the Clergy began to Erect a Presbytery at Wandsworth in Surry': which Fuller says, 'Was the first Born of all Presbyteries in England, and names 16 of the Clergy belonging to it; that May 8. 1582, there was a Synod of three score Ministers [i. e. Church-Ministers] of Cambridgeshire, Suffolk and Norfolk, at Cuckfield in Suffolk; and the Summer following another in Cambridge at the Commencement; that April 10. 1588, was another of the Warwickshire Classes at Coventry; that by Sept. 1. 1590, the Presbyterian Discipline so grew in the Church, that their Classes spread into diverse other Parts of the Kingdom, and had their Assemblies at London, Cambridge, Oxford, Northampton, Kittery, Warwick, Rutland, Leicester, Norfolk, Suffolk, Essex, and other Places; but in 1591, the High Commission and Star Chamber Courts dissolv'd them: that in the Spring of 1603, there were 750 Ministers [i. e. Church Ministers] in 25 of the 40 Counties of England, and 12 of Wales, who Petition'd King James I, to remove the Ceremonies, the

‡ Such as the Earl of Leicester, Sir Francis Knollis, Secretary Walsingham and others. (See Strype & Fuller.)

* A Bp Bancroft, in his *Dangerous Positions*; and William Cowell, D. D. a Writer against the Puritans, in his *Examination &c.* Printed 4to, London, in 1604.

Publick Reading the Books of *Apocrypha*, *Non-Residence*, *Pluralities*, and the *Papish Canons*. And *Rushworth* tells us that 'in 1626, the Country was so overspread with *Puritans*, that *Williams* Bp. of *Lincoln* would not meddle against them, and said *He was sure they would carry all at last*.'

Yet all this while, there were but few SEPARATIONS from the Church established. Nor wou'd the *Law* allow them in *England* till *K. William's* Time. Upon the first Depriving the *London-Ministers* in the Spring of 1566, *Neal* and the *Register* say, 'their Churches were shut up and their People scattered'. Bp *Grindal* on *Aug. 27. 1566*, writes, 'that many of the more learned Ministers seem'd to be about leaving their Ministry: and many of the People consulted of making a *Secession* from us and of gathering in private Assemblies; but the greater Part is come to a better Mind.' * Yet as the *Register* tells us, 'In the Spring of 1567, an *Hundred* of them absented from the *Parish Churches*, gathered together many times and made *Assemblies*, using *Prayers*, *Preaching*, and *ministring Sacraments* after the *Geneva-manner*: but on *June 20*, many are seiz'd, and put in *Prison*; next Day bro't before the Bp of *London* & other of the *Queen's Commissioners*: and *Neal* from *Strype's* *Life of Grindal*, says that *Bolton* with 23 other *Men* and 7 *Women*, were for this sent to *Bridewell* and kept there a *Year*: which seems to brake up their Assembly: and This I suppose was the same separate Church *Mr. Ainsworth* mentions, whereof *Mr. FITS* was *Pastor* and *Bolton* one of the *Elders*, in the beginning of *Queen Elizabeth's* Reign. † Yet *Fuller* observes, 'The Queen proceeded severely against them, their Party daily increas'd.'

The next Separation made was by *ROBERT BROWN*, who as *Fuller* says, 'was bred at *Corpus Christi College* in *Cambridge*, began to Preach at *Norwich* in the beginning of

* I rather more precisely follow *Grindal's* *Latin*, than *Burnet's* more loose Translation.

† In his *Counterpoisson*, or Reply to *Sprint*, *Barnard* and *Crawshaw*. Printed Quarto 1608.

of 1581, against *Bishops*, and *Ordination of Ministers* as well as *Ecclesiastical Courts* and *Ceremonies*: And *Neal*, that sometime after, 'He denied the *Establish'd Church* to be a true Church and her *Ministers* true *Ministers*, renounc'd *Communion* with her not only in *Ceremonies* and *Sacraments*, but even in *Hearing the Word* and *Publick Prayer*; and gather'd a *separate Church* of his own *Principles*; but were quickly forc'd to fly and settle at *Midaleburgh* in *Zealand*: and from him the *Seperatists* were at first call'd *Brownists*; till *Mr. Robinson* reduc'd them to milder *Principles* and *Tempers*.

'But the *Bishops* violent Measures, [as *Neal* observes] instead of reconciling the *Puritans* to the establish'd Church, drove them further off, and carried many into a total *Separation* from Her. For in 1592, a Company set up another Church at *London*; chusing *Mr. Francis Johnson* Pastor, and *Mr. Greenwood* Teacher: who with 54 of their Church were soon seiz'd by the *Bishop's* Officers and sent to several Goals: where some were loaded with *Irons*, some shut up in *Dungeons*, some beat with *Cudgels*, some both *Men* and *Women* Perished, *Mr. Greenwood* & *Barrow* executed: Others kept in close *Prison* for 4 or 5 *Years*; and then being banish'd, [as we learn from *Baileys*,] *Mr. Johnson* with some of his *People* set up their Church at *Amsterdam*: where he was succeeded by the learned *Ainsworth*; and He by *Mr. Cann*, the Author of a valuable *Margin* to our *English Bible*. In 1596, they publish their *Confession of Faith*, with the *Grounds* of their *Separation*; Reprinted with their *Apology* in 4to. 1604.

But their *Sufferings* and *Writings* soon increas'd their *Numbers*; and more of the warmer *Puritans* embrac'd their *Doctrines*, left the *Publick Churches*, and met in *Private Houses* for a *Purer Worship*. But then they lost the name of *Puritans*, and received that of the *Seperatists*: the far greater part of the *Puritans* remaining still in the Church; writing with *Zeal* against the *Separation*; and as *Sprint*, on their behalf in 1608, expresses it: --- 'A *Separation* we deny not from the *Corruptions* of the Church wherein we live; in *Judgment*, *Profession*, *Practice* --- for which so many of Both Parts [or *Parties* i. e. of *Puritans* and *Seperatists*] have suffered and do suffer so many Things.'

Things: But the Difference is, *We* [i. e. the *Puritans*] suffer for separating in the Church; *You*, [i. e. the *Separatists*] out of the Church' &c.

By comparing their ancient Writings, I find the *Separatists* and *Puritans* agreed in these two Particulars (1) in their Belief of the same Doctrinal Articles of the Church of England. (2) in their Offence with her unscriptural Parts of *Worship*, unscriptural Canons and Courts of *Discipline*, and unscriptural Power of Bishops. But in this they chiefly differ'd --

That whereas the People in ev'ry *Parochial Congregation* thro' the Kingdom, containing all Sorts of Persons both *Religious and Profane*, make up a *Parochial Church* under one *Presbyter*; and great Numbers of these *Parochial Churches* make up a *Diocesan Church* under one *Diocesan Bishop*; and several of these *Diocesan Churches* make up a *Provincial Church* under one *Arch Bishop*; and the two *Provincial Churches* in the Kingdom, viz. of *York* and *Canterbury* make up a *National Church* under one *Primate*, viz. the *A. Bishop* of the latter; in which *National Church* there were about *Forty* different *Sorts of Officers*, as among the *Papists*: The *Separatists* held that neither of these Churches were such sort of Churches, nor their *Officers* such sort of Officers as *CHRIST* has instituted, neither for *Matter*, *Form*, nor *Power*: The *Matter* of Right, *Christian Churches* being only visible *Saints* separate from the Rest of the World, or as the 19th *Article* of the *Church of England* has it, a *Congregation of Faithful Men*, or *Faithful Christians*; the *Form* being a voluntary *Consociation* of such faithful *Christians*, not forced by *Humane Sanctions*; and their *Powers* being confined to the meer *Laws of CHRIST*, both in *Worship*, *Government*, and *Discipline*. From such unscriptural Churches, they therefore judg'd themselves obliged to separate: and set up such sort of Churches and *Church Officers*, *Discipline*, and *Worship* ONLY as they found in the *Apostles Days*. And then the *Church of England* Order, *Discipline* and *Worship* being not according to *CHRIST'S* Pure Appointment, but polluted with *Humane Mixtures* which she refused to leave.; the *Separatists* at first went further, and rigidly renounc'd *Communion* both with Her and her *Officers*, as *Popish* and *Antichristian*, and even

even with those who held Communion with Her. But as for their Censoriousness, I cannot find but the *Church of England Writers* against them were as censorious and rigid in those Times as *Theirs*.

But the *Puritans* allow'd the *Faithful Christians* of the several *Parishes* to be *true Christian Churches*, and their *qualified Ministers* to be *true Christian Ministers*: that neither their being restrain'd by Humane Laws in the Exercise of the Powers and Priviledges CHRIST had given them; nor their having by such Laws, both corrupt Members, Canons and Ways of Worship impos'd upon them, neither destroy'd their Rights nor Christian Character: and that since a *Separation* was not allow'd by the then reigning Powers, and their setting up Purer Churches within the Kingdom was not practicable; they therefore judg'd they ought to remain in the Church Established, groaning under their Burthens, and labouring for her Reformation.

Mr. *Robinson* at first indeed went off among the *more rigid Separatists* in 1602: but as *Bailey* informs us, by conversing in *Holland* with Dr. *Ames* and Mr. *Parker*, He grew more moderate; as we observ'd before; yet insisting that the unscriptural Ceremonies, Canons, and mixt Communion in the *Church of England*, were sufficient Grounds of Separating from Her, and of erecting Churches on the *Scripture-Bottom*; without Denying Communion to her Pious Members when they desir'd it of Him

But how strenuously so ever the *Puritans* oppos'd the *Separation*; yet He was so well acquainted with them, that in his Answer to Mr. *Barnard* in '1610, He says,--- ' I doubt not but Mr. *Barnard* and a *Thousand more Ministers* in the Land, were they secure of the Magistrates Sword, and might they go on with his good Licence; wou'd wholly Shake off their Canonical Obedience to their *Ordinaries*; neglect their Citations and Censures, and refuse to Sue in their Courts: Could they but obtain Licence from the Magistrate to use the Liberty they are perswaded CHRIST has given them; they wou'd soon shake off the *Prelates* Yoke, and draw no longer under the same in spiritual Communion with all the Profane in the Land but would brake those Bonds of Iniquity' &c. Gov. *Bridford* also treating of the *Afflictions* of Mr. *Robinson's* People

People in *Holland* and of the *Grounds* of their Removing to *America*, says--- "It was tho't that if a better and easier Place of Living could be had, it wou'd draw many and take away those Discouragements: yea their *Pastor* wou'd often say, that many of those who both wrote and preached now against them, if they were in a Place where they might have Liberty, and live comfortably; wou'd do as they did.

But a farther Account of the Rise, Sufferings, Principles and Progress, both of the *Puritans* and *Separatists*, I must refer to the *Authors* beforementioned; especially Mr. NEAL's elaborate and valuable *History* of the *Puritans* in 2 Octavos: which was a Branch of *English History* the Nation wanted, and which ought to be read by every Lover of Religious Liberty.

I shall only observe, that Arch Bishop PARKER Dying in *May* 1575; GRINDAL succeeded Him, who grew more moderate, and the Church enjoy'd some Quiet: For which *Sacheverell* calls Him---*That false Son of the Church and perfidious Prelate*. But he deceasing in *July*, 1583, WHITGIFT is made Arch Bishop of *Canterbury*: who, as we learn from *Fuller*, *Strype* and the *Register*, persecutes the *Puritans* and *Separatists* with unrelenting Rigour to his Death in *February* 1603, 4: as does also his Successor BANCROFT to his-- in *Nov.* 1610. And then ABBOT being set in his Place; tho' he shows no Mercy to those of the *Separation*; yet seeing the *Puritans* more strictly adhere to the *Doctrinal* Articles than the rest of the Church, grows more indulgent to them till *October* 1627; when K. CHARLES I. Sequesters him from his Jurisdiction and transfers it to Bishop LAUD and others; as we read in *Eachard*. Who says, LAUD was an aspiring and fery Man, a Lover of Pomp and Ceremony, an active Opposer of *Antiarmianism*, a mortal Opposer of *Puritans*; that his Heart was entirely set upon the Advancement and Grandeur of the Church [i. e. not the *Lai-cal*, but *Clerical* Part; or as *Eachard* in another Place more clearly calls it --- the Advancement of the *Clergy's* Grandeur] which the Arch Bishop brought to that Height, as it shewed rather a Rivalship than Resemblance of the Church of *ROME*: In which He had the hearty Concurrence of the King; and grew in such Favour with Him, as to be made Bishop of *London* in 1628, Arch Bishop of *Canterbury* in 1633, and to

Govern without a Rival in Church and State. Fuller says. He was over severe in his Censures; in the Star Chamber was always observ'd to concur with the severer side; and that was most apparent He endeavoured a Reconciliation between ROME and ENGLAND. And the Continuation of Baker's Chronicle*, --- That He was a buisy Man, over-violent in his Proceedings, and never ceas'd to Persecute the PURITANS.

Of these *Englsh Puritans* were the greater Part of the Settlers of the MASSACHUSETTS Colony. They had been chiefly Born and Brought up in the *National Church*, and had hitherto lived in Communion with Her. As their *Ministers* had been Ordain'd by her *Bishops*, they had Officiated in her *Parochial Churches*, and till now had made no *Seccession* from them: tho' with Multitudes of others, labouring under grievous Impositions, conflicting with many Difficulties, and looking earnestly for better Times; till the *High-flying Bishops* both increased the Ceremonies, and grew so rigorous in imposing them, as to allow no Worship in the Church without them: yea so severely prosecute those who could not in-Conscience use them, as to let them live no longer in their *Native Land* in Quiet. Finding therefore the Impositions growing, loosing all further Hopes of Reformation and Indulgence There; and NEW ENGLAND opening Her Arms to embrace them: they judged they now ought to improve the Offer, and rather chuse a hideous *Wilderness Three Thousand Miles* across the Ocean; that Here being Free from all Restraint, they might set up *Churches* in their Worship, Matter, Form and Discipline, intirely after the *New Testament Model*; enjoy these great and christian LIBERTIES without Disturbance, and transmit them as what they accounted the Dearest Legacy to their perpetual Successors.

* viz. That Edition of Baker's Chronicle, Printed in 1660.

K. of France. K. of Great Britain. K. of Spain.
1630. Lewis XIII. || Charles I. † Philip IV.

S E C T. II.

THE Scituation of *Salem* pleasing us
 T not [for the *Capital Town*] we con-
 sult about *some other*: to this Pur-
 pose some are sent to *the Bay* to
 search up the Rivers for a conveni-

ent *Place*; who returning, report they have
 found a *good one* upon *Mistick River*: But others
 seconding these, find *another* we like better, 3
Leagues up *Charles River*: [1] Whereupon

we unship our Goods into other Vessels, and in
July With much Cost and Labour, bring them to
 CHARLESTOWN, on the *North* side the Mouth
 of *Charles River* (dd)

July Arrive at CHARLESTOWN, Gov. *Wintthrop*, Dep.
 Gov. *Dudley*, Sir *Richard Saltonstall*, Mr. *John-*
son, *Ludlow*, *Norwell*, *Pynchon*, and *Bradstreet*,
 with the *Massachusetts Colony* CHARTER; as
 also Mr. *Wilson* and *Phillips* Ministers, with
 about *Fifteen Hundred* People [2] brought over in

12

[1] I suppose *this* was at the *Place* whence the *Dorchester*
 People were ordered to remove.

[2] By Mr. *Wilson's* Yearly Allowance out of the Pub-
 lick Treasury Beginning on *July 10*, (*Mr*) It seems
 as if on *that Day*, the *Fleet* arriv'd at *Charlstown*: and
Johnson, saying that '*July 12*, or *thereabouts* [*this* Peo-
 ple] *first set foot on this Western End of the World*;
 ' *where arriving in Safety, Men Women and Children.*
 ' *On the North side of Charles River they Landed near* *Nod-*
 ' *del's Island*'. By *this Western End of the World*, He may
 mean at *Charlstown*: But if He meant at *Salem*, He
 should have said *June 12*.

K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain
1630. Lewis XIII.	Charles I. †	Philip IV.

12 Ships from England (1cr) * But many of our People being Sick of Fevers & the Scurvy, we are thereby unable to carry up our Ordnance and Baggage so far (dd) the Governor and several Patentees dwell in the Great House last Year built by Mr. Graves, and the rest of their Servants: the Multitude set up Cottages, Booths and Tents about the Town-Hill (1cr) and their Meeting Place is abroad under a Tree, where Mr. Wilson & Phillips Preach &c. (1cr)

[The State of the Neighbouring Places on the MASSACHUSETTS BAY at their Arrival.]

On Noddel's Island lives Mr. Samuel Maverick; a Man of a very loving and courteous Behaviour, very ready to entertain Strangers: On this Island with the Help of Mr. David Thompson, He had built a small Fort with four Great Guns to Protect him from the Indians. About a Mile distant upon the River runs a small Creek which takes it's Name from Mr. Edward Gibbons, who dwelt there for some Years after, and became Major General. On the South side of Charles River Mouth, on a Point of Land call'd Blaxton's Point lives Mr. Blaxton (j) where He only has a Cottage (1cr) the Neck of
H h 2 Land

[*) By these Twelve Ships seem to be meant (1) The Mary and John. (2) Arbella. (3) Jewell (4) Ambrose. (5) May flower. (6) Whale. (7) Talbot (8) William and Francis. (9) Tryal. (10) Charles (11) Success. (12) Hopewell. For the Lyon brought other People for Plymouth, or came on the Penobscut Business. But the Charlestown Records unaccountably mistake in placing all this History in 1629.

	K. of France.	K. of Great Britain,	K. of Spain
1630.	Lewis XIII.	Charles I. †	Philip IV.

Land from which the Point runs being in *Indian* named SHAWMUT, afterwards BOSTON (*ter*) To the S. E. thereof near *Thompson's Island*, live some few Planters more. [3] These were the first Planters of those Parts, having some small Trade with the Natives for *Bever Skins*; which moved them to make their abode in those Places, and are found of some Help to the New Colony (*j*)

But having had a long Passage; some of the Ships 17, some 18 Weeks a coming, many People arrive Sick of the Scurvy, which increases for want of Houses and by reason of wet Lodging in their Cottages (*ter*) having no fresh Food to cherish them (*j*) And tho' the People are very pitiful and loving: yet the Sicknes with other Distempers so prevails, that the Well are not able to tend them: Upon which many Die and are Buried about *the Hill* (*ter*) yet 'twas admirable to see with what christian Courage many carry it amidst these Calamities. (*j*)

July 25. *Lord's Day*, after the Evening Exercise, Mr. Johnson at Salem, receives a Letter from Gov. Wintrop at Charlestown, representing the Hand of GOD upon them in the prevailing Sicknes, whereby divers are taken away: signifying they had concluded He is to be sought in Righteousness: to this End, the next Friday is set apart to humble themselves before Him and seek Him in his Ordinances: that then
such

[3] Whether he means the few People at Mount Wollaston, Weymouth and Nantasket, seems uncertain.

K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1630. Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	‡ Philip IV.

such Godly Persons among them as know each other, may Publickly at the End of their Exercise make known their Desire & practice the same by solemnly entering into Covenant with Him to walk in his Ways: that since they live in *three distinct Places*, each having Men of Ability with them, there to observe the Days, and become *three distinct Bodies*: [4] not then intending rashly to proceed to the choice of Officers, or admitting others to their Society but a few well known; Promising after to receive in such by Confession of Faith, as shall appear to be fitly qualified: they earnestly intreat the *Church of Plimouth* to set apart the same Day for the same Ends; beseeching the Lord as to withdraw his Hand of Correction, so to direct and establish them in his Ways. (B)

July 30. Fryday, the Day of solemn PRAYER and FASTING kept at *Charlestown*: when Gov *Winthrop*, Dep. Gov. *Dudley*, Mr. *Johnson*, and the Rev. Mr. *Wilson*, first enter into *Church-Covenant*, and lay the Foundation of the CHURCHES both of *Charlestown* (B) [and afterwards of *Boston*.]

Aug. 1. Lord's Day five more join to the *Church* at *Charlestown* (B) which by the Order in *Boston Church Records*, are Mr. *Nowell*, *T Sharp*, *Bradstreet*, [Assistants] Mr *Wm. Gager* [Surgeon] and Mr *Wm Colborn* [afterwards a Ruling Elder (chr) who with others quickly added, chuse Mr. *Wilson* for their Pastor: the greater Num
be

[4] I suppose these three Places are *Charlestown*, *Dorchester* and *Salen*.

.K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1630. Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	‡ Philip IV.

ber at this Time intending no other than to settle Here, where the Governor orders his House to be cut and framed. But the Weather being hot, many sick and others faint upon their long Voyage, People grew uneasy for want of Water : For tho' this Neck abounds with good Water, yet they only found a brackish Spring by the Water side in the Sand on the W. side of the N.W. Field (ter) which was not to be come at but when the Tide was down (j) and could not supply half the Necessities of that Multitude : at which time the Death of so many was thought to be owing to the Want of good Water. (ter)

This made several go aboard upon Discovery (ter) Some go over to *Shawmut* on the South side of the River. (j) Some go without *Charlestown Neck* and travel up into the Main till they came to a Place well watered : whether Sir R. Saltonstall with Mr. Phillips and several Others went and settled a Plantation, and call'd it WATERTOWN. In the mean time, Mr. Blackston of *Shawmut* coming over informs the Gov. of an excellent Spring There ; withal inviting & solliciting him Thither (ter) [Upon which it seems that Mr. Johnson with several others soon Remove and Begin to Settle on that side of the River.]

Aug. 2 One of *Plymouth* writes from *Charlstown* to his Friend at *Plymouth* ... ' The sad News Here
' is, that many are Sick and many are Dead : the
' LORD in Mercy look upon them : Some are
' entered into Church Covenant --- and others
' 'tis like will add themselves to them daily :
' the LORD increase them both in Number and
' Holiness --- Here is a Gentleman one Mr. Cor-
' rington

1630. K. of France. Lewis XIII. || K. of Great Britain. Charles I. † K. of Spain. Philip IV.

‘ rington a Boston Man ; who told me that Mr
 ‘ COTTON’s Charge at Hampton was, “ That
 ‘ they should take Advice of them at PLIMOUTH.
 ‘ and should do nothing to offend them ” : [5]
 ‘ Here are divers honest Christians desirous to
 ‘ see us ; some out of Love they bare us and
 ‘ the good Perswasion they have of us ; others
 ‘ to see whether we be so ill as they have heard :
 ‘ We have a Name of Holiness and Love to
 ‘ GOD and his Saints ; the LORD make us
 ‘ more and more answerable, that it may be
 ‘ more than a Name’ &c. (B)

Aug. 20 Arrives in Charlestown-Harbour another
 Ship, call’d *The Gift* : who tho’ 12 Weeks at Sea,
 yet lost but one Passenger (H) and Dep. Gov.
Dudley says, that all the 17 Ships mention’d
 in Sec. I. Note 79, arrived safe in New-England
 for the increase of the Plantation here, this
 Year, 1630.

It having been reported in England, that
 there were now Provisions enough Here, divers
 Ships came not so well supplied as otherwise
 they

[5] I suppose this should be Coddington ; and by Boston I
 conclude He meant Boston in England ; for Boston in New
 England seems not yet to be named. And as by this
 only Passage of a Letter in Gov. Bradford’s *Mss History*,
 we find that the Rev & famous Mr. Cotton went from
 Boston in Lincolnshire to take his Leave of his departing
 Friends at South-Hampton ; so by this we find he had
 better Ideas of the Plimouth People than had been re-
 presented by their Enemies : and perhaps the Letters
 from Mr. Endicot and others of Salem, might have given
 that Great and Learned Man with others in England,
 a different and more agreeable Apprehension of them.

K. of France	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1630. Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	‡ Philip IV.

they wou'd; and there being miserable Damage of our Provisions at Sea; and yet some imprudently selling much of the Remainder to the *Indians* for Bever; we fall into great and threatenng Straits for want of Food. Upon which the Governour and other Gentlemen hire & dispatch away Mr. *William Pierce* with his Ship (*scr*) the *Lyon* of *Bristol* (*dd*) of about 200 *Tons*, for *Ireland*, to Buy more (*scr*) and come back with all Speed; with whom goes Mr. *Revil*, one of the five Undertakers here; Mr. *Vassal*, one of the Assistants, with his Family, and Mr. *Bright* the *Minister* sent hither the Year before. (*dd*)

The Mortality increasing, many Died weekly, yea almost daily: among whom were Mrs. *Pynchon*, Mrs. *Coddington*, Mrs. *Phillips*, & Mrs. *Alcock* a Sister of Mr. *Hocker's*: so that the Ships being now on their Return, some for *England*, some for *Ireland*, there was not much less than an *Hundred*, some think many more, partly out of dislike of our Government, which restrain'd and punished their Excesses, and partly thro' fear of Famin, not seeing other means than by their Labour to feed themselves, returned back: and glad were we so to be rid of them. Others also afterwards hearing of Men of their own Disposition at *Pascataway*, went from us to them: whereby tho' our numbers were lessened, yet we accounted ourselves nothing weakened by their Removal (*dd*)

Aug. 23. The first Court of Assistants held at *Charles town* (*Mer*) on board the *Arbella* (*j*) Present Governour *Winthrop*, Deputy Governour *Dudley*, Sir *R. Saltonstall*, Mr. *Ludlow*, *R. siter* *Nowell*.

K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain
1630. Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	† Philip IV.

Nowell, T. Sharp, Pynchon, and Bradstreet: wherein the first thing Propounded is, *How the Ministers shall be maintained!* Mr. *Wilson* and *Phillips* only Proposed: and Order'd that Houses be Built for them with convenient Speed at the Publick Charge. Sir, *R. Salton* shall undertook to see it done at *his Plantation* for Mr. *Phillips*; and the Governour at the other *Plantation* for Mr. *Wilson*: Mr. *Phillips* to have *Thirty Pounds* a Year, beginning at the first of *September* next; Mr. *Wilson* to have *Twenty Pounds* a Year till his Wife come over, beginning at *July 10* last; all this at the common Charge, those of *Mattapan* and *Salem* excepted. Order'd that *Morton* of *Mount Wollaston* be sent for Presently.: and that *Carpenters, Joiners, Bricklayers, Sawyers and Thatchers,* take no more than *two Shillings* a Day, under Pain of *ten Shillings* to Giver and Taker. (*Mr*) and Mr. *Bradstreet* chosen *Secretary.* (j) [6]

Aug. 27. *Fryday*, the first *Ordination* of an *Elder* in the *Massachusetts Bay*, viz Mr. *Wilson* (sd 47) who is [now] made *Pastor* [or *Teaching Elder*] of the *Church* at *Charlestown* (*tc*) and whose Extent now reaches on both sides the *River.* (j)

Aug. e. About this Time, (*dd*) *Dies* at *Salem*, and is soon after interred There, the *Lady ARBELLA*, Wife of Mr. *JOHNSON*: who came from a *Paradise* of *Delight* and *Plenty* she enjoyed in the

I i

[6] *Johnson* says, Mr. *WINTHROP* was then chose *Governor*, and Mr. *DUDLEY* *Deputy Governor* for the Remainder of the Year [which seems unlikely, having been chose before in *England.*]

	K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1630.	Lewis XIII.	Charles I. †	Philip IV.

the Family of a noble *Earldom* into this Wilderness of Straits; and now left her worthy Consort overwhelm'd in Grief and Tears. (H)

Sept. 6 Dies of a Fever, Mr. Gager, a skilful Surgeon, a right Godly Man, and one of the *Deacons* of our Congregation: as also the Rev Mr Higginson of a Consumption (dd) the first Teacher of the Church at Salem (H) a zealous and profitable Preacher (dd) *Ætat.* 43 (cm) [7]

Sept. 7. The second Court of Assistants held at Charlestown: Present Governor Winthrop, Deputy Governor Dudley, Sir R. Saltonstall, Mr. Johnson, Endicot, Sharp, Nowell, Coddington, Ludlow, Rossiter, Pyncheon, Bradstreet: Order'd that Thomas Morton of Mount Wollaston shall presently be set in the Bilbowes, and after sent Prisoner to England by the Ship called *the Gift* now returning thither; that all his Goods shall be seiz'd to Defray the Charge of his Transportation, Payment of his Debts and to give satisfaction to the *Indians* for a Canoe he took unjustly from them; and that his House be Burnt down to the Ground in sight of the *Indians* for their satisfaction for many wrongs he has done them. Order'd that no Person shall Plant in any Place within the Limits of this Patent without leave from the Governor and Assistants or major part of them: that a
Warrant

[7] Mr. Morton says He Died about the same time of the Year after his Ordination, in August; Dr C Mather says, in August, and Mr. Hubbard on Aug. 6. But Dep. Governor Dudley writing about the same Time; I chuse to mention it in the same manner.

K. of France	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain.
1630. Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	† Philip IV.

Warrant shall presently be sent to *Aggawam*, to command those who are Planted There forth with to come away ; and that *Trimountain* be called BOSTON ; *Mattapan* DORCHESTER ; and the *Town upon Charles River* WATER TON. (*Mer*)

Thus this remarkable PENINSULA, about two Miles in Length and one in Breadth, in those times, appearing at High Water in the Form of *two Islands* who's *Indian Name* was *Shawmut* ; but I suppose on the account of three contiguous *Hills* appearing in a range to those at *Charlestown*, by the *English* call'd at first *Trimountain*, ~~and~~ now receives the Name of BOSTON. Which Deputy Governor *Dudley* says, they had before intended to call the Place they first resolv'd on : and Mr. *Hubbard*, that they gave this Name on the account of Mr. COTTON, [the then famous Puritan Minister of *Boston* in *England* ; for whom they had the highest Reverence, and of whose coming over they were doubtless in some hopeful Prospect] And from the late Judge *Sewall* in comparison with the *Charlestown Records*, I learn, that *this Town* was settled under the Conduct of Mr. JOHNSON ; whom Mr. *Hubbard* calls, a *worthy Gentleman of Note for Piety and Wisdom*, and the Rev. Mr. *Danforth* of *Roxbury*, styles him --- a *right Nathaniel, eminent for Piety and Virtue* ; and in another Place, a *Gentleman of singular Piety and Sincerity*. [8]

[3] In his *Chronological Articles* at the End of his *Almanacks*, Printed in 1647 & 1649.

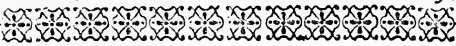
K. of France.	K. of Great Britain.	K. of Spain
1630. Lewis XIII.	Charles I.	‡ Philip IV.

To *this Town*, the major Part of the Church in a little time Removes from *Charlestown*; and so much increaseth, as that *One Hundred fifty* & one are admitted by *Oct 14 1632*, when they peaceably Divide into *two Churches* (*scr. c br.*)

‘ Thus out of small Beginnings Great Things
 ‘ have been produced by HIS HAND that
 ‘ made all things, and gives Being to all things
 ‘ that are: and as one small Candle may light
 ‘ a Thousand; so the Light *Here* [9] kindled
 ‘ hath shone to many, yea in some sort to our
 ‘ whole Nation: Let the Glorious Name of
 ‘ JEHOVAH have all the Praise. (B)

[9] Gov. *Bradford* adding this immediately after the Article of *Aug. 2*. It seems uncertain whether by *Here* He meant the *Plymouth* or *Boston-Church*: tho’ I am apt to think the *Letter*.

But this Composure growing beyond my Expectation, and the Bookseller informing me that if I now proceed to the End of this Second Section, as intended, it will make the First Volume too unsizeable; I must ask the Reader to excuse my referring the Rest to the Second Volume, and closing this with the ADDITION of some Passages Omitted in the Introduction, and the First Section of the II Part.



ADDITIONS to the *Introduction.*

Pag	Line	
2	7	N EXT to V. the <i>Roman EMPERORS</i> -- insert
		VI. the <i>MONARCHS</i> of the <i>Eastern Empire</i> ,
	last	Next to <i>Spring</i> -- add --, till the Entrance of the
		IVth <i>Period</i> ; and then we Begin with the <i>Julian Year</i> , viz. the 1st of <i>January</i> .
	marg	Insert -- So the <i>Chaldeans, Persians, Armenians</i> ,
		most other <i>Eastern Nations</i> , and the ancient
		<i>Astronomers</i> who placed <i>Aries</i> the 1st of the Signs
		at the <i>Vernal Equinox</i> ; as also <i>Virgil, Eusebius,</i>
		<i>Ambrose, Cyril, Austin, Bede, Melancton, Calvin,</i>
		<i>Scaliger, Lydiat, Bucholzer, Bunting, Coddoman,</i>
		<i>Kepler, Kreckzem, Mercer, Alsted, Spondan, Capellus,</i>
		<i>E. Simpson, Langius</i> (see <i>Lydiat, Alsted, Strauchius</i>) and so <i>Dupin</i> .
3	18	To <i>Scaliger</i> -- add †. To <i>Calvisius</i> -- add -- <i>Bunting,</i>
		<i>Langius, Behmius, Frankenberger, To Alsted</i> --
		add -- <i>Drake,</i>
	33	To <i>Rivetus</i> -- add -- <i>Langius, Ricciolius, Dupin,</i>
	34	To <i>Ainsworth</i> -- add -- <i>Rawleigh, Drake,</i>
	35	To <i>Allen</i> -- add -- <i>Maysham,</i>
		In the 1st Line of the Margin -- Insert -- †. <i>Scaliger</i>
		says, <i>It is so certain, that none has hitherto</i>
		<i>doubted it.</i> (<i>De Emend Temp. Lib V</i>)
5	11	Next to 96. c -- Insert -- 108 b <i>Sodom &c. Destroyed.</i>
6	21	To <i>Bayly</i> -- add -- <i>Strauchius,</i>
8	5	To complet Years -- add --, and the <i>Additional</i>
		<i>Time from the Spring of the Year to Aug. 27.</i>
13	marg	To <i>Conias</i> -- add -- <i>Fecorius,</i>
23	28	To <i>Winter Solstice</i> -- add -- [*]
		And in the <i>Margin</i> -- insert -- [*] <i>Danet</i> says -- at
		the <i>New-Moon</i> 8 Days after : and <i>Cary</i> says -- on
		the Day the Sun enter'd the 8th of <i>Capricorn</i> ,
		which by the <i>Ancients</i> was held to be the <i>Point</i>
		of the <i>Winter Solstice</i> ; and at 7 in the afternoon
		that Day, there happened a <i>New Moon</i> at <i>Rome.</i>
		To

PagLine

- 39 27 To *Tiber* -- add -- [*]
 In the end of the *Margin* -- Insert [*] Here *Calvisius* says, the *Cesarean* INDICATION of 15 Years begins, observ'd by the *Greeks*; but the *Roman* on *Jan. 1.* following, observ'd by the *Latins*. But *Petavius* & *Strauchius* thus distinguish -- the *Cesarian* begins *Sept. 24*; the *Constantinopolitan*, on *Sept. 1*; and the *Pontifical* or *Roman* on *Jan. 1.* following.
- 43 2 To *Western Empire* -- add --, in 476.
- 51 19 To *Western Empire* -- add --, in 800.
- 74 10 To 400) -- add -- (*ll. st.*) *Feb. 14* (*st.*)
- 89 2 To (*bl.*) -- add -- [*]
- 18 Insert -- 1534. *Jan. 15*, Parliament of *England* meets: Enacts, that no *Canons* shall be made or put in Execution by the Convocation of the Clergy, which shall be repugnant to the Customs, Laws or Statutes of the Realm, or to the King's Prerogative, nor without his assent: that none be Presented to the *Pope* or See of *Rome* for the Office of any Arch Bp or Bp in the King's Dominions, nor send thither for any thing requisite for an Arch Bp or Bp: and that no Dispenfations shall be sued for, nor Impositions Paid to the *Pope* (*k*)
- 36 In the *Margin* -- Insert -- [*] The Act of Parliament omitted in *Keeble*, but printed in *Burnet*, says *Eight score thousand Pounds*: So that *Stow* is mistaken.
- 91 10 Before *William Tindal* -- Insert -- *Oct. 7.* (*st.*)
- 95 3 To (*st.*) -- add -- or *Feb. 28.* (*Burnet*)
- 96 30 To *Oct. 25* -- add -- ||
- 31 To (*c.*) -- add -- *Strada*)
 In the *Margin*: after the note [28] -- add -- || *Petie* mistaken in saying *Nov. 25.*
- 97 17 To (*bc.*) -- add -- *April*,
- 98 7 To *May 10.* -- add -- (*llf.*) or 11 (*pt.*)
- 20 To *D.* -- add -- *Æt. 43* (*p.*)
 To *Francis II.* -- add -- *Æt. 17* (*p.*)
 After the Article of *Dec. 17.* -- add --

Page Line

- This Y, 3 Learned Preachers and 30 more *Burnt* in *Spain* for being *Protestants*: and had not the *Inquisition* put a stop to these Reformers, the *Protestant Religion* had run thro' *Spain* like wild-Fire: People of all Degrees being wonderfully disposed There at this time to embrace it (*Burnet*)
- 100 17 To (*blf*) -- add -- †.
30 To *July 24* -- add -- (*blf*) or 25 (*bc*) †
In the *Margin*, between note 32 & 33 -- add -- †. *Buchanan & Cambden* say, Duke of *Rothsay*.
After note 33 -- add -- † *July 24*, the *Resignation* signed; *July, 25*. entered on Record in the Council Book (*Burnet*)
- 101 30 To *Dec. 13* -- add -- †.
In the *Margin* -- Insert -- † *Speed* says, *Nov. 15*. citing *Hackluyt* in the *Margin*: which I have not now by me.
- 105 20 To 1587 -- add -- *Wednesday*.
30 To *July 22* -- add -- [*]
In the *Margin* after note [41] -- add -- [*] *Speed* says *Aug. 1*. & that not many Days after, He Died: But 'tis likely *Speed* took his account from *Petavius*, or some *French* writer; without reducing *Aug 1*. N. S. to *July 22*. O. S.
- 104 After Line 14 -- Insert --
1599. *April 25*. OLIVER CROMWELL Born at *Huntingdon*; afterwards Lord *Protector*, &c. (His *Life* by *F. S*)
1600. *Nov. 19*. Born to K JAMES VI of *Scotland*, Prince CHARLES; afterwards K CHARLES I &c (*Pointer, Salmon, Hubner & Anderson*)
- ADDITIONS TO Part I. Sect. I.
- 14 3 To employ'd by -- add -- the Earl of *South Hampton* and
- 15 23 To Given -- add -- [*]
In the *Margin* -- Insert -- [*] *Dr. Layton* says, that from *June 25, 1604*, to *Nov. 5, 1605*, there were 400 *Ministers Ejected*, *Silenc'd* or *Suspende'd* by *Virtue* of these *Canons*.

- | Page | Line | |
|------|------|--|
| 21 | 24 | To 2 Ships --add-- (pc) 2 Natives, viz. <i>Sketwarroc</i> and <i>Dehamda</i> (gr) . |
| | 27 | To settle -- add -- (sm) on a <i>Westerly Peninsula</i> (pg) |
| | 29 | To (sm) — add — [which I suppose is since called <i>small Point</i>] and build a Fortification, which they named <i>St George's Fort</i> (pg) |
| | | In the <i>Margin</i> , after note [11] — add — pg, <i>Purchas's Pilgrimage</i> . |
| 23 | 3 | To Mr. — add — [<i>Clifton &</i>] |
| | 8 | To <i>Holland</i> — add — (B) with their Rev. Pastor Mr. <i>Clifton</i> (cp) |
| | | In the <i>Margin</i> , after note [12] — add — (cpr) Church of <i>Plimouth</i> Records. |
| 26 | 27 | To therefore — add — with Mr. <i>Robinson</i> , |
| 27 | 3 | To (B) [14] — add — But the Rev. Mr. <i>Clifton</i> stays at <i>Amsterdam</i> , and There Dies (cpr) |
| 49 | | In the <i>Margin</i> , at the End of note [2] — add — Mr. <i>Winslow</i> signifies the same in his <i>Brief Narration of the Grounds of the first Planting of NEW-ENGLAND</i> ; at the End of his Reply to <i>Gorton</i> , Printed 4to <i>London</i> . 1646. |
| 67 | 1 | To a Ship of 60 — add — (Smith and <i>Purchas</i> say 70) |
| 71 | 22 | To Sail again — add — (B) with about 120 Persons (sm pf) Aug. 22 (sm) 23 (pf) leave the Coast of <i>England</i> (sm. pf) |
| | 24 | To <i>England</i> — add — (B) the next Day (sm pf) |
| 72 | 1 | To them; — add †. |
| | 6 | To sail again — add ‡ |
| | | In the <i>Margin</i> , at the Beginning — Insert — †. <i>Smith</i> and <i>Purchas</i> say, they There discharge 20 of their <i>Passengers</i> . |
| | | ‡ <i>Smith</i> and <i>Purchas</i> say, with 100 <i>Persons</i> , besides <i>Sailors</i> . |
| 80 | last | To the last word — add — But by this we see Sir R. <i>Baker</i> greatly mistaken, as to the Beginning of this <i>Colony</i> , by Placing it in 1624. |

